

PRYNNE

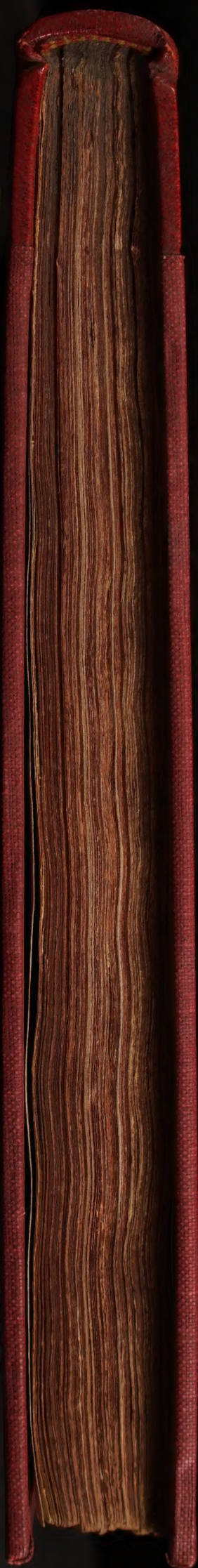
—

HIDDEN
WORKES

LONDON

1645





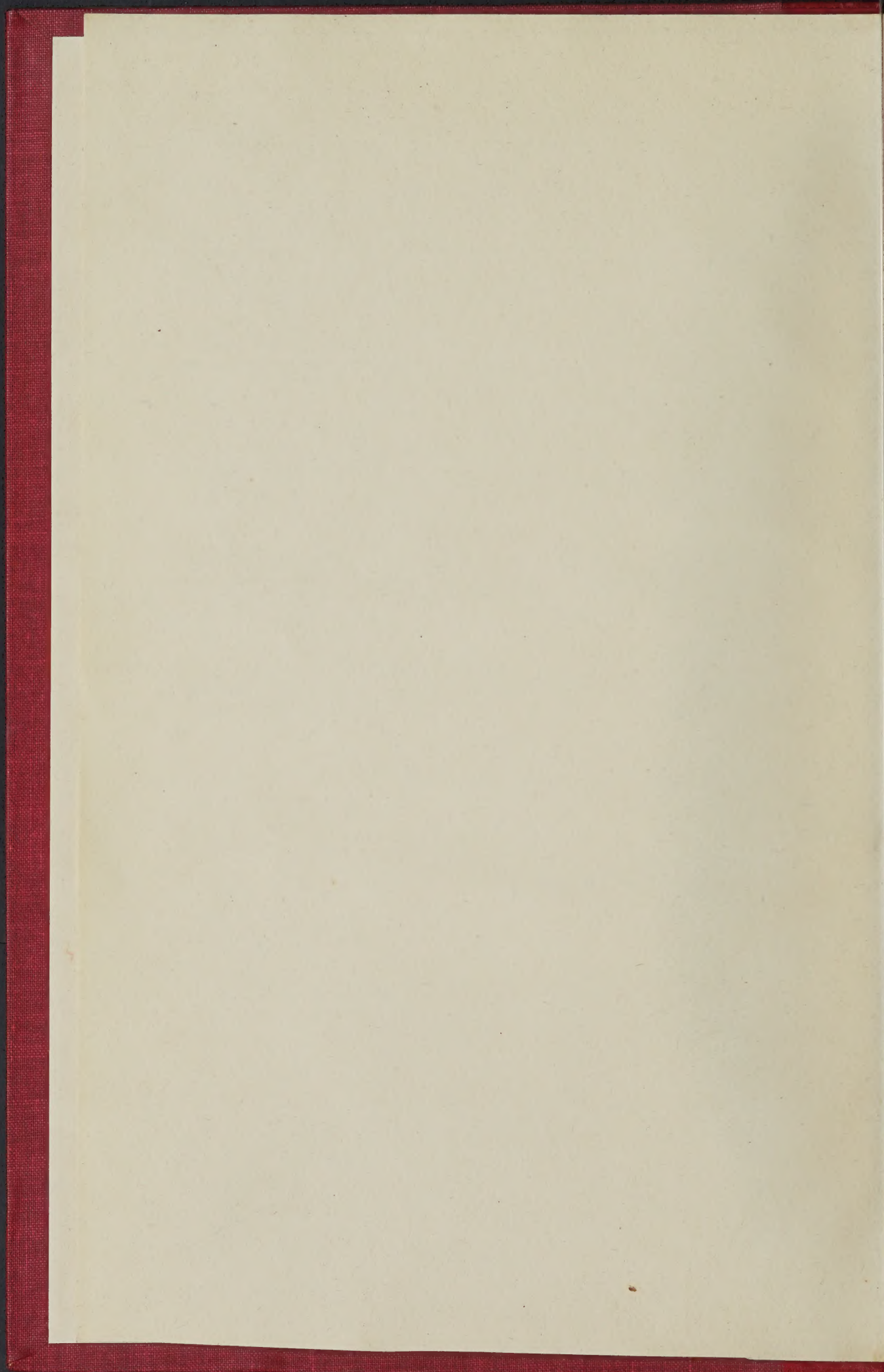


P 92

L 367 P H 5

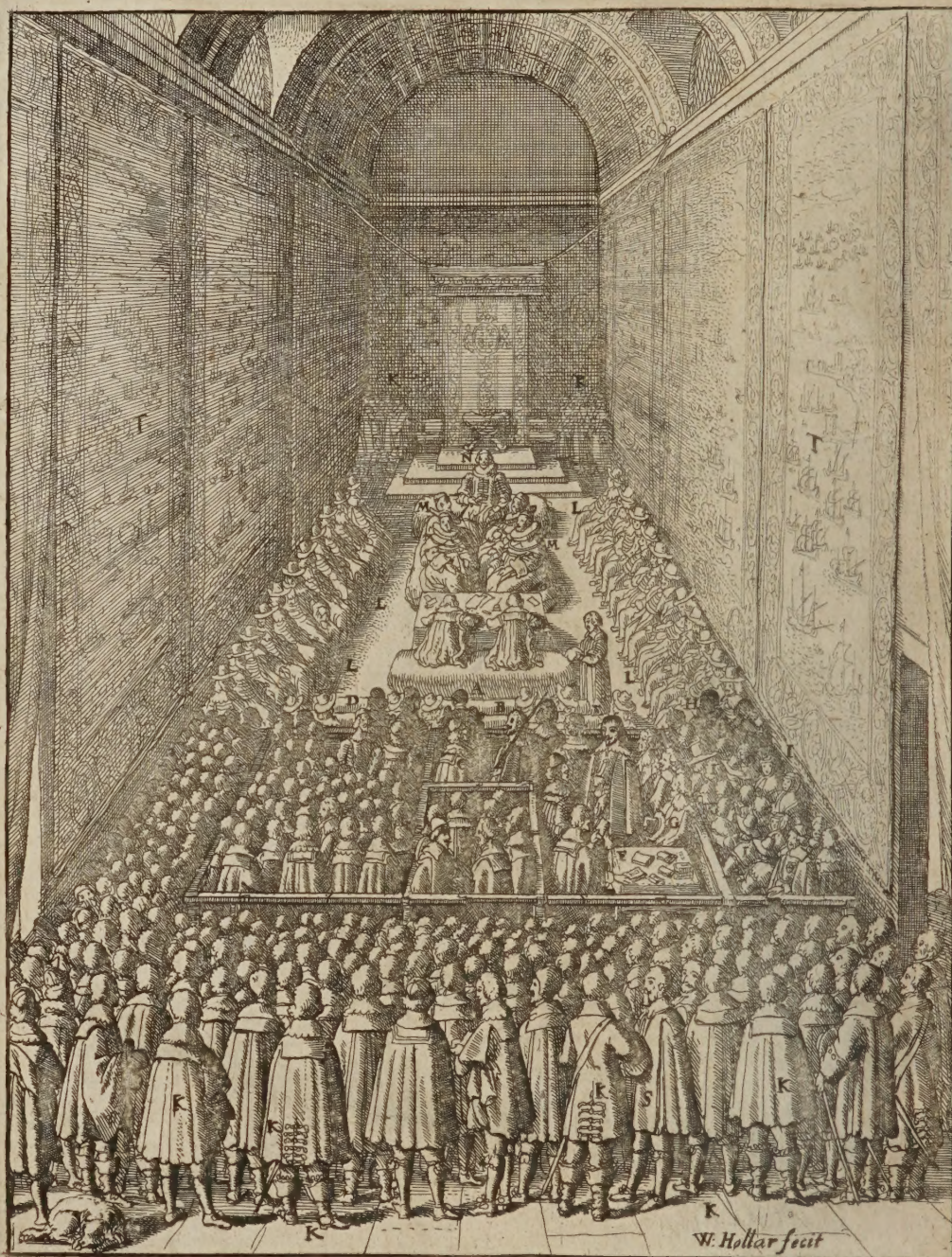
1645

R. B. 9-10



PROVERBS II. 2.

The manner and forme of the Arch-bishops Tryal in the House of Peers.



PROVERBS II. 8.

The Righteous is delivered out of Trouble, and the wicked cometh in his stead.

- A. The Arch-bishop of Canterbury.
- B. The Gentleman Usher with his Black-Rod.
- C. The Lieutenant of the Tower. D. The Bishops Councell.
- E. The Clarke that reads the Evidence.
- F. The Table where the Books and Papers given in evidence lay.
- G. The Members of the House of Commons, and Mr. Prynne standing in the midst of them. H. Mr. Henry Burton.
- I. I. I. The Witnesses, M^{rs} Basswick. Mr. Baker the Messenger.
- K. K. K. The People and Auditors, within and without the Barre.
- L. L. The LORDS. M. M. The Judges and Assistants.
- N. The Speaker of the Lords House. T. The Hangings of 88. S. Mich. Spark.

157

H I D D E N
W O R K E S
O F D A R K E N E S
Brought to Publike Light,

O R,
A N E C E S S A R Y
I N T R O D U C T I O N
T O T H E H I S T O R Y O F
T H E A R C H B I S H O P O F
C A N T E R B U R I E S T R I A L L.

Discovering to the W O R L D the severall secret dangerous
Plots, Practises, Proceedings of the P O P E and his Confederates,
both at Home and in Forraigne Parts, to undermine the Protestant
Religion, *usher the whole Body of Popery into our Church, and reduce all our*
R E A L M S to their ancient Vassalage to the Sea of Rome, by insensible
steps and degrees; from the first Marriage Treaty with Spaine, Anno 1617.
till this present. Together with the true Originals of the late Scottish Trou-
bles, Irish Rebellion and English civill Wars: Manifested by sundry Instructions, Arti-
cles, Letters, Intelligences, Warrants, Bulls of Popes, Petitions of Parliament, Procla-
mations, Examinations and other Papers, found among Secretary Winde-
bankes, Master Thomas Windbankes, the Lord Cottingtons and
Archbishop of Canterburies Writings, and some late
intercepted Letters from Forraigne Parts.

By WILLIAM P R Y N N E of Lincolnes-Inne, Esq.

D A N. 2. 22, 23, 28.

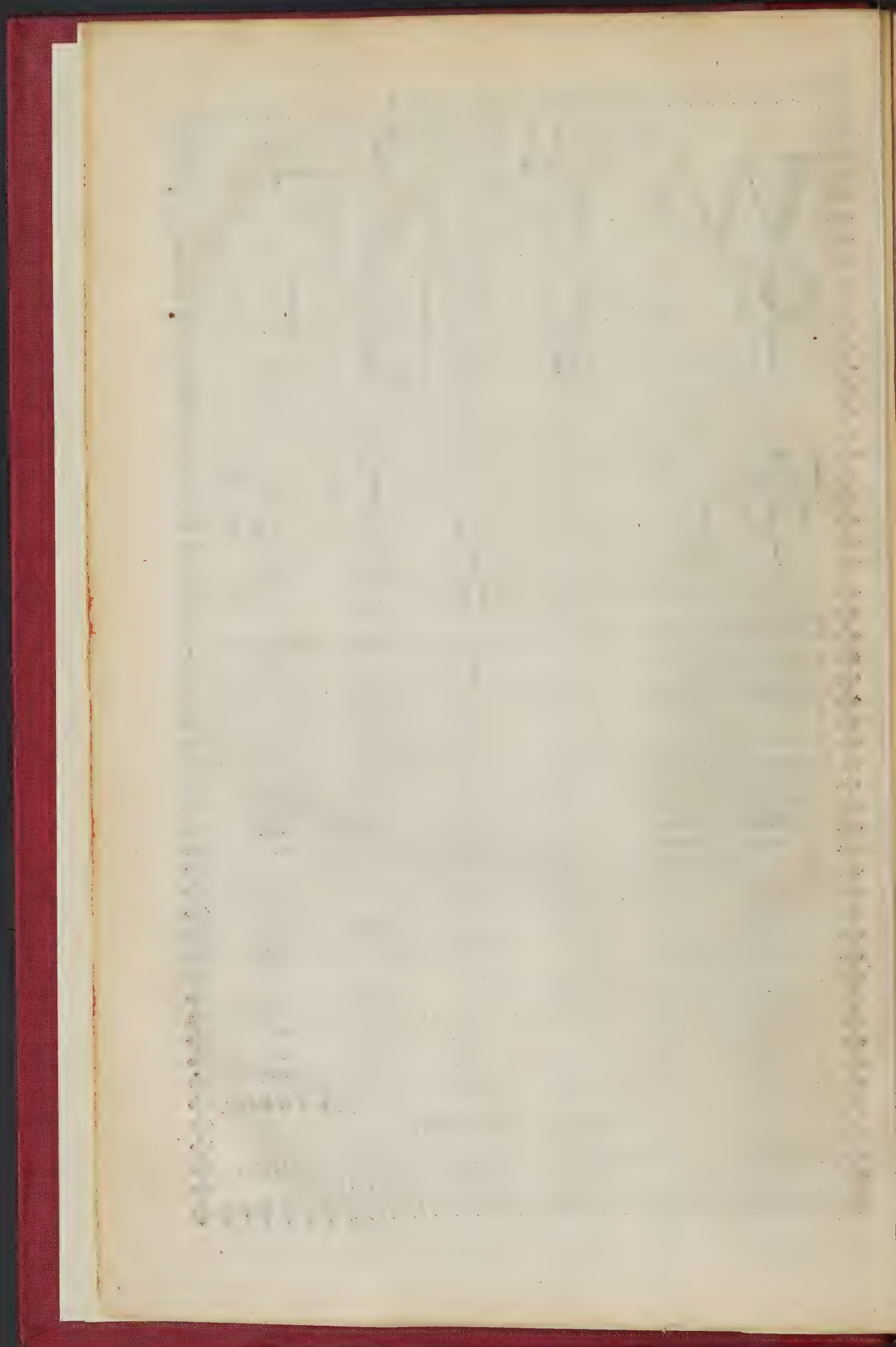
There is a God in Heaven that revealeth secrets; he revealeth the deep and secret things; he knoweth what is
in the darkesse, and the light dwelleth with him: I thanks thee and praise thee O thou God of my Fathers,
who hast given me wisdom and might, and hast made knowne unto me what we desired of thee; for thou hast
made knowne unto us the Kings matter.

It is Ordered by the Committee of the house of Commons concerning printing, that this Booke, intituled
(Hidden works of Darknesse brought to publike light) be printed by Michael Sparke senior.

JOHN WHITE.

L O N D O N :

Printed by Thomas Brudenell for Michael Sparke senior, dwelling in Green-
Arbour in the Old-bailey, at the signe of the blew Bible. 1645.





TO THE HIGH AND HONORABLE COVRT OF PARLIAMENT.



AVING not long since presented your Honourable Assembly with A Breviate of the Arch-bishop of Canturburie's Life, extracted out of his owne Diary and Writings: I have been since much importuned by divers Members of both Houses, to set forth a compleat History of his Crimes and Tryall, with all needfull Ingredients thereunto. whereupon, I deemed it very

expedient (by way of Prologue, or necessary Introduction to that Work) first, to compile and publish this following Peece (which here I humbly tender to your honourable Patronage) the materials whereof could not be conveniently inserted into the Passages of his Tryal, though much conducing to the clearing of your Exemplary Justice in your equitable Proceedings and righteous Judgement against him, newly executed on his person.

Your Honours, in these my rude Collections (faithfully extracted out of many thousand scattered papers, the perusall and digesting whereof into order hath cost me no little pains) may behold as in a Mirrour, many hidden, or forgotten Romish Plots of darknes brought to Publike Light and Memory (from the first Marriage Treaty with Spaine, in the yeere 1617. till this present) to undermine our Protestant Religion, reduce both us and all our Dominions back to Rome by insensible degrees; together with the severall Policies, Artifices, Negotiations, Conspiracies used, and Instruments employed between the Pope, his Confederates and Us, to accomplish this long-agitated Designe; and hereby clearly discover the true Originals, the Principall Contrivers of all the late unhappy Commotions, Warres, Massacres, Desolations within our three distracted Kingdomes, now weltring in their owne blood; with those mutuall Negotiations we have held with Rome, not onely of late yeeres, but continued till this very instant even for Cardinals Caps and such like Pontificalian Wares.

His Majesty and your Honourable Assembly are (blessed be God) now at last (after three yeeres bloody intestine warres) upon a desirable Treaty of Peace, which I shall cordially implore the (a) God of Peace effectually to crown with a most happy issue: towards the reall atchievement whereof, I humbly conceive these seasonable Collections may contribute some assistance; One of the neerest ways to procure a settled, lasting Peace on Earth, being first (by sincere Repentance and Reformation) to make our peace with Heaven, and

at Heb. 13. 20.

(a)

then

The Epistle Dedicatory.

then to provide effectuall Remedies against the various Treacheries, Conspiracies, Policies of the common Enemies of our Peace on Earth, and principall Contrivers of all our present Combuſtions; (to wit, the Pope and his Confederates) which I have here apparently detected, to the end they may with more facility be prevented by your honourable Vigilancy for the future.

6 See Bishop
Hals, No
peace with
Rome.

2 Cor. 6.
14 15, 16.
d Gen. 3. 15.
Gal. 4. 29.
Prov. 29. 27.

As we must have (b) no peace with Rome, so we cannot possibly expect any peace from her: Yea, the more we endeavour Reconciliation with this Babylonish Strumpet (the grand Designe of many late past yeers, and now) the remoter shall we be from any reall Peace and Unity among our selves, as we have seen by dear-bought experience: and it must necessarily be so, since (c) Light and Darknesse, Truth and Errour, Christ and Antichrist, the Sonnes of God and Children of Belial, can never be cordially reconciled by all the Policies or Contrivements of men; God himselfe having put an everlasting irreconcilable Enmity, Antipathy between them.

If therefore your Honours ever hope to enjoy a sincere, solid, durable Peace in our Churches or Realmes, you must now use all extraordinary Care and Vigilancy to provide sufficient remedies against all the Popes and his Confederates Devices, stratagems, Engines, Instruments, who else will perpetually embroile us with fresh Conspiracies, Treasons, Rebellions, Powderplots, Warres, till they have wrought their owne or our utter ruine, as many late Experiments (under which our whole three Kingdomes now bleed and languish) abundantly demonstrate. It therefore much concernes your Honours and our Realms in your intended Treaty, as much as in you lyes, to provide the surest and most effectuall Remedies against this viperous Generation of Romish Incendiaries, without which we can neither expect any substantiall Peace for the present, nor enjoy any lasting Tranquillity for the future; and, blessed be God, who hath long since put it into your zealous, pious hearts, to endeavour to effect it.

Object

It may be some Court-Sycophants, may deem these Discoveries very unseasonable, yea perchance dishonourable (in some particulars) to his Majesty in his fore-past Proceedings, and suggest so much to his Highnesse, or your Honours.

Answer

To which I answer; that the Discovery of all Plots, Dangers is then most seasonable, most advantagious, when we are by speciall Lawes or Treaties to establish future Remedies against them. It is ever best searching festred wounds to the very bottome, and letting out all their corruption, when we are ready to incrust or glutinate them; else, if we cicatrize before we sound them to the bottome, they will soone fester or break out againe with greater paine and danger then before: As for the pretended wounding of his Majesties honour, or his former proceedings by this Discovery, as it was most remote from my loyall heart and intentions in its Collection and Publication, so I hope his gracious Majesty and all faithfull Councillours about him (who bear any reall affection to his Highnesse, Religion, our bleeding Kingdomes, or really intend to close up their wounds by the approaching Treaty) will be so far from resenting these Detections to be any reall eclipse of his Majesties honour (purposely compiled to discover bona fide to his Highnesse and others, by what Romish Stratagems, Policies, Councils, Instruments they have been for sundry by-past yeers seduced, circumvented, abused, miscounsell'd, to the Kingdomes,

The Epistle Dedicatory.

Kingdomes, Churches, Religions almost utter desolation, and ingulged in those bloody Civil wars, Massacres, which have turned most of our pleasant Fields into Acheldama's and Golgotha's) that they will interpret these timely Discoveries of them (of which perchance they have bin hitherto ignorant or unobservant) the (d) highest expression both of my Duty, Loyalty to his Majesty, and my dearest Country, or at least a faithfull impartiall discharge of that solemn Covenant & Protestation we all have taken by your Honours Injunctions, which oblige me in point of Conscience, of Fidelity to bring them unto publike knowledge; yea, I should in truth have violated both my Allegiance and Covenant, had I concealed them at such a time as this, when Gods admirable Providence had unexpectedly brought them to my hands: Since therefore the wisest King that ever reigned, yea, the King of Kings himselfe hath assured me, (e) That righteous lips are the delight of Kings, and they love him that speaketh right; I doubt not but his Majesty and all true-hearted Protestants about him, together with your Honours, will deem this Publication a speciall Act of my Loyallest, Sincerest Service to his Majesty and all his Realmes, which through Gods effect shall blessing on them, may much conduce to their future Tranquility, Felicity, the things here principally aimed at.

I shall therefore become an humble Suitor to your Honours, to accept of these Collections (which I have with no small labour extracted, digested into method, whiles others have been taking their naturall rests) as a pledge of my reall Affection to my Country, his Majesty, Religion, Parliaments: yea, as a seasonable Preparative (not to be slightly read over as matter of meere Newes, but seriously perused, as a Discovery of highest consequence) to your intended much exagitated Treaty of Peace: and as a necessary Introduction to the History of your Patient, upright, unparallelled Tryall of, and righteous Judgement against that Arch-Incendiary and Enemy of our Peace, Religion, Lawes, Parliaments (some of whose Seditious Popish practices are here lightly glanced at, others more fully detected, the rest reserved for their proper Place) who hath received with much Mercy and Moderation the due reward of his treasonable, violent, bloody, Romish Counsels and Actions. I shall daily supplicate the God of Recompence that the effusion of his most Noctent blood by the AXE of Justice may put a speedy period to the spilling of any more Protestant blood by that sword of civill War, which his Counsels, Innovations, Oppressions first unsheathed, and his seconds, the Romanists, have since kept drawne and brandished among us, almost to the depopulation of our whole three Kingdomes.

(f) Now the God of Peace that brought againe from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great Shepheard of the Sheep, through the blood of the everlasting Covenant, make you perfect in every good work, to doe his will, working in you that which is wel-pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ, and (g) guide all your feet aright in the way of Peace, you are now entering into; that the end of it may be Peace indeed, and (h) the effect of it, quietnesse and assurance for ever, that so we may henceforth dwell in sure dwellings, and rest in quiet and peaceable Habitations; which is, and shall be the Prayer,

Of your Honours daily Orator and Servant

WILLIAM PRYNNE.

T O

^d See here p. 91.

^e Pro. 16. 13.

^f Heb. 13. 20. 21.


^g Luk. 1.

^{79.}

^h Isa. 32.

17. 18.

To the READER.

URTEOUS READER, I here present thee with a new Discovery of sundry Plots and Workes of Darknesse, as a necessary Introduction to the Relation of the Arch-bishop of Canterburies Tryall; collected out of severall Instructions, Articles, Letters, Petitions, Intelligences, and many thousand scattered Papers, which Gods Providence brought unto my view; most of which never saw the publike Light before; and will give thee true information of many Passages, Policies, Negotiations with Rome, to usher Popery into all our Dominions by inperceptible steps, undermine our Protestant Religion, & ingulfe us in those Wars, Miseries, under which our whole three Kingdoms now smart and languish almost unto death. I presented thee formerly with some Collections and Discoveries of this nature in my Romes Master-piece and Rovall Popish Favourite, which will adde some light and lustre unto these; but these farre more illustration unto them, and will give a satisfactory Answer to that namelesse Answerer of my Royall Popish Favourite, who (in his Loyall Vindication) confesseth all the matters of Fact, Letters, Warrants, discharges of Priests, Jesuites, & suspensions of Lawes against Recusants, therein comprized, not finding me tardy so much as in one of them, (the recitall whereof is the farre greatest part of his Booke) but onely shifting them off with poore slight Evasions, not worth the answering, which are here refuted by reall, undeniable Evidences, out of Originall Letters, Records, Warrants, or faithfull Transcripts belonging to such Counsellours or Secretaries of State, as were employed in, or privy to the Negotiations herein recorded, so as none can justly question, suspect their Reality or Verity.

For my selfe, I can with good conscience protest, I have neither feigned nor altered ought in any the Papers herein published, but presented the full and naked truth of all things to thee, as I found them, without the least Sophistication. If the Republike, Church, Religion, or thou (Curteous Reader) shall reape any advantage, usefull Information, or God any glory by these Publications (as I trust they will) I have all I ayme at; If any thing be not so methodically digested, connected, or so polite as thou couldest desire, I hope my daily publike Avocations, interloping occasions, distractions in the contexture of them, (collected for the most part when I should have been taking my naturall rest) will be a sufficient Apology to gaine thy Pardon. As for the particular Articles, Treasons & other high Crimes charged against the Arch-bishop (for which he was justly executed with far more mercy, favour, indulgence, then himself ever shewed to any pious Christian that came under his heavy hands) thou must expect an account of most of them hereafter in the History of his Tryall, yet here thou mayest scatteringly behold such evidences of his guilt (especially in the Scottish busines & Popish Alterations in their Liturgy) as will sufficiently refute the bold pretences of his Innocency on the Scaffold at his death, apparently contradicted by sundry pregnant evidences at the Lords Bar during his Tryal, & by the whole tenour of his persecuting, oppressing, turbulent Life, especially since his greatnesse: And so without further preface, I humbly submit these Lucubrations to thy perusal and most serious consideration,

FAREWELL.

I

A necessary Introduction to the Historie of the
Archbishop of CANTERBURY his Tryall.

BEFORE I enter upon the History of the Archbishop of Canturburies Tryall, one grand part of his charge impeaching him; (a) That he had traierously endeavoured to alter and subvert Gods true Religion, by law established in this Realme, and instead thereof to set up Popish Superstition and Idolatry, and that he hath traierously and wickedly endeavoured to reconcile the Church of England with the Church of Rome; It will be necessary (by way of Introduction) to manifest to the World, that there hath been for many yeers past, a secret plotted Conspiracy, and serious endeavour, between sundry pretended Members of the Church of England, and Reall Sonnes of the Church of Rome, to extirpate the Protestant Religion setled amongst us, and reduce our Dominions unto their ancient Vassalage to the Superstitions and Power of the Roman Sea; as likewise to demonstrate the principall meanes and pollicies exercised by them to accomplish this designe; which (for brevity sake) could not be conveniently produced by way of evidence at the Tryall.

The reality of this Conspiracy, (as ancient as the beginning of Queene Elizabeths Reigne) is so experimentally visible to all men, especially in these present times; so fully ratified by all (b) Acts, Proclamations, Petitions in Parliament against Jesuits, Semininary Priests & Popish Recusants, from the first of Queen Elizabeth till this instant; so abundantly manifested by our Histories, Writers of all sorts, and so apparent by the Policies used to effect this hellish Plot, that to spend time in proving it, would be but to adde light to the Sunne; I shall therefore confine my selfe wholly to the Arts and Instruments principally employed to bring it to perfection.

In the inchoations of the Reignes of Queene Elizabeth and King James, the Roman Party both abroad and at home endeavoured first by Flatteries, Treaties, Insinuations; and when those prevailed not, then by severall horrid Conspiracies, Treasons, Invasions, Rebellions and open hostility to erect their Romish Babel among us. But all these (through Gods great mercy) proving abortive, they fixed at last of latter times upon a more prevalent and successfull meanes then any of the former; to wit, a project of marrying us to the Whore of Rome, by matching the heire of the Crowne of England to a Romanist: They found many (c) Presidents, Texts in Scripture, and Ecclesiasticall story ascertaining them, That Idolatrous Queens and Wives, were a most infallible prevailing meanes to draw Kings and whole Kingdomes to Idolatry: For which very reason, God expressly enjoyed the Israelites (d) to make no marriages with the Canaanites, nor other Idolatrous Nations, nor to match their sons to their daughters: For surely they will turn away thy sons from following me that they may serve other Gods; so will the anger of the Lord be kindled against you and destroy you suddenly.

Hereupon they projected, solicited a Mariage betweene our Sovereigne Lord King CHARLES (then Prince of Wales,) and the Infanta of Spain; which after some remote preparatory Conferences between the Ministers of both Crownes in the yeers 1615. and 1616. was the yeere following ripened to a Nuptiall Treaty on King James his part, as these ensuing Instructions to Sir John Digby, (now Earle of Bristol) then Ambasadour in Spaine (found among the Lord Cottingtons Papers, an Agent in this Treaty) manifest: of which I shall insert such onely as concern Religion.

A

Instructions

(a) Arti. 7. 10.

(b) 1 Eliz. c. 1.

5 Eliz. c. 1.

13 Eliz. c. 2.

23 Eliz. c. 1.

28 Eliz. c. 6.

35 Eliz. c. 2.

1 Jac. c. 4.

3 Jac. c. 1.

2, 4, 5.

7 Jac. c. 6.

3 Car. c. 2.

(c) Gen. 6. 2.

to 9. c. 24. 3, 4.

c. 26. 34, 35.

c. 27. 46. c. 26.

1, 2. Num. 25.

1. to 10.

Deut. 7. 1. to 7.

1 Kin. 11. 1. to

15. Ex. 34. 16

1 Kin. 16. 31,

32, 33. c. 21.

25, 26. 2 Kin.

8. 18. 27.

2 Chron. 21. 6.

Jud. 3. 5. to 9.

c. 14. 7. 15.

Josh. 23. 12, 13

Ezra c. 9. & 10

Neh. 13. 23. to

39.

(d) Deut. 7. 1,

2, 3, 4.

Josh. 23. 12, 13.

Exod. 34. 16.

2 Kin. 11. 2.

*Instructions for our trusty and welbelovéd Councillour Sir**John Digby Knight, sent by us, Ambassadour Extraordinary to the King of Spaine.*

NO man can better informé you, then your selfe doe know (having been long Our Ambassadour Resident with the King of Spaine) that both in former times, and of late, speeches have passed between you and some Ministers of his, concerning a Marriage of our Deare sonne the Prince, and the Infanta or Lady Mary, second daughter of the said King; for the better assurance and strengthening of the Amity, which being begun, immediatly after our succession to the Crown of England, hath ever since continued: Which speeches, although they have bin so providently carried by your discretion all the time you were Ambassadour there, that you never appeared therein as a publike Minister, but onely in quality of a private Gentleman, and wel-wisher to the continuance and increase of friendship betweene the King and Us: Yet since your returne, and being of our Councill, the same speeches have so farre proceeded betweene you and the Ambassadour of the King of Spaine resident here, not without Our privy, as that we thought fit to acquaint a select number of our Councill therewith; who having heard the report of the former proceedings, have delivered to Us their Opinion; that they find very probable ground for Us to enter into a publike Treaty thereof, with as much assurance of good successe, as in such a case may be had.

Whereupon we have given you A Commission under our great Seale, in due forme of Law, Authorizing you to Treat and Conclude for a Marriage to be had and made between Our said Dearest sonne Charles the Prince, and the said Lady Mary, second daughter to the said King of Spaine, as you shall perceive by the tenor thereof: And for your better directions in a matter of so great Moment, Wee have thought good to accompany the said Commission with these Instructions.

Wherein, first, we think good to let you know, that if at your arrivall at the Court, you shall find by good probability and other Circumstances, that there is in the said King and his Ministers as ready a disposition as formerly you have found to proceed further in such a Treaty; you may open unto them, that you are come accompanied and Authorized with power sufficient on Our part to Treat and Conclude. But if you doe discern any alteration or coldnesse from the former demonstration, not onely of a sincere meaning, but of a very great desire to give us satisfaction; you may then forbear to make use of your Commission (which we must referre to your discretion) and advertise us what you perceive,

If you shall find things in such Case as you shall have cause to fall to Treaty of particulars, then for your direction therein, you shall understand.

That this businesse doth consist of two principall parts; The one concerning matter of Religion, and the other of civill considerations, matter of Portion, and other charges on their part; and Dower, and assurance of Dower on our part.

The matter of Religion is to Us of most principall consideration; for nothing can be to Us dearer, then the honour and safety of the Religion which we professe. And therefore, seeing that this Marriage and Alliance (if it shall take place) is to be with a Lady of a different Religion from Us; It becometh Us to be tender, as on the one part to give them all satisfaction convenient, so on the other, to admit nothing that may blemish our Conscience, or detract from the Religion here established. And although We cannot for the present give you precise and particular direction and warrant for all points that will come in question in this subject of Religion, yet in generall, we have thought good thus farre to authorize you; that whereas while you were in Spaine, certaine Articles for matter of Religion, after a Consultation had by some of their Divines were delivered to you, as poynts they were like to insist upon; which seeming to you unworthy to be by Us hearkned unto, you did utterly reject and re-

discovering the Practises used to Usher Popery into our Realms.

3

"fuse; yet afterward upon a private conference between you and some others, to whom
"that cause had been committed, there was between you a qualification conceived there-
"in, though never delivered as a matter approved there.

"We have perused those Articles, and added something to them by way of explana-
"tion, for Our clearer satisfaction; and have signed them with our owne hand in a
"Schedule hereunto annexed: And doe let you know, that if they shall be admistred there
"as we have signed them, and no further matter in poynt of Religion urged, We can be
"content you proceed and expresse your liking, and that you hope it will give Us satisfa-
"ction: And that you will speedily advertise Us; but you shall not so farre consent or
"conclude as to bind Us, untill you have advertised Us, and received Our expresse
"pleasure and assent.

"But if you find any hesitation or doubt made upon them, or any new matter added
"to any of those poynts, which you shall find to varie from the true sence of them, you
"shall suspend your proceeding to the approving of any such Alteration, and advertise
"Us thereof, and attend Our further direction and pleasure, &c.

Given at Lincolne the 14. day of Aprill 1617.

Tho. Lake.

The Articles for Religion (Specified in these Instructions:)

That for the taking away of all scruples, and the better Justification of the Match, **NOTA:**
The Dispensation of the Pope is to be procured, but thereof His Majesty need to
"take no kind of notice, but to be the meere Act of the King of Spaine.

"That the Children of this Marriage shall no way be compelled or constrained in poynt
"of Conscience of Religion, wherefore there is no doubt that their Title shall be prejudi-
"ced, in case it should please God that they should prove Catholiques.

"That the Family which the Infanta shall bring with her (being strangers) may be
"Catholiques, and that the Nurses which shall give milke unto the Childreu, shall be
"chosen with her consent, and shall be accounted of her Family.

"That the place which shall be appointed for Divine service shall be Decent, Capable,
"Free and publike for all those of her Family, and that there shall be Administred in it
"the Sacraments and Divine service, according to the Use and Ceremonies of the Church
"of Rome.

"That in case the Infanta her selfe shall onely have a secret and particular Oratory:
"There, shall be appointed for her Family a settled Chappell for the Administring of the
"Sacraments, and for the burying of the dead of the said Family; and that this publike
"Exercise of Religion begin from her first entrance into England.

"That it shall be lawfull for the Ecclesiasticall and Religious persons of her Family,
"to weare their owne Habit.

"That after the Dispensation granted by the Pope, the Marriage shall be celebrated
"in Spaine, per verba de presenti, by a Procurator, according to the Instruction of the
"Councell of Trent.

"And that the yeers and ages be without supplement, waiting the ten dayes; and
"the Infanta receiving the Nuptiall Benediction: But that within certaine dayes to be
"Limited after her arrivall in England, there shall be (*in facie Ecclesie*) used such a so-
"lemnization, as by the Lawes of England shall make the Marriage valid, and take a-
"way all scruple touching the Legitimation of the Issue.

"That shee shall have a competent number of Chaplaines, and a Confessor, being
"Strangers; and that amongst them shall be one that shall have power and authority for
"the government of the rest of her said Family, in matters concerning Catholique Re-
"ligion.

"That there be fitting Assurances given for performance of the said Conditions.

Given at Lincolne the 4. of Aprill 1617.

Tho. Lake.

King James being so farre wrought upon by the Popish Faction, as thus publicly to engage himselfe in this Marriage Treaty with one of the Romish Religion, wherein the Popes owne Dispensation must necessarily be first procured, ere the Match could finally be accomplished; they then begin to play their game to the best advantage, and by tedious delays and new demands, gaine more and more ground upon the King in favour of the Roman Catholiques, and their Antichristian Religion.

First, the Commissioners designed for this Treaty, multiply and enlarge the former Articles touching Religion, in reference to the Infanta and her Family; which after two yeers debate, were fully concluded on by the Commissioners, and both Kings: But their agreements were to little purpose; the consent of the Roman Pontife (the Arch-contriver and Director of this Plot for the best advantage of the Catholique Cause) must be likewise procured and super-added to compleat the Articles; without which they were but Nullities, and no Dispensation could be expected from him; which is first of all provided for in the Conditions.

Hereupon the Articles were sent to Rome, to Pope Gregory the xv. who then held that Chair of Pestilence; who after many tedious consultations, alters and enlargeth divers of the Articles (by the advice of his Conclave) for the furtherance of the Roman Catholique Religion; and unlesse our King and Princee would condescend to those alterations, there was no possibility of any Match or Dispensation.

(c) Tom. 9.
Anno 1623.
p. 517. to 522.

The answers and alterations of the Pope to each particular Article, you may read at large in the (c) French Mercury in that language; but I shall represent you with the Articles, the Popes alterations of them and some additions from Spain to them, with King James his answer thereto after their returne from Rome and Spain, in Latin, found amongst the Lord Cottingtons Papers with this Indoriment.

Responsio Sanctissimi Domini PP. Gregorii xv. ad Articulos Matrimonij Britannicæ hætenus inter Reges conclusos.

Condiriones oblatae ex Anglia.

Responsio Papæ.

(f) The French Mercury, p. 518.

1. **Q**uod Matrimonium perficiendum est per Dispensationem Papæ, sed hac procuranda est per operam Regis Hispaniæ, qui super verbo Regis fidem daturus est, Regi Magnæ Britanniæ se facturum, quod possibile est, ut Dispensatio Papæ procuretur.

2. **Q**uod Matrimonium celebrandum est in Hispania & in Anglia; in Hispania, per Procuratorem secundum formam Ecclesiæ Romanæ, & in Anglia, secundum omnes ceremonias, quæ Regi Magnæ Britanniæ convenientes videbuntur, modo nullæ sint quæ contradicant Religioni Domine Infanta, sed de hoc statuenda est formula quomodo sit hic, & illic, perficiendum.

3. **Q**uod serenissima D. Infanta servos & familiam secum hinc habitura est, per electionem & nominationem fratris sui se-

(f) Les deux parties sont d'accord sur ce point. This is in the French, not in the Latin Copy; but onely by implication.

2. Matrimonium semel tantum celebrandum est in Hispania: verum si aliquæ solennitates in Anglia faciendæ sint ab declaratur formula solennizationis faciendæ in Anglia, quæ Religioni Catholice & Romanæ non contradicat.

Cest Article est aussi accordé.

renissimæ

renissimi Regis Hispaniæ, modo Rex nullum servum nominaverit qui fuerit vassillus Regis magnæ Britannia sine sua voluntate & consensu.

4. Quod serenissima D. Infanta habeat & habitura erit liberum usum, & publicum exercitium Religionis Catholicæ in modo & forma prout infra capitulatam est.

5. Quod habeat decens oratorium in suo Palatio, ubi missæ celebrari possint; pro libito serenissimæ D. Infante, & quod hoc oratorium est adornandum cum tali decen- tia, qua serenissima D. conveniens videbitur: In dicto oratorio vel capella quod sa- cerdotibus ejus licebit exercere liberum u- sum sui sacerdotii prout dicta serenissima D. ordinaverit.

6. Quod servi & serva serenissimæ D. Infante, & servi servorum & omnes perti- nentes ad familiam suam poterunt esse Ca- tholici liberi; quod non tamen intelligen- dum est ut quicunque fuerit servus oblige- tur ut servus esse Catholicus.

7. Quod servi supradicti qui fuerint Catholici, possint ita libere esse in forma se- quenti.

8. Quod serenissima D. Infanta habe- bit in, vel contiguam Palatio, unam capel- lam tam capacem, ut dicti servi Catholici possint intrare & commorari in illa; in qua una sit porta publica & ordinaria per quam dicti servi possint intrare, & altera portâ interior de Palatio per quam serenissima D. Infanta possit intrare in dictam capel- lam audire & celebrare officia.

9. Quod ista capella ornatur cum de- centi ornata altarium, ornamentorum & aliarum rerum necessariarum pro cultu di- vino qui in ea celebrandus est, secundum usum S. R. E. & quod dictis servis lice- bit se conferre ad dictam capellam omnibus horis prout illis videbitur.

10. Quod cura & custodia dicta ca- pelle erit in manibus capellanorum sere- nissimæ D. Infante, & ad hoc licebit con- stituere servum, vel servos, nequis possit in- trare ad faciendum quid indecorum in ea.

11. Quod ad administrandum Sacra- menta & serviendum in capella, erit nume- rus Ministrorum qui conveniens videbitur serenissimæ D. Infante, modo talem nume- rum non excedat; & isti ministri nomina- bentur per dictam serenissimam Dominam,

Cest Article est aussi accordé.

5. Habeat etiam ecclesiam publicam Londini, & ubi serenissima Infanta mora- bitur, & utrobique omnia officia divina publice celebrentur, verbum Dei predicetur & Sacramenta ministrentur.

NOTE.

6. Quod servi & serva serenissimæ D. Infante, & servi servorum eorumque filii et descendentes ac familiares omnes quo- modocunque inservientes debeant omnino esse Catholici & libere.

7. Quod servi et familiares supradicti debeant libere esse Catholici in forma se- quenti.

8. Quod serenissima D. Infanta habe- at in Palatio unam capellam tam capacem, ut dicti servi et familiares ut supra possint intrare et commorari in illa. In qua una sit porta publica et ordinaria per quam dicti possint intrare, et altera interior per quam serenissima D. Infanta habeat ingressum in dictam capellam, ubi ipsa et alij ut supra divinis officiis interesse possint.

9. Quod ista Capella et Ecclesia publi- ca ornentur cum decenti ornatu altarium et aliarum rerum quæ necessaria sunt pro cultu divino, qui in illis celebrandus est se- cundum ritum S. R. E. et quod dictis servis et aliis ut supra licebit se conferre ad dictas cappellam et ecclesiam omnibus horis prout illis videbitur.

10. Quod cura vel custodia dictarum Capella et Ecclesie erit penes eos qui depu- tabuntur a serenissima D. Infante; cui lice- bit constituere custodes, ne quis possit in- trare ad faciendum quid indecorum.

11. Quod ad administrandum Sacra- menta, et serviendum in capella et ecclesia predictis, erit numerus ministrorum qui conveniens videbitur serenissimæ D. In- fante; & isti nominabuntur per dictam sere- nissimam D. modo non sint Vassalli Regis modo

modo non sint vassalli Regis magnæ Britannia; aut si fuerint, sint cum sua voluntate & licentia.

12. Quod sit unus Minister superior cum autoritate necessaria ad omnes casus qui acciderint spectantes ad Religionem Catholicam.

13. Quod iste Minister superior poterit corrigere, emendare & castigare Catholicos qui deliquerint; poterit autem serenissima D. illos de suo servitio abdicare.

14. Quod licebit serenissima D. Infantæ & servis Catholicis acquirere Romæ dispensationes, indulgentias, Jubileos, & in his quod videbitur conscientijs suis competere.

15. Quod Catholici qui in Angliam migrabunt suscipiant juramentum fidelitatis Regi magnæ Britannia cum omnibus clausulis & cautionibus quæ S. Majestas mandaverit, modo nulla sit clausula neque verbum in dicto juramento quod contradicat Religioni Catholicæ, neque conscientijs Catholicorum, quem ad finem forma dicti juramenti concipienda est.

NOTA.

16. Quod leges quæ sunt in Anglia spectantes ad Religionem, dictos servos Catholicos non attingent, qui cum legibus, tum poenis contra transgressores earum impositis erunt exempti, in quo opus erit videre quomodo se res habeat.

(g)NOTA.

17. Quod liberi ex hoc matrimonio oriundi non cogentur neque compellentur in causa Religionis vel conscientie, neque leges contra Catholicos attingent illos, & in casu si quis eorum fuerit Catholicus, non ob hoc perdet jus successionis in Regna & Domina magnæ Britannie.

NOTA.

18. Quod personæ ecclesiasticæ & Religiosæ in familia D. Infantæ poterunt retinere suum vestitum & habitum.

19. Quod nutrices quæ lactabunt liberos serenissimæ D. Infantæ eligentur & admittentur cum consensu dictæ serenissimæ Infantæ, & familiæ suæ annumerabuntur.

20. Quod poterit castigare illos cum poenis et censuris ecclesiasticis, sed non cum poenis temporalibus; poterit autem serenif-

modo sint vassalli Regis Magnæ Britannie; aut si fuerint, sint cum voluntate et licentia sua.

12. Quod sit unus Minister in ordine Episcopali constitutus superior, cum autoritate necessaria ad omnes casus qui acciderint spectantes ad Religionem; et Episcopo deficiente illius Vicarius.

13. Quod iste Minister superior poterit corrigere, emendare, castigare Catholicos qui deliquerint, et in illos omnem jurisdictionem ecclesiasticam exercere, et ultra hoc poterit etiam serenissima D. illos de suo servitio abdicare.

14. Quod licebit serenissimæ D. Infantæ et servis ut supra, acquirere Romæ dispensationes, indulgentias, Jubileos, et ea omnia quæ videbuntur conscientijs suis competere.

15. Quod servi et familiares ut supra serenissimæ D. Infantæ qui in Angliam migrabunt, suscipiant juramentum fidelitatis Regi Magnæ Britannie modo nulla sit clausula neque verbum quod contradicat Religioni et conscientijs Catholicorum; atque ideo forma dicti juramenti concipiatur per sedem Apostolicam approbanda; et si forte sint vassalli Regis Britannie, idem juramentum suscipiant quod Hispani.

16. Quod leges quæ sunt vel erunt in Anglia spectantes ad Religionem, dictos servos et alios ut supra laicos non attingent, qui cum legibus, tum poenis contra transgressores earum impositis erunt exempti. (g) Ecclesiastici vero nullis legibus subjaceant, nisi suorum superiorum Ecclesiasticorum.

17. Quod leges contra Catholicos late vel ferendæ non attingent liberos ex hoc Matrimonio oriundos, et libere jure successionis in Regnis et dominis Magnæ Britannie fruantur.

18. Quod Episcopus, personæ Ecclesiasticæ et Religiosæ in familia D. Infantæ poterunt retinere vestitum et habitum dignitatis et professionis more Romano.

19. Quod nutrices quæ lactabunt liberos serenissimæ D. Infantæ omnino sint Catholicæ, et ab ipsa serenissima D. Infanta eligantur, et familiæ suæ adnumerentur.

20. Quod Superior in ordine episcopali constitutus, vel ejus vicarius poterit servos et alios ut supra ecclesiasticos punire juxta
sua

serena D. illos de suo servitio abdicare.

leges et poenas ecclesiasticas, et illos etiam serenissima D. Infanta à suo servitio abdicare.

Ex Anglia.

1. Pro securitate quod non dissolvatur Matrimonium firmiores obligationes excogitari non possunt quam re ipsa sunt Religio et lex Regni, cum repudium utrique vel maxime contradiat, neque aliud adhiberi potest vinculum quam illud honoris: fiet enim omne quod decenter et commodè fieri potest.

2. Ad eam ætatem ad quam in usu est liberos Regum Magnæ Britanniæ permanere sub regimine et cura matrum, et hoc pro temperamento et valetudine liberorum brevius aut longius durabit.

3. Servi qui ex Hispania venerint nominabuntur per Regem Catholicum quotiescunque loci vacaverint.

4. Pro securitate quod totum uti capitulatum est compleatur, Rex Magnæ Britanniæ et Princeps Walliæ juramento obstringendi sunt: Consilij Regis tractatum chirographo firmare debent Rex et Princeps Walliæ verbo Regio fidem daturi, sint se facturos quod possibile est, ut omnia capitulata per Parliamentum stabiliantur, & quoniam nullam recusat cautionem ex præstandi animus est, si Rex Hispaniarum quid aliud addiderit vel proposuerit quod congruè & cum honore fieri possit, illud Rex magnæ Britanniæ perluens faciet.

5. Prasupponitur quod dispensatio Papa procuranda est antequam quid fiat

Conditiones additæ ex Hispania.

1. Quod declarandum est per serenissimum Regem magnæ Britanniæ, quæ securitas detur quod in nullo casu Matrimonium semel factum possit dissolvi.

2. Quod declaratur ad quam ætatem serenissima D. Infanta habeat educationem liberorum ex hoc Matrimonio oriundorum.

3. Quod declaratur quod quodocunque loci servorum & servarum quos serenissima D. secum attulerit nominari per Regem Catholicum fratrem suum vacare contigerit, dictus serenissimus Rex Catholicus nominabit alios in loco aliorum quodocunque vacaverint; sive moriantur, sive abdicantur servitio, sive sua sponte inde venerint.

4. Quod serenissimus Rex magnæ Britanniæ declaret securitatem quam potest dare; quod totum (ut capitulatum est) inviolabiliter compleatur.

5. Quod prasupponitur prius quam assentiat & capituletur illud quod vi-

Ex Papa.

1. Quia experientia docuit aliqua repudia evenisse in Anglia, majora vincula quam oblata requirere videntur quæ Serenissimam Infantam per totum tempus vix Serenissimi Principis Walliæ securam a repudio reddant.

2. Educentur liberi in Religione Catholica Romana penes Matrem: femina usque ad duodecim annos; marces usque ad quatuordecim, & libere jure successionis Regni fruantur.

3. Subrogentur per Regem Hispania quodocunque vacaverint sive moriantur, sive abdicantur servitio, sive sua sponte discesserint omnes servi & familiares Infantæ.

4. Quæ petenda sunt pro majori securitate, serenissimus Rex Hispaniæ proponat Sanctissimo D. N. ut probari possint.

NOTA.

ut capitulatum est in primo articulo.

sum fuerit circa hoc matrimonium quod
satisfieri & contentari debet Pape.

NOTA.

Quoniam præscriptæ conditiones a Rege Britannia oblata videntur securitatem tantum Religionis & conscientie Serenissima Infantæ & ejus familia respicere, ad concedendam vero Dispensationem pernam alia requirantur ad utilitatem, augmentum, & magnum aliquod bonum Catholica & Romana Religionis spectantia. Hæc proponenda erunt a Rege magnæ Britannia ut S. D. N. deliberare possit, an sint talia qua Dispensationem suadeant & Mereantur.

THESE Articles, with the Popes exceptions, alterations, and the King of Spaines five last demands being sent into England to King James, in the yeer 1620. who answered these demaunds as afore said; the King of Spaine by his Ambassadour Count Gondomar, moved King James in behalfe of the English Papists, Priests and Jesuits, that all lawes against them might be suspended and rescinded: To which the King gave this answer; That in the Word of a King, no Romish Priest or catholique should from thenceforth be condemned or proceeded against upon any capitall law; that though he could not for the present repeal or rescind the lawes inflicting onely pecuniary mulcts upon Roman Catholiques, yet he would so mitigate them, as should please and oblige his Catholique Subjects to him; and if the Marriage proceeded his Daughter-in-law should find him ready to indulge all favours that shee should request of him in the behalfe of those of her Religion; signifying likewise, that he had given his Answer to the former Articles and demands of the King of Spaine; as appeares by this following Letter of King James to the Spanish King, found among the Lord Cottingtons papers.

A Letter of His Majesties (King James)
to the King of Spaine.

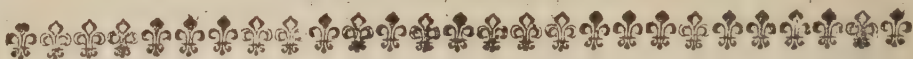
JACOBUS Dei gratia Magnæ Britannia, Francia & Hibernia Rex, Fidei Defensor, &c. Serenissimo & potentissimo Principi Domino Philippo eadem gratia Hispaniarum, Sicilia, &c. Regi, Archiduci Austria, Duci Burgundia, Mediolani, &c. Comiti Habsburgi & Tirolis, &c. Fratri Consanguineo, & Amico nostro Charissimo salutem, & felicitatem. Serenissime & potentissime Princeps, Frater, Consanguinee & Amice Charissime literas Serenitatis Vestrae septimo Augusti datas reddidit tandem Comes de Gondomar, expectatas ille quidem & pergratas mihi, cui Ego pro literarum vestrarum autoritate quæ in mandatis acceperat uberius exponenti, fidem habui non invitum. Ad Articulos viginti illos de quibus in Hispania jam ante cum Oratore nostro Barone Digbeio dilectatum fuerat, plenius & liquidius respondi, quotquot ex ijs Gondomarius clarius & accuratius enucleandos censuit. Ad quinque porro capita quæ postmodum sunt adjecta, lenium animi mei sic exprompsi ut Serenitati vestrae cumulate satisfactum iri non dubitem. Quod autem de re Religionis alia quadam ad subditos meos spectantia, Comes ille Vestro mihi nomine proposuit ac commendavit equidem Candorem illum vere Regium optime (uti par est) interpretari debeo, quod subditis nostris gratiam & indulgentiam hanc omnem qualis ea cunque futura sit, alteri nemini cuiquam Principi nisi nobis metipsis debendam existimet; ut quicquid eorum quieti atque commodo tributum fuerit, Nostræ id benignitati ac clementia ferant acceptum, meritoque id adeo ac benigne Nostra non minus quam fide & officio astringi se nobis agnoscant & devinciri. Quo certe exploratius Serenitati hoc vestrae constare pervelim quam Ego cum vestro hoc rogatu ac desiderio, tum meo imprimis Affinitatis iussu perficienda studio (quam utrinque mutuo exoptatam non diffido) totus afficiar atque commovear. Sane Romanorum apud nos Catholicorum incolunitatis & votis quantum etiam nunc indulserimus significabit Comes Gondomarius & vero quantum pro temporis ratione commode ac decenter hætenus facere potuimus, factum haud dubie significabit: Ubi vero Nuptia (favente numine) inter liberos nostros ex animi nostri sententia coalverint, prorsus æquum censeo atque statuo, propter istam qua intercedit illis Religionis discrepantiam, liberum

rum ut Infante suaeque toti familia immune sua Religionis exercitium seorsim, in pa-
rietes domesticos in Principis aula permittatur. Nec vero aliunde, quantum hoc qui-
dem provideri poterit, quicquam ipsi Religionis nomine gravius aut molestius pati
oboriri. Sanctè insuper & verbo Regio pollicemur Catholicum aut Sacerdotem Romanum
neminem Religionis aut Sacerdotij causa dehinc capitis damnatum; Neminem Jura-
mentis ad rem Religionis attinentibus (quibus in capitis discrimen vocari poterint) dehinc
in posterum adactum aut irretitum iri. Quamvis enim ab ipse jam pridem orbi innotu-
erit graviter nos hominum male conciliatorum inauditis machinationibus Religionis
prætextu susceptis & obiectis non semel ad ea remedia provocatos, quæ facilitati & iustæ
Clementiæ Nostræ minus erant cordi. procul tamen ab ingenio ac moribus Nostris ab-
fuisse semper illam animi duritiem & severitatem, præsertim in causa Religionis, cum re-
liqua vitæ consuetudo, tum scripta nostra publice typis divulgata satis testatum reddide-
rant. Alias vero leges nostras, quæ multam Catholicis Romanis, non mortem irrogant,
aboleri aut rescindi a nobis seorsim non posse, leniri ita posse cum erit usus, exploratum ha-
bebit Serenitas Vestra, omnibus ut dictorum Catholicorum Romanorum animis mansuetu-
dine ac lenitate Nostra conciliatis, non solum in officio jam illi ac fide permanere quin omni-
ni Nos studio, amore ac pietate cum cæteris subditis decertare tenebuntur. Extremum il-
lud addam, & in me recipiam; si ubi Deo optimo maximo visum erit filiolam hanc Ve-
stram mihi Nuram, Filio meo Conjugem dicare, Socrum experturam non difficilem, qui
quod abs ipsa utique suorum in gratiam, quibus consultum velit, ex aquo et bono postu-
latum fuerit, prout auribus sit accepturus, Atque hæc ego fufius meæ pie sponte profite-
ri volui planius & penitius, ut intelligeretis, neque studium satis Serenitati Vestræ faci-
endi, neque in instituto hoc negotio serio & ingenue procedendi animum mihi defutu-
rum, unde & Liberi nostri connubio felicissimo & nos ætiffimo amoris fraterni vinculo
uniamur. & Subditi utriusque Nostræ pace & amicitia perpetua perfruantur: quæ ego præ-
clara scilicet & eximia bona in istiusmodi Principum Christianorum affinitatibus con-
trahendis precipue semper spectanda existimavi. Unum hoc superest ut a Vobis petam
atque contendam, libere ac liberaliter in re proposita uti agatis Mecum, proinde atque
Ego in rebus Vestris omnibus vicem rependam, & ex animo sum presturus. Ex mul-
tiplice Prole mascula superstitem nobis Hæredem unicum dedit Deus, filium nostrum
Principem Carolum virili jam ætate, qui vigessimum Annum prope jam compleverit.
Nec est in rebus humanis quod tantopere desideremus (Ipsi provectiores jam facti) quam
ut illum in illustri & idoneo Matrimonio quam primum collocemus, Regnaque quæ
Deus indulfit Nobis; in ipsius Progenie quasi constabilita ad posteros propaganda trans-
mittamus. Rogamus itaque majorem in modum statuatur tandem ac decernat Serenitas
Vestra, ut negotium hoc omne ea celeritate conficiat, quanta res tanta confici potuerit:
Erit hoc æquitatis & prudentiæ Vestræ cogitare quanti hoc Nostra interfit (qui filium
habeamus hunc unicum) quantum porro conditio in hoc Nostra abs Vestra discrepet,
quem Deus sobole tam multa & copiosa locupletavit. Quem & Vos Vestrosque omnes
diu incolumes & volentes velit, etiam, atque etiam obtestamur.

Dat. ex adibus Nostris Theobaldinis,

27. Aprilis 1620.

UPon this Letter and Liberty indulged by it, the Jesuits, Priests, Recusants in Eng-
land, grew very bold, insolent, daring and multiplied exceedingly; in so much that
the King assembling a Parliament at London, Anno 1621. the Commons House ta-
king notice of their formidable dangerous increase, and desperate designs to extirpate
the Protestant Religion both at home and abroad, under pretext of this Nuptiall Trea-
ty, drew up this ensuing memorable Petition and Remonstrance, with an intencion to
present it to King James.



The Petition and Remonstrance intended to be sent to King
James by the house of Commons in December, 1621.

Most gracious and dread Sovereigne,

WEE Your Majesties most humble and loyall Subjects, the Knights, Citizens and Burgeses, now assembled in Parliament, who represent the Commons of your Realm; full of hearty sorrow to be deprived of the Comfort of Your royall presence; the rather for that it proceeds from want of your health, wherein we all unfainedly doe suffer: In all humble manner calling to mind your gracious Answer to our former Petition concerning Religion; which notwithstanding your Majesties pious and princely Intentions, hath not produced that good effect which the danger of these times doth seem to us to require. And finding how ill your Majesties goodnesse hath been requited by Princes of different Religion, who even in time of Treaty have taken opportunity to advance their own ends, tending to the subversion of Religion, and disadvantage of your affaires, and the estate of your Children: By reason whereof your ill affected Subjects at home, the Popish Recusants, have taken too much encouragement, and are dangerously increased in their number, and in their insolencies; we cannot but be sensible thereof: and therefore humbly represent what we conceive to be the causes of so great and growing mischiefs; and what may be the remedies.

The causes.

1. The vigilancy and ambition of the Pope of Rome and his dearest Sonne, the one aiming at as large a temporall Monarchy, as the other at a spirituall Supremacy.
2. The devillish positions and doctrines whereon Popery is built and taught without authority to their followers, for advancement of their temporall ends.
3. The distressed and miserable estate of the Professours of true Religion in forreign parts.
4. The disastrous accidents to your Majesties Children abroad, expressed with rejoycing and even with contempt to their Persons.
5. The strange confederacy of the Princes of the Popish Religion, aiming mainly at the advancement of theirs and subverting ours, and taking the advantages conducing to that end, upon all occasions.
6. The great and many Armies raised and maintained at the charge of the King of Spayne, the chiefe of that league.
7. The expectation of the Popish Recusants of the Match with Spayne, and feeding themselves with great hopes of the consequences thereof.
8. The interposing of forreigne Princes and their agents, in the behalfe of Popish Recusants, for connivence and favour unto them.
9. Their open and usuall resort to the Houses, and which is worse, to the Chappels of forreigne Ambassadors.
10. Their more then usuall concourse to the Citty, and their frequent Conventicles and Conferences there.
11. The education of their Children in many severall Seminaries and houses of their Religion in forreigne parts, appropriated onely to the English Fugitives.
12. The grants of their just forfeitures intended by your Majesty, as a reward of service to the Grantees, but beyond your Majesties intention, transferred or compounded for, at such meane rates as will amount to little lesse then a toleration.
13. The licentious printing and dispersing of Popish and seditious Books, even in the time of Parliament.
14. The swarme of Priests and Jesuits, the common Incendiaries of all Christendome, dispersed in all parts of your Kingdome.

The Effects.

And from these causes as bitter roots, We humbly offer to your Majesty, that we foresee

to resee and feare there will necessarily follow very dangerous effects both to Church and State: For,

1. The Popish Religion is incompatible with ours in respect of their positions. *The Effects.*
2. It draweth with it an unavoydable Dependency on forreigne Princes.
3. It openeth too wide a gap for popularity, to any who shall draw to great a party.
4. It hath a restlesse spirit, and will strive by these gradations: If it once get but a connivence, it will presse for a toleration; if that should be obtained, they must have an equality; from thence they will aspire to superiority, and will never rest till they get a subversion of the true Religion.

The remedies against these growing evils, which in all humbleness we offer to your most Excellent Majesty, are these:

1. That seeing this inevitable necessity is fallen upon your Majesty, which no wisdom or providence of a pious and peaceable King can avoyd, your Majesty would not omit this just occasion speedily and effectually to take your sword into your hand. *The Remedies.*
2. That once undertaken upon so honourable and just grounds, your Majesty would resolve to pursue, and more publicly to avow the aiding of those of our Religion in forreigne parts, which doubtlesse would re-unite the Princes and States of the Union, by these disasters disheartned and disbanded.
3. That your Majesty would propose to your selfe to mannage this Warre with the best advantage, by a diversion or otherwise, as in your deep judgment shall be found fittest, and not to rest upon a Warre in these parts onely, which will consume your treasure and discourage your people.
4. That the bent of this Warre, and poynt of your sword, may be against that Prince (whatsoever opinion of potency he hath) whose Armies and treasure have first diverted, and since maintained the Warre in the Palatinate.
5. That for the securing of our peace at home, your Majesty will be pleased to review the parts of our humble Petition, formerly delivered unto your Majesty, and hereunto annexed, and to put in execution by the care of choyce Commissioners to be thereunto especially appointed, the lawes already and hereafter to be made for the preventing of dangers by Popish Recusants, and their wonted evasions.
6. That to frustrate their hopes for a future age, our most Noble Prince may be timely and happily married to one of our owne Religion.
7. That the Children of the Nobility and Gentry of this Kingdome, and of others ill affected, and suspected in their Religion, now beyond the Seas, may be forthwith called home by your meanes, and at the charge of their Parents or Governours.
8. That the Children of Popish Recusants, or such whose Wives are Popish Recusants, be brought up during their minority with Protestant Schoolmasters and Teachers, who may sowe in their tender yeers the seed of true Religion.
9. That your Majesty will be pleased speedily to revoke all former licences for such Children and Youth to travaile beyond the Seas, and not grant any such licence hereafter.
10. That your Majesties learned Councell may receive commandement from your Highnesse, carefully to look into former grants of Recusants lands, and to avoyd them if by law they can; and that your Majesty will stay your hand from passing any such grants hereafter.

This is the sum and effect of our humble Declaration, which We (no wayes intending to presse upon your Majesties undoubted and regall Prerogative) doe with the fullnesse of our duty and obedience, humbly submit to your most Princely consideration. The glory of God whose Cause it is, the Zeale of our true Religion, in which we have been borne, and wherein by Gods grace we are resolved to dye; the safety of your Majesties person, who is the very life of your people, the happiness of your Children and Posterity, the honour and good of the Church and State, dearer unto us then our owne lives, having kindled these affections truly devoted to your Majesty: And seeing out of our duty to your Majesty, We have already resolved to give at the end of this Session, one entire Subsidie for the present reliefe of *Palatinate* onely, to be paid

in the end of *February* next, which cannot well be effected, but by passing a Bill in a Parliamentary courtie before Christmas ; We most humbly beseech your Majesty (as our assured hope is) that you will then also vouchsafe to give life by your royall assent to such Bills as before that time shall be prepared for your Majesties honour and the generall good of your people ; and that such Bills may be also accompanied (as hath been accustomed) with your Majesties gracious pardon: Which proceeding from your owne meere grace, may by your Highnesse direction be drawne to that latitude and extent, as may best sort with your Majesties bounty and goodnesse ; and that not onely felons and criminall offenders may take benefit thereof, but that your good Subjects may receive ease thereby ; and if it shall so stand with your good pleasure, that it may extend to the reliefe of the old debts and duties to the Crowne, before the first yeere of your Majesties reigne ; to the discharge of Allienations without licence, and mis-sueing of Liveries and Oustrelemaine, before the first Summons of this Parliament ; and of concealed Wardships, and not suing of Liveries and Oustrelemains before the twelfth yeere of your Majesties reigne, which gracious favour would much comfort your good Subjects, and ease them from vexition with little losse or prejudice to your owne profit.

And we by our daily and devout prayers to the Almighty, the great King of Kings, shall contend for a blessing upon our endeavours and for your Majesties long and happy reigne over us, and for your Childrens Children after you for many and many Generations.

King James having private intelligence, and a Copy of this Petition and Remonstrance sent him to *New-market*, endeavoured to suppress it in the birth ; and thereupon sent a Letter to Sir Thomas Richardson Speaker of the Commons House, dated Decemb. 3. 1621. to prohibite the House, *That none therein should from thenceforth presume to meddle with any Mysteries of State ; and namely not to speake of his dearest Sonnes Match with the Daughter of Spaine, nor to touch the honour of that King : And to informe them, that if they had already touched any of those forbidden points, in any Petition of theirs to be sent unto him, except they reformed it herein before it came into his hands, he would not daine the hearing nor answering of it.* The Commons conceiving this a great infringement of their Priviledges, drew a Petition to the King in answer of this Letter, justifying their former Petition and Remonstrance ; and assuring him ; *That the miserable estate of those of the Religion abroad obliged them in part of duty, not onely to turne their eyes on a Warre abroad, but also to take care for the securing of our peace at home, which the dangerous increase and insolency of Popish Recusants, apparently visible and sensible, did lead them unto, and necessarily drew them to present to his Majesty. Complaining withall, of the abridgement of their undoubted ancient Priviledges and Liberty of Parliament, by his Majesties letter to the Speaker. Which Petition, together with the former, they sent by some Member to King James to New-Market.* The King wholly rejects the first Petition and would not receive it, but returns a long and sharp answer to the latter : *Wherein he protests, That he knew not of any fit Match for his dearest Sonne among any Protestant Princes ; professing, that he was so farre engaged in that Match, that he could not goe back in honour, unlesse the King of Spaine performed not such things as he expected at his hands ; and that they might rest secure, he would never be weary to doe all he could for the propagation of our Religion, and repressing of Popery in the generall : But the manner and forme of doing it they must remit to his Care and Providence, who could best consider of times and seasons : And that his care of Religion must be such, that he must not by the persecution of Recusants here at home, irritate forraigne Princes of contrary religion, and teach them the way to plague the Protestants in their Dominions : Severely checking the House for meddling thus busily with religion and the Spanish Match.* This Answer bare date at *New-Market* Decemb. 11. The House of Commons much discontented at this harsh answer, drew up and made this notable Protestation, in vindication of their Parliamentary Rights and Priviledges ; entred in their Journall and Voted in the House, Decemb. 19. 1621.

NOTE.

The

discovering the Practises used to Usher Popery into our Realms.

THe Commons now assembled in Parliament, being justly occasioned therunto, concerning sundry Liberties Franchises and Priviledges of Parliament amongst others here mentioned, doe make this Protestation following: That the Liberties, Franchises, Priviledges, and Jurisdictions of Parliament, are the ancient and undoubted birth-right and inheritance of the Subjects of *England* and that the Arduous and urgent affaires concerning the King, State and defence of the Realme, and of the Church of *England*, and the maintainance and making of Lawes, and redresse of mischiefs and grievances which daily happen within this Realme, are proper Subjects and matter of Councell and debate in Parliament: and that in the handling and proceeding of those businesses, every Member of the House of Parliament hath, and of right ought to have freedom of speech to propound, treat, reason, and bring to conclusion the same; and that the Commons in Parliament have like Liberty and freedom to treat of these matters, in such order as in their judgements shall seem fittest, And that every Member of the said House hath like freedom from all impeachment, imprisonment, and molestation (other then by censure of the House it selfe) for or concerning any speaking, reasoning, or declaring of any matter or matters, touching the Parliament or Parliament businessse. And that if any of the said Members be complained of, and questioned for any thing done, or said in Parliament, the same is to be shewed to the King by the advice and assent of all the Commons assembled in Parliament; before the King give credence to any private information.

The King hereby discerning the Commons resolution against Popery, and the Spanish Match, chose rather to break off the *Parliament*, then this *Marriage Treaty*: And upon the sixth of *January* following, dissolved the Parliament by proclamation without a Session, to the Commons great distast, & then pursued this Match more eagerly then before. The chief remora whereof being at *Rome*, to wit, the Popes demurring to grant a Dispensation till all his, and his Conclaves demands in favour of all our Roman Catholics were condescended to by *King James*; a Letter was thereupon sent from the King of *Spain* to *Rome*, to quicken the Pope and expedite the Dispensation; what effects it produced (at least in shew, though not in substance) will appeare by this passage of *Francis* (now Lord) *Cottingtons* Letter to Secretary *Calecott* from *Madrid*, July 7. 1622. (8) Master Gage writes from *Rome*, so doth the Fryer, that a late Letter come thither from this King, hath put the businessse in such termes as they were hourly expecting the Fryars dispatch; and I can assure you, that here they speake loud when any danger is mentioned of the Popes deniall. My Lord Digby hastens the businessse bravely and seems very impatient of any delay at all. But these faire promises were onely to circumvent *King James*, who in the meane time to ingratiate himselfe with the Pope, releaseth divers thousands of Popish Recusants out of prison.

The number of Priests and popish Recusants then enlarged out of duess by *King James* throughout his Dominions, if we may beleieve *Gondomar's* Letter from hence to the King of *Spain*, or the Letter of *Sirica* Secretary to the Spanish King to Mr. *Cottington*, dated at *Madrid*, Julij 7. 1622. was no lesse then 4000. which the Spaniards, professed, to be a great demonstration of *King James* his sincere affection to confirme the correspondency and Amity between both Crownes; but in the meane time, we heare not of one of our Protestants released out of the Spanish or Romish Inquisition. And that this enlargement of theirs might be more expeditious, notorious, and lesse chargeable to Recusants; the King directed this ensuing Letter to the Lord Keeper *Williams*, Bishop of *Lincoln*, under the privy Signet, to issue forth Writs for their release.

TRusty and Welbeloved, We greet you well; whereas we have given you a former warrant and direction for the making of two severall Writs for the enlargement of such Recusants as are in prison at this time, either for matters of Recusancy in generall, or for denying the taking the Oath of Supremacy, according to the Statute, by removing them from the generall Goales of this Kingdome, to be bailed before the Justices of our Bench; finding by experience, that this course will be very troublesome to the poorer sort of Reculants; and very chargeable unto Us, who out of our Princely clemency,

"and by the mediation of forreigne Princes were desired to beare out the same. We will
 "and require you to make and issue forth two other Writs in nature and substance answere-
 "able with the former, to be directed to our Justices of Assizes; enabling and requiring
 "them and every of them to enlarge such Recusants; as they shall find in their severall
 "Goales, upon such sureties and recognizance, and other conditions as they were enlarged
 "by the Judges of our Bench. And this shall be your warrant so to doe.

Dated at Westminster,

July 25. 1622.

Hereupon this Lord Keeper (though a Bishop) not onely issued out these Writs, but likewise writ this Letter to the Judges.

After my hearty Commendations to you: His Majestie having resolved (out of deep reasons of State, and in expectation of like correspondence from forreigne Princes to the professors of our Religion) to grant some grace and conveniency to the imprisoned Papists of this Kingdome, hath commanded me to passe some Writs under the broad Seale for that purpose, requiring the Judges of every Circuit, to enlarge the said prisoners according to the tenor and effect of the same.

"I am to give you to understand (for His Majesty) how His Majesties royall pleasure is, that upon receipt of these Writs, you shall make no nicenesse or difficulty to extend that his Princely favour to all such Papists as you shall find prisoners in the Goales of your Circuits, for any Church recusancy whatsoever, or refusing the Oath of Supremacy, or dispersing Popish books, or bearing saying of Masse, or any other poyn of recusancy which doth touch or concerne Religion onely, and not matters of State. which shall appeare unto you, to be totally civill and politicall: And so I bid you heartily farewell.

Westminster Colledge,

August 2. 1622.

Your loving friend

John Lincolne.

This enlarging of all Recusants (with many Priests and Jesuits by colour of those Writs) throughout all the Kings Dominions, was deemed by King James and others; a most prevailing meanes to induce the Pope to grant a Dispensation for this much-desired Marriage, without any further procrastination, and to draw on the King of Spain to expedite and consummate it without more tergiversations. But they on the contrary feeding King James onely with good words and promises, protracted the Match and Dispensation under-hand, with much art and policy, all they might. The Spaniard under pretext of this Treaty seizing all the Palatinate, extirpating the Protestant Religion abroad, and propagating popery, multiplying the number of Roman Catholiques at home: Whereupon the King to prevent all further excuses, and accomplish the Match; returnes his resolution to the Popes forecited Exceptions and Answers to the Articles concerning the Marriage, in forme following:

Found among
the Lord Cot-
tingtons pa-
pers.

Resolutions upon the Answers given by the Pope unto the severall Articles agreed on betwixt the late King of Spain and Us, concerning the Marriage of Our deare Son the Prince, with the Infanta Donna Maria.

NOTE.

TO the second Article. We mervaille that there hath been so necessary a poynt omitted. when the Articles were sent to Rome by the King of Spaine, to procure the Dispensation, that the forme agreed upon for the celebration of the Marriage, and the Oath of fidelity for the Infanta's Servants were not also sent thither with the rest, being (as they were) agreed on, and so essentiall to the businesse. We have now delivered Copies of them both to Gage, to make such use thereof as shall be requisite for the furtherance of the businesse of himseife, since he is a person trusted by the Court of Rome in this affaire, but not as from Us, who having nothing to doe with the Pope, treated not with him, but with the King of Spaine onely.

To the fifth Article concerning the publike Church, besides the Chappell, We are verily perswaded that this would not have been demanded if they had been well informed

med, it being more then either We Our Selfe have or the Prince Our Sonne. And if there be no other reason for the demand of such a Church, then that the World may take notice of the Religion shee professeth in a publike manner, that may be as well in the Chappell assigned for her and her Family, to which shee and they may publicly and openly resort in the sight of all whosoever shall desire to behold it, it being in effect a Church with a Church-yard belonging unto it, and not simply a private Oratory.

To the sixt Article, where it is said that her Servants, &c. ought in any case to be Catholiques; that concernes not us, but the King of Spaine, who is to appoint them.

To the twelfth Article, where it is required, that the superior Minister having ecclesiasticall authority over her Family, should be *in ordine Episcopali*. VVe are well contented to leave that to the King of Spaine, to allow of it if he think fit.

To the sixteenth Article, where it is required by the Pope, *quod Ecclesiastici nullis legibus subiaceant nisi suorum superiorum Ecclesiasticorum*. Our answer is, that the exemption seems strange, and as we verely beleve is not allowed them in all States and Countries that are Roman Catholiques; VVe hope that the Clergy-men, who shall come hither to attend the *Infanta*, will give no cause for the Civill Magistrate to proceed against them in that manner, except it be for great and heynous causes, and that for faults meerly civill.

NOTE.

To the nineteenth concerning the Nurses, it belongs unto the Infanza, and shee may doe in it as shee pleaseth.

Resolutions upon the other five Articles brought out of Spaine by the Count of Gondomar, and answered by Us.

TO the first, concerning security against Divorce, the doubt which the Pope makes is very needlesse, and the answer which we gave unto the King of Spaine, is so full, as more cannot be offered nor said.

To the second, touching the education of the Children; we consider that these Articles now to be agreed on, will hereafter become publike, and that for Us to declare unto the VVorld, that we have ingaged Our Selfe, to have our Grand-Children brought up *usque ad annos Nubiles*, in a Religion which we profess not, nor is publicly professed in Our Kingdome; VVe leave it unto the King of Spaine's wisdom to consider indifferently and unpartially, how unfit it is for us in many respects to yeeld unto it. And therefore further then you have already assented unto in that Article in the generall, which leaves the Children under the tuition and care of the Mother, longer or shorter, according to their constitutions and healths (which may possibly reach unto the time required by the Pope) we can by no meanes condescend, unless the King of Spaine think fit to limit the time to a certainty for the Mother to have the care of the Children, so as it exceed not seven yeers old which We can be contented to yeeld unto.

NOTE.

Thus farre concerning the demands made by the Pope particularly unto severall Articles.

For the close of all, wherein it seems he expects some offer to be made by Us for the general good of the Roman Church; the same is explicated more plainly in a discourse held by the Cardinall Bandino with George Gage; whereof a Copy is sent with these Articles. But for that matter, you are to put the King of Spaine in remembrance, that we treat with him, and not with the Pope: That the Articles concerning Religion agreed upon betwixt his Father and Us, were such and so full to the satisfaction of that Church, in the opinions of the learnedst and greatest Clergy of Spaine, as we have bin often told, that they have been ever of opinion, the Pope could not upon those Articles, nor ought to refuse the Dispensation. The Cardinall acknowledgeth as it seems in that discourse, that the Pope is satisfied with the reasons given both by the Padre Maestro and Gage, that We of Our own authority cannot give a generall & free liberty of exercising the Roman Religion. What is it then they would have? Setting that aside, We have in a manner already done that which is desired, as all the Roman Catholikes have

King James
his Agent at
Rome.

NOTE,
found,

found. out of Our gracious clemency towards them, especially of late, and will no doubt acknowledge. Which if the Pope had knowne when these answers were given by him to the Articles, it is to be presumed, he would not so much have insisted upon that poynt. But for whatsoever may concerne that businesse, We have so fully declared Our Selfe unto the late King of *Spain* by Our Letter of the 27. of *Aprill* 1620. under Our hand and Seale, as We hope the King of *Spain* rests satisfied, both with the extent of Our promise in that behalfe, and with the assurance of performance; which is as much as in honour can be required at Our hands, or as We can grant, considering the State of Our affaires and government. And therefore since whatsoever is already agreed unto, either in the Articles or by that letter, We intend sincerely and religiously to performe, and can goe no further for no respects, without notable prejudice or inconvenience.

We desire to know whether the King of *Spain* will resolve to conclude the Match upon those termes, or not, that there may be no time lost for us to provide some other Match for Our Son, if that shall not succeed; and so to presse a present resolution, without sending too and fro, betwixt *Rome* and *Spain*, which spends time, and may serve still for a colour, to draw the Treaty in infinitum. Nevertheless, if you find that it is a thing impossible for them to resolve without a reply to *Rome*, and that they doe earnestly desire it, We are contented that you shall yeeld them two moneths time after your audience, and no longer, so as before Christmas at the furthest, We may be advertised finally, what we are to trust unto; beyond which time, we can expect no longer.

Thus you may observe how farre We are pleased to expresse Our Selfe, as well to manifest Our desire and intention to continue for ever on Our part, the strict amity betwixt Us and *Spain*; as also to take away all just exception that may hinder the speedy conclusion of the Match, as We have been contented now to enlarge Our Selfe further in divers particulars, then was before agreed on or desired; as namely in condescending that the superior Minister may be *in ordine Episcopali*, that the limitation of the time for the education of the Children be for six or seven yeers, and in other poynts as you will find in this answer. Of all which we require you to give speciall notice to that King, that he may thereupon take into his Consideration the sincerity of Our affection, who have so roundly and really proceeded in this businesse, so as in all reason We may and doe justly expect the like dealing from him, which cannot better appeare, then in the speedy dispatch thereof.

These resolutions he sent post into *Spain* to the Lord Digby by Gressly, inclosing in this Letter, the Copy whereof (with other ensuing papers) were seized on by the sequestrators of the Lord Cottingtons goods and writings.

NOTE.

Right trusty, &c. Your dispatch of the ninth of *August* gave us so much contentment, and so great hopes of satisfaction in all those businesses which you have there to treat with that King, as we could not expect any further difficulties. Notwithstanding by that which hath come unto Our hands immediately after, as well by *George Gage* from *Rome*, as from Our Ambassadour Sir *Richard Weston* at *Bruxelles*, and our Ministers in the *Palatinate*; We find that neither the Dispensation is granted for the march, nor the treaty of Cessation so neer a Conclusion as we conceived it would have been, now that the Auxiliaries and all other Obstacles are removed: But on the contrary side, that new delays and excuses are invented, our Garrisons in the *Palatinate* in the meane time blocked up, and *Heidelberg* it selfe actually besieged. Which proceeding though our Ambassadour hath expostulated with the Infanta and the Commissioners as injurious to Vs, and ill-bebecoming their professions hitherto, yet is there not that readinesse shewed to give Us such contentment therein as we might justly expect, but answers still protracted and put off for advantage, whilst our Forces there remaine in great distresse, and the Towne and Castle of *Heidelberg* likely in a few dayes to be lost, for it cannot hold out longer as we are informed. This dealing seems the more strange unto Vs, for that the late dispatch of the King of *Spain* was (before the

the newes of this siege, and that our Embassadour had propounded any thing concerning it) come unto the Infanta : But because you shall be particularly informed of the whole carriage of the businesse, We have given order that Copies shall be sent you of all the dispatch, and then you shall see how these proceedings agree with the hopes and promises which are given Us from thence. Hereupon therefore Our pleasure is, that you shall immediately and with as much speed as you may, crave audience of that King, and represent unto him the merit which We may justly challenge unto Our Selfe for Our sincere proceedings with the Emperour and Him, in all the course of this businesse, notwithstanding the many invitations and temptations which We have had to engage Our Selfe on Our Sonne in lawes part : That We have had both from the Emperour and Him hopes given us from time to time of extraordinary respect, howsoever Our Sonne-in-law had deserved, which We have attended and expected even to the very last with much patience, and in despite as it were of all the opposition that hath beene made to shake Our resolution in that behalfe, If now when all impediments are removed, and that the way is so prepared, as that the Emperour may give an end unto the Warre, and make some present demonstration of his respects towards Us, in leaving Us the honour of holding those poore places which yet remaine quietly and peaceably untill the generall accommodation, the same shall nevertheless be violently taken from Vs ; what can we looke for when the whole shall be in his hands and possession ? Who amusing Vs with a treaty of cessation, and protracting it industriously as We have reason to beleeve, doth in the meane time seize himselfe of the whole Country ; which being done Our Ambassadour shall returne with scorne, and we remaine with dishonour. I shall not need to furnish you with Arguments for the unfolding and laying open this unfriendly dealing more plainly unto them, your owne reason and observation will find enough out of the dispatches, whereof Copies are sent unto you, as namely, the withdrawing of the Spanish Forces, and leaving the businesse wholly in the hands of the Emperour and the Duke of *Bavaria* ; the stile of the Infanta in answering Our Ambassadour with recriminations, which was not her manner heretofore ; the slight and frivolous answer given by the Marquess of *Bedmar* unto Our Ambassadour when he acquainted him with the siege of *Heidelberg* : The quarrellous occasion taken by the Emperour for calling the diet at *Ratisbone* contrary to his owne promise, which in his Dispatch to Vs he confesseth to have broken, as you will see by the Copy. All which and many more which your owne judgement in the perusal of the dispatches, will suggest unto you, doe minister unto Vs cause sufficient of jealousy on the Emperours part, as you shall plainly tell that King, although We will not doe him that wrong as to mistrust that he gives the least consent unto it : In this confidence with must earnestnesse We shall still sollicite Him, that for the affection He beares Us, and the desire which We suppose he hath, that there may continue for ever a perfect Amity betwixt Us and the whole House of *Austria*, he will not cease to doe all good offices herein ; letting him know directly that in these termes We cannot stand with the Emperour, but that if *Heidelberg* be wonne, and the siege continue, or the Cessation be longer unnecessarily delayed, We must recall Our Ambassadour from *Bruxelles* and treat no more, as We have already given order, hoping that whatsoever unkindnesse We shall conceive against the Emperour upon these occasions, it shall not be interpreted to reflect in any sort upon the entire affection that is at this present, and as VVee hope shall alwaies continue betwixt Us and the Crowne of *Spaine*. And therefore as We have sundry times heretofore promised, in testimony of the sincerity of Our proceedings, and of Our great desire to preserve the Amity inviolable between Us and the whole house of *Austria* ; that in case our Sonne-in-law would not be governed by Vs, that then We would not onely forsake him, but take part and joyne Our Forces with the Emperours against him ; so you may fairly represent unto that King, that in like manner We have reason to expect the same measure from him, that (upon the Emperours avernesse to a cessation and accommodation) He will likewise actually assist Vs for the recovery of the *Palatinate* and Electorall dignity unto Our Sonne-in-law, as it hath beene oftentimes intimated from *Spaine*. To conclude, We shall not

NOTE.

need to say any more unto you touching this point; but to let you see, that Our meaning is to carry all things faire with that King, and not to give him any cause of distrust or jealousie, if you perceive that they intend to goe really and roundly on with the Match. Wherein nevertheless We must tell you, that We have no great cause to be well pleased with the diligences used on that part, when We observe that after so long an expectance of the Dispensation, upon which the whole businesse (as they will have it) depends, there is nothing yet returned but *Queres* and *Objections*. Yet because We will not give over Our patience a while longer, untill We understand more certainly what the effect thereof is like to be, wherein VVe require you to be very wary and watchfull, considering how Our honour is therein engaged; VVe have thought fit to let you know how farre VVe are pleased to enlarge Our Selfe, concerning those points demanded by the Pope, and set downe by way of Postill unto the Articles agreed upon betwixt *Spaine* and Vs, as you will see by the power which *Gage* brought Vs from *Rome*, whereof VVe have sent you a Copy, and Our Resolutions thereupon signed with Our owne hand, for your warrant and instruction. And further then that, since VVe cannot goe without much prejudice, inconvenience and dishonour to Our Selfe and Our Sonne, VVe hope and expect the King of *Spaine* will bring it instantly to an issue without further delay, which you are to presse with all diligence and earnestnesse, that you may presently know Their finall resolution and what VVe may expect thereupon. But if any respite of time be earnestly demanded, and that you perceive it not possible for them to resolve untill an answer cometh from *Rome*, VVe then thinke it fit that you give them two moneths time after your audience, that VVe may understand that King's finall resolution before Christmas next at the furthest.

September 9. 1622.
from VVansted.

By this letter the whole world may discern, how grossly *King James* was abused, and how much the *Palsgrave* and other Protestant Princes suffered in forreigne parts without any assistance from *England*, under pretext of this Nuptiall Treaty.

Vpon these Letters, the Lord *Digby* presented this ensuing Memoriall to the King of *Spaine*, the 3. of *October* 1622. truly translated out of the Spanish Copy.

SIR, the Baron *Digby* Ambassadour Extraordinary of the King of great *Brittaine* saith, that it is neere six moneths since they had treated to make a Marriage between the Prince of *Wales*, and the Infanta *Donna Maria* sister to your Majesty.

That it is five moneths since they settled in *Spaine* the Articles in matter of Religion, His Majesty (now in glory) having first asked the opinions of many learned men, which were joyned to consult upon this businesse.

That the King of great *Brittaine* dealt clearly in all the Articles, and therein hath complied in all things, and hath promised by his word, and in a letter written the sixth of *Aprill* 1620. particularly declared, what he would doe in favour of the *Catholiques*.

That it appeared the businesse was then well founded to aske the *Popes Dispensation*, and thereupon they dispatched Father *Diego de Fuente* for to solicit it in *Rome*; but now at the end very neere of two yeeres, his Holinesse (without reply hither) hath sent directly for *England*, propounding to the King, not onely many alterations in the said Capitulations, but something new, which the King would by no meanes yeeld unto.

That this to the King his Master seemed much different from that which he expected.

First, for that having Capitulated the Dispensation should onely move from this place, and the King having not treated at all with the *Pope*, therefore he expected what the *Pope* would reply, should be sent unto your Majesty, from whence came the demand of the Dispensation.

Secondly, for that he thought, that with the Agreement and the rest perused, all things

NOTE.

things concerning Religion had beene settled and that the learned men did think, that upon these conditions they might, and that his Holinesse ought to consent to the Dispensation, and now they demand new things and impossible, which seemes very strange.

Wherefore the King his Master desiring that in this businesse he make short expedition (for that it imports Him and His Kingdom very much that they marry the Prince His onely Sonne presently, going upon 23. yeeres, having forborne to marry for six yeeres past onely in respect of this Treaty.) He is commanded to declare plainly to your Majesty, how farre he may condiscend in matter of Religion, and if with this your Majesty be content, to proceed to a conclusion of the Matriage, without more delayes; and if this be not enough to give satisfaction to your Majesty, as he hopes it will, seeing he hath yielded to much more then what was capitulated in the time of the King, Father to your Majesty, now in glory, your Majesty also would be pleased to declare on the part of your Majesty, that without losse of more time his Majesty may dispose of the Prince his sonne, and your Majesty of the Infanta, as you best please.

The same day (Octob. 3. 1622.) King James discerning the Emperours and Spaniards strange proceedings in the *Palatinate*, to gaine the totall possession of it under colour of this Teaty, dispatched this ensuing Letter into Spaine to the Lord Digby, and the next day after, this Minute of second Instructions, sent by Master Porter.

Right Trusty, &c. There is none knowes better then your selfe, how We have laboured ever since the beginning of these unfortunate troubles of the Empire; notwithstanding all opposition to the contrary, to merit well of Our good Brother the King of Spaine, and the whole house of *Austria*, by a long and lingering patience, grounded still upon his friendship and promises, that Care should be had of Our Honour, and of Our Childrens Patrimony and Inheritance. We have acquainted you also from time to time since the beginning of the Treaty at *Brussels* how crossly all things have there proceeded, notwithstanding all the faire professions made unto Us, both by the King of Spaine, and the Infanta and all his Ministers, and the Letters written by him unto the Emperour, and them effectually (at the least, as they endeavoured to make Us beleieve.) But what fruits have We of all these, other then dishonour and scorne? Whilest We are treating, the Towne and Castle of *Heidelberg* are taken by force, Our Garrison put to the sword, *Manheim* besieged, and all the hostility used that is within the power of an enemy, as you will see by the Relation which VVe have commanded Our Secretary to send you. Our pleasure therefore is, that you immediately as soone as you can get audience, let that King understand how sensible We are of these proceedings of the Emperours towards Vs, and withall are not a little troubled to see, that the Infanta having an absolute Commission to conclude a Cessation and suspension of Armes, should now at last when all Objections were answered, and the former (solely) pretended Obstacles removed, not onely delay the conclusion of the Treaty, but refuse to lay her command upon the Emperours Generals, for abstaining from the siege of Our Garrisons during the Treaty, upon a pretext of want of authority: So as for avoyding of further dishonour, We have been forced to recall both Our Ambassadors as well the Chancelour of our Exchequer, who is already returned to Our presence, as also the Lord *Chichester*, whom We intended to have sent unto the Emperour to the Diet at *Ratisbone*. Seeing therefore that meerly out of Our extraordinary respect to the King of Spaine, and the firme confidence We ever put in the hopes and promises which he did give Vs (desiring nothing more then for his cause principally to avoyd all occasions that might put Vs into ill understanding with any of the house of *Austria*) We have hitherto proceeded with a stedfast patience trusting to the Treaties, and neglecting all other Meanes which probably might have secured the remainder of Our Childrens Inheritance (those Garrisons which We maintained in the *Palatinate* being rather for honours sake to keepe a footing untill the generall accommodation, then that We did rely so much upon their strength as upon his friendship) and by this confidence and security of Ours, are thus exposed to dishonour and reproach: You shall tell that King, that seeing all those endeavours and

good Offices which He hath used towards the Emperour in this businesse, on the behalfe of Our Sonne-in-law (upon confidence whereof that security of Ours depended, which he continually by his Letters and Ministers here laboured to beget and confirme in Vs) have not sorted to any other issue, then to a plaine abuse both of His trust and Ours, whereby VVe are both of Vs highly injured in Our Honour, though in a different degree. VVe hope and desire that out of a true sense of this wrong offered unto Vs, he will as Our deere and loving Brother, faithfully promise and undertake upon his Honour, confirming the same also under his hand and seale, either that the Towne and Castle of *Heidelberg* shall within threescore and ten dayes after your audience and demand made, be rendered into Our hands, with all things therein belonging to Our Sonne-in-law or Our Daughter (as neere as may be in the state they were when they were taken) and the like for *Manheim* and *Frankendale*, if both or either of them shall be taken by the enemy whilst these things are in treating; As also, that there shall be within the said terme of 70. dayes a Cessation and Suspension of Armes in the *Palatinate* for the future, upon the severall Articles and Conditions last propounded by Our Ambassadour Sir *Richard Weston*; and that the generall Treaty shall be set on foot againe upon such honourable termes and conditions as We propounded unto the Emperour in a Letter written unto him in *November* last, and with which the King of *Spaine* then (as VVe understood) seemed satisfied. Or else in case all these particulars be not yeilded unto and performed by the Emperour, as is here propounded, but be refused or delayed beyond the time aforementioned, that then the King of *Spaine* doe joyne his Forces with Ours for the recovery of Our Childrens honours and Patrimony, which upon this trust hath been thus lost: Or if so be his Forces at this present be otherwise so imployed, as that they cannot give Vs that assistance which VVe here desire, and (as VVe thinke) have deserved, yet that at the least he will permit Vs a free and friendly passage thorow his Territories and Dominions, for such Forces as VVe shall send and imploy into *Germany* for this service. Of all which distinctly if you receive not from the King of *Spaine* within ten dayes at the furthest after your audience and proposition made, a direct assurance under his hand and seale, without delay or putting Vs off to farther Treaties and Conferences; that is to say, of such restitution, Cessation of Armes, and proceeding to a generall Treaty, as is before mentioned; or else of assistance and joyning His Forces with Ours against the Emperours, or at least permission of passage for Our Forces thorow His the said Kings Dominions; that then you take your leave and returne to Our presence without further stay; otherwise, to proceed in the Negotiation for the Marriage of Our Sonne according to the Instructions VVe have given you. Given, &c.

Hampton-Court, Octob. 3.

1622.

Right Trusty, &c. We have given you certaine Instructions signed with Our hand, to direct you how to expresse unto the King of *Spaine*, the feeling We have of the dishonour put upon Vs by the Emperour, through Our trust and confidence in that Kings promises, wherein you have order to come away without further delay, in case you receive not satisfaction to your demands in such sort as We have commanded you to propound them. Nevertheless We are to put you in remembrance of that which We have heretofore told you, in case a Rupture happen between the King of *Spaine* and Vs, that We would be glad to manage it at Our best advantage. And therefore howsoever you doe not find the satisfaction which We in those Instructions crave from the King of *Spaine*, and have reason to expect, yet would We not have you instantly come away upon it, but advertise Vs first, letting Vs know privately (if you find such cause) that there is no good to be done, nor no satisfaction as you judge intended Vs, though publicquely and outwardly you give out the contrary, that VVe may make use thereof with Our People in Parliament, as VVe shall hold best for Our service. And this see you doe notwithstanding any thing in your other Instructions to the contrary.

Note this.

Octob. 4. 1622.

The

The Pope and Spaniard upon these Letters and new Instructions, seemde very desirous to proceed to the accomplishment of this Match; but their chiefe designe being to advance the Romish Catholique Religion and reduce England by degrees thereto; the Pope to make sure worke, insisted stiffely on this Article; *that the Children of this Marriage SHOULD BE BROUGHT VP CATHOLIQVES VNDER THE MOTHER VNTILL THEY VVERE 12. OR 14. YEERES OLD.* He well knew the verity of the ancient Proverb,

Quo semel est imbuta recens servabit odorem

Testa diu:

Forage.

That if they were bred up Papists in their infancy, they would questionlesse continue such, and not turne zealous Protestants in their riper yeeres: No wonder then he stood so much upon this point.

King James to shew his willingnesse to consummate the Match. though he refused totally to condescend to this Article in open shew, to preserve his Honour. yet he was contented privately to oblige himselfe, that the Mother should have their education till they were nine yeeres old, as is evident by this ensuing Letter of Master Secretary Calvert to the Earle of Bristol, sent by Vascanda y.

My very good Lord,

Because I would not omit any thing that should conduce to the accomplishment of that worke which your Lordship hath in hand, and which His Majesty desires so much to bring to an issue. Although I conceive Master Porter had directions to tell your Lordship (which he will transmit unto you by Letter, now he cannot goe himselfe) that whereas it is insisted upon by the Pope, that the Children of this Marriage should be brought up Catholiques under the Mother untill they be twelve or fourteen yeeres of age, His Majesty having limited their education under the Mother onely to seven yeeres; His Majesty is contented to yeeld thus much farther, that howbeit in the publique Articles (which in that point he desires not to be altered) he mention but seven yeeres, he will oblige himselfe privately by a Letter to the King of Spaine, that they shall be brought up *sub Regimine Matris*, for two yeeres longer, that is, untill the age of nine yeeres, if that will give any satisfaction: which your Lordship may manage as you see best for His Majesties service: And so I rest,

Saint Martens-lane, Octob.

14. 1622.

After this about the 25. of October, King James writ a private Letter with his own hand to the Earle of Bristol, which Secretary Calvert sent away with all speed and secrecy by Master Gage, to limit the Spaniard unto two months to gaine the Popes Resolution and Dispensation from Rome, as is evident by the Copy of this Secretaries Letter to the Earle from St. Martens-lane, Octob. 26. 1622.

The King of Spaine hereupon deludes King James with faire dilatory promises, as if he intended the hastening of the Marriage; but how farre he was from any such reall intention, is evident by this Letter of his to his grand favourite, Conde of Olivares, dated the fifth of Novemb. 1622. found among the Lord Cottingtons papers.

The King my Father declared at his death, that his intent never was to marry my Sister the Infanta Donna Maria with the Prince of Wales, which your Uncle Don Baltazar understood, and so treated this Match ever with intention to delay it; notwithstanding it is now so farre advanced, that considering all the avernesse unto it of the Infanta, it is time to seeke some meanes to divert the Treaty, which I would have you find out, and I will make it good whatsoever it be: but in all other things procure the satisfaction of the King of Great Brittain (who hath deservyd much) and it shall content me, so that it be not in the Match.

To colour the matter the better, he pretended no Dispensation would be granted at *Rome*, unless the Pope received further satisfaction in the time of the Childrens education by the Mother, and point of Ecclesiasticall persons exemption from all secular jurisdiction; to remove with obstructions, King *James* was content to comply in these particulars further then he had done before, as His ensuing Letter to the Earle of *Bristol* clearly demonstrates; which Letter was drawne and written for his Majesties signature by Master (now Lord) *Cottington*, then Secretary to the Prince.

To the Earle of Bristol.

Right Trusty, &c. We have seene your Letters of the 21. *Octob.* both those directed unto Our Selfe, as also to Our Secretary Sir *George Calvert*, and in them doe observe your discreet proceeding, both in the businesse concerning the restauration which We expect to be made to the *Prince Palatine* Our Sonne-in-law, as also in the Treaty of the Marriage of Our deare Sonne the Prince of *Wales*. Touching the first, We perceive what professions that King and his Ministers have againe made unto you, of a resolution to assist Us with his Armes, in case by a faire Mediation and Treaty the restitution may not be obtained, and how much in that kind he hath engaged his Honour and his word unto you. And howsoever the order given to the Infanta for the reliefe of *Marheim*, arrived so late, and after the Towne was yielded into the hands of *Tilly*, yet must We acknowledge it to be a good effect of your Negotiation, and an Argument of that Kings sincere and sound intention. By what We have now given in charge unto Our Secretary to advertise you in his Letters, you will understand the present estate of this businesse, and how constantly VVe doe still expect the performance of that engagement from the King of *Spaine*, without giving way to any thing that on Our behalfe may any way disturbe it. And therefore you shall now doe well (in Our name) to presse him to a finall and effective resolution, representing to him and to his Ministers how much it concernes Us in honour and in reputation (besides the interest of Our Sonne-in-law) not to admit any further delay.

NOTE.

And as touching the two points in the Treaty of the Marriage, wherein you desire Our further direction and resolution, you have by this time understood by the dispatch which *George Gage* carried you, how We were contented to permit the breeding and education of the Children under the government of their Mother untill the age of nine yeeres, which We doubt not will give good satisfaction, seeing their demand is but untill ten; yet seeing it is but one yeere more, in case you shall not be able to draw them to be contented with nine, We will not sticks at it. And for the other point which concernes the exemption of the Ecclesiasticke from secular jurisdiction, We shall be contented, that the Ecclesiasticall Superior doe first take notice of the offence that shall be committed, and according to the merit thereof, either deliver him by degradation to the secular Justice, or banish him the Kingdome, according to the quality of the delict: which VVe conceive to be the same that is practised in *Spaine* and other parts. Your dispatches are in all points so full, and in them VVe receive so good satisfaction, as in this VVe shall need nor to enlarge any further, but onely to tell you that VVe are well pleased with the diligence and discreet imploying of your endeavours in all that concernes Our service, and so are VVe likewise with the whole proceedings of Our Ambassadour Sir *Walter Aston*: Thus VVe bid you heartily farewell.

From New-market, 24.

Novemb. 1622.

The King of *Spaine* after many delatories and much pressing by King *James* and his Ambassadour for a finall answer to his demands, touching the *Palatinate* and *March*, on the 12. of *Decemb.* 1622. returned this Answer in writing.

The Answer appointed by his Majesty to be given unto the Earle of *Bristol*, Extraordinary Ambassadour from the King of *Great Brittain*, touching those things which he hath represented from the said King unto his Majesty, concerning the Marriage now in Treaty, and the businesse of the *Palatinate*, is this which followeth.

Touching

Touching the Marriage.

THat his Majesty hath given order that his resolution be delivered unto him in writing, and therein (as the Earle of *Bristol* himselfe hath seene) hath endeavoured what he may to conforme himselfe with that which the King of *Great Brittain* hath answered unto the Popes propositions; so desirous hath his Majesty been from the beginning to overcome all difficulties that might hinder this Vnion; that both here and at *Rome* he hath not slackt to use all possible care to facilitate it, and will so continue untill the conclusion; and at this present according to what is agreed with the foresaid Earle, a Post (to goe and returne with speed) is dispatched unto *Rome*, to the end, that his Holinesse judging what is agreed upon sufficient (as here it is held to be) doe grant the Dispensation; and in the interim whilest the Pope sendeth it, the which his Majesty will procure shall be done before the end of *March* or of *Aprill* at the furthest; the remaining temporall Articles shall be treated and concluded, to the end that no time be lost, but the Infanta may immediatly after the granting of the Dispensation, be delivered the next spring, as is the intention of his Majesty.

Touching the Palatinate.

THe forenamed Ambassadour well knoweth what his Majesty hath done therein already, to the end, it may appeare to the world how much he esteemes the friendship of his deare Brother the King of *Great Brittain*, and how just he acknowledgeth it to be to give him content in all things, and particularly, in those which concerne the conveniency of both Crownes; his Majesty hopeth that by his late dispatches into *Flanders*, there hath been taken such courte to settle all things as can be desired, and those orders are now againe renewed and re-inforced, to the end, that all may be accommodated to the satisfaction of his Majesty of *Great Brittain*, the which orders shall be shewed to the foresaid Conde, that he may rest satisfied of the reallity and sincerity wherewith his Catholique Majesty doth proceed in this businesse; but untill it be knowne what effect these dispatches have taken, and what the Emperour will reply, no answer can be well given in writing to the particulars contained in the memoriall of the foresaid Conde, for the reasons which have been delivered unto him by word of mouth, and shall be represented unto his Majesty of *Great Brittain*, by *Don Carlos Coloma*, his Catholique Majesties Ambassadour.

Madrid, Decemb.

12. 1622.

Soone after this, the King of *Spaine* sent a draught of such Articles touching Religion, as he insisted on to *King James*, who together with the Prince to (hasten the Dispensation,) accommodated them in the ensuing maner, and then readily signed them.

The Accommodation of the differences in Religion.

All those Articles which came from *Rome*, to which his Majesty tooke no exception in his directions to the Earle of *Bristol* under his hand, of the ninth of *September*, passed as not disallowed by his Majesty; those wherein there remained any difference are accommodated in the forme following.

THe forme of the Celebration is allowed in such sort as it was agreed of in *England*, so likewise the oath to be taken by the Infanta's Servants.

The Article for the Church is thus to be understood, that at one standing house *Saint James*, or where the houshold is to remaine, there must be a Church for burying and marrying, and christening, &c. it being altogether unfit that all meane people, belonging to her service should be married or christened in her Chappell within her Pallace, but this is not understood of any Church in *London*, but one to be built adjoyning to the Pallace.

Whereas it is said, that her Servants are precisely to be Catholiques, for that it seemed

med not fitting to capitulate any thing that might be exclusive to the Protestants, it is left indifferent that her Servants may be Catholics.

Where it is required by the Pope, *quod Ecclesiastici nullis legibus subjaceant nisi suorum superiorum Ecclesiasticorum*. The Divines unanimously delivered their opinion, that this King cannot by capitulation subject the Clergy to the Civill Magistrate, neither hath he that power himselfe in Spaine, and they presuppose that those of the Infanta's Family are to have the same immunity as in Spaine, but they have qualified the Article what is possible, and they say some such course may be settled therein as may give his Majesty satisfaction, either by banishing them, or sending them with their procels into Spaine, or some other course which may be agreed upon, and it will be in his Majesties power in any foule case, to doe that by way of fact which they cannot capitulate; howsoever, it was not held fit to break so great a business upon the dispute of a case which is like never to happen.

Concerning the Nurses, it is left indifferently without any exclusion of the Protestants as in the sixth Article.

Touching the Articles brought out of Spaine.

Concerning the security against the Divorce, they are to relye on the Kings and Princes word of honour.

Touching the education of the Children, *quod educentur in Religione Catholica*, is absolutely omitted; and whereas the Pope requires they should be in the government of the Mother, the Sonnes untill fourteene, the Daughters untill twelve, the Article is onely till seven, with a private Promise untill nine, and this King pressing it may be untill ten.

As for the *bonum publicum* required by the Pope, all particulars which were propounded, as the suspending the peccall Lawes, &c. are now omitted, onely that the Catholics may live without persecution, not giving scandall, and this to be done by his Majesties owne Grace and Clemency, without any publique Capitulation; onely the King and Prince to promise it unto the King of Spaine by their private Letters.

The Articles of Religion being thus accommodated betweene the two Kings, King James who had formerly by his Agent Gage sent Letters to Rome to the Pope (wherein he stiled him, *most holy Father*) and likewise to some great Cardinals, to speed the Dispensation, with private instructions not to deliver them, unless he saw a present likelihood of granting the Dispensation, sends now two expresse Letters to Gage unto Rome (the one from himselfe, the other from Calvert his principall Secretary, dated the 5. of Jan. 1622.) to present those Letters to the Pope and Cardinals, assuring himselfe, that since he had ratified all the Articles concerning Religion without any alteration, the Pope could not in justice but speedily grant the long-sought-for Dispensation. The Copy of these two Letters (sent by Master Lamson) here follow in order.

Trusty, &c. By Letters which We have lately received from Our right Trusty and right worthy Cousen and Councillour the Earle of Bristol, VVe understand how dutifully and discreetly you have carried your selfe in the furthering Our service, whilst you remained in the Court of Spaine, for which VVe returne you Our gracious thanks. He hath also acquainted Us with the directions which he gave you, touching the delivery of the Letters you carried from hence; that if you saw a likelihood of present granting the Dispensation upon the Articles now agreed on, you should deliver them, unless you received order from Us to the contrary. We would therefore now have you understand, that there is no cause why you should forbear the delivery of any of them, if you find the Dispensation will certainly be granted: And thereof We hope there shall be now no doubt, considering that We have condescended unto, approved and ratified all and every the Articles concerning Religion, without changing or altering any one word, as they are agreed upon and concluded betweene the King of Spaines Commissioners and Our Ambassadour at Madrid in December last: which being transmitted unto Vs, both Our Selfe and Our Sonne the Prince have subscribed the

the same, and so have sent them backe againe unto Our said Abassadour for a finall conclusion of all things concerning matter of Religion or conscience, although the formality needed not, Our Ambassadours having obliged Vs before sufficiently according to the large power given them by their Commission. And thus much We have thought fit to let you know that if any further scruple should remaine there touching Our absolute content, you may be able to remove it.

Dated 5. Jan.

1622.

S I R,

After Porter is safely here arrived the second of this Moneth, with the conclusion of all those difficult Articles that hitherto have retarded the proceeding of the Match. He was long looked for, and a welcome man when he came both to his Majesty and the Prince; insomuch, as I must tell you, I have no rest since with our yong Master, for being called upon early and late to hasten away the dispatch of all, to your selfe and my Lord of Bristoll, which I have done with as much diligence as possibly I could.

His Majesty and the Prince have both of them subscribed all the Articles as they were sent hither from my Lord of Bristoll, in this manner; *Hos supra memoratos Articulos omnes ac singulos approbamus, & quicquam in eis ex nostra parte seu nostra nomine conventum est, ratum atque gratum Habemus,*

Jacobus Rex.

Carolus Pr.

And in the full performance of whatsoever was agreed upon concerning the *Bonitas Publicum*, his Majesty and the Prince likewise have written their severall letters unto the King of Spaine, faithfully promising in the words of a King and of a Prince, to cause the same to be observed inviolably in the very same *Termes verbatim*, as it is set downe in the last Article of all sent hither from my Lord of Bristoll, which I am sure you have seene and remembred, viz. *Quod ea omnia prestituri sint, que ministris Regis Hispania ante hac verbotenus R. M. Britt. pollicitus est, Hoc est, quod regnorum suorum Romano-Catholici persecutionem nullam patientur, molestiae afficientur Religionis sua causa, vel ob exercitium ullorum ejusdem Sacramentorum modo us utantur absque scandalo (quod intelligi debet intra privatos parietes) nec juramentis aut sub alio pretextu qualicunque ordinem religionis spectante vexabuntur.* NOTE.

With these dispatches M. S. Digby (who is within these foure or five dayes returned out of Germany) is to be sent away to morrow for Spaine with all possible speed. Don Carlos hath advertized to the Duke of Alberquerque, the Padre Maestro, and your selfe as much as I doe. Now you know all that is done both in Spaine and here concerning this point; I must leave you to such directions as you have received from the Earle of Bristoll, how much of this to silence, and how long to silence, and what to discover, as his letter and you have there thought fittest for the good of his Majesties service.

For the token which I send to Aristides, I pray you be sure that he deserve it well; for I doe not meane to be at that cost with him, unlesse you be sure he doe me that curtise which I expect, and as he hath often made me beleve. It is an hundred to one but you shall find him at Alexandria if you misse him elsewhere. Aeneas recommends unto you againe secrecy in this businesse above all things, and that you be certaine of speeding before you deliver the letter to Padre Maestro. NOTE.

From VVhite-hall, 5.

Jan. 1622

POSTSCRIPT.

I Need not tell you how graciously his Majesty accepts of the good service you have done, since it hath pleased him to acknowledge it under his own hand, and I must not forget one charge more that I have received from him, which is, that I should will you

D

12

in his name to salute the *Padre Maestro* affectionately from him, and to let him know also how sensible and thankfull his Majesty is for those singular good offices and diligent endeavours which he hath used from the beginning of this businesse untill now, and still continues them; as his Majesty understands particularly from *Don Carlos Coloma*, I pray you also commend my service unto him.

I have order for a Privy Seale of 300. li. more, which the Earle of *Bristol* delivered you in *Madrid*, to be paid to *Master Wake* at *Antwerpe*.

What *Gage* did at *Rome* in pursuance of these two Letters, and what opinion the Pope and Cardinals held of *King James*, will appeare by this ensuing Letter of *Master Gage* sent to his Majesty from *Rome*, and thence dated the 24. of *Aprill* 1623.

S I R,

IT may please your Majesty to understand that in a Congregation held the 22. of *March*, *stilo novo*, the Dispensation was finally resolved, and order taken, that the Cardinall *Bandino* should draw the Articles in forme, the Cardinall *la Susanna* make the Breve, and *Monsignor Aquas* the Popes Secretary (who was present at the two last Sessions) draw some Instructions for *Monsignor de Massini* the *Nuncio*, now resident in the Court of *Spaine*. And in the following Congregation held the 29. these things were seene and allowed, and the next day presented to the Pope, and allowed by him. Concerning the particulars of the proceeding here, of difficulties overcome, and of whar yet remaineth to be done, I have given a large account to Master Secretary *Calvert*; by which if your Majesty receive not that entire satisfaction which we, who have laboured therein, have most earnestly desired, I shall most humbly beseech your Majesty to beleieve; first, that we have left no diligence undone by which we could hope to remove impediments; and secondly, that such difficulties as are either spent or yet to be admitted, have been laid hold by the Cardinals, neither to frustrate or prolong this Treaty, but out of an opinion that they could not otherwise secure their Conscience, proceed upon a just and valuable ground, and satisfy the judgement of such discreet persons, as may in times ensuing understand the passages of this great businesse. And this point I am the bolder to represent to your Majesties gracious consideration, because jointly with all their protestations to this effect, their actions have concurred also to give good testimony thereof. They hold most honourable language of your

NOTE.

Majesty, they professe a great desire to have occasions of doing you all humble service; they have a firme opinion that the former rigours used towards your Catholique Subjects have risen from others, but the graces then given from your Selfe; and they are confident that your Majesty, now that so potent intercessions have been used with you and all grounds of civill jealousies removed, will not onely command a reall performance of what you are pleased to promise in their favour, but futable to your owne royall heart enlarge the benefit of your Princely goodnesse. I have therefore (Sir) finding them thus affected, thought it futable to your service to let them understand, that since they expect these things from a Prince who yeeldeth to no man, either in esteeming or returning a Benefit, they may safely promise themselves all good successe and give way to their owne good dispositions of respect and affection towards your Majesty; and the rather I have done so, because I perswaded my selfe that your Majesty is of the same opinion with him, who speaking of the Romans to King *Bacchus*, said, *Licet Parentes abundè habeamus, Amicorum neque Nobis, neque cuiquam mortuum satis fuit.*

NOTE.

I send your Majesty Letters from the Cardinals *Bandino* and *Lodovico*, which they writ in answer of your Majesties to them, who above all others sought to oblige your Majesty, as by Letter to Master Secretary you will perceive. After the Easter-Holydayes I shall begin my journey towards *Florence* and *Parma* to performe your Majesties commands there, whereof I will give your Majesty account in due time. It will be the end of *May* before I shall get out of *Italy*, during which time I shall with devotion expect your Majesties orders, if in any thing further you shall be pleased to command my service. So I humbly pray the divine goodnesse to give your Majesty
mai.

many faire yeeres of life thereby, to enjoy the fruits of this noble alliance, and to make happy your Subjects by your gracious government.

Your Majesties most humble
and loyall Subject,

George Gage

After which, on the 7. of *January* these two Letters from King *James* and Secretary *Calvert*, were sent into *Spaine* by Master *Digby* to the Earle of *Bristol*.

Right Trusty, &c. The dispatches which We have received from you by *Endimion Porter*, doe give Us sufficient assurance that there hath not wanted in you nor in Our ordinary Ambassadour Sir *Walter Aston*, that faithfull endeavour and diligence, to expedite those great businesses you have in charge, which We could expect or require at your hands, for which We are pleased to returne you both Our gracious acceptation and thanks. You will see by that which We have subscribed unto the Articles you sent Vs, and by the Letters which We and Our Sonne have both written unto Our Brother the King of *Spaine*, how well We approve of what hitherto hath been done, and what you have promised and undertaken in your name; which being, as We hope the period of all their demands in that kind, We wish you to proceed unto the temporall Articles and to conclude and consummate the whole businessse now, according to the Commissions you have, as soone as possibly you may, that there may be no further delay. Concerning that other unfortunate knotty affaire of the *Palatinate*, to say the truth, as things stand, We cannot tell what you could have done more then you have already. And whereas you write that the King of *Spaine* and his principall Ministers there, did find Our last Propositions somewhat strange, you shall understand that the cause why We sent you such strict and peremptory Instructions was, for that the Chancelour of Our Exchequer found nothing but palpable and grosse delays at *Bruxelles*, whilest in the meane time *Heidelberg* was besieged and afterwards taken, *Manheim* beleaguer'd, and all hostility used that might be. Besides, *Gage* coming from *Rome* about the same time, instead of bringing the newes which was expected of the Dispensation granted, presents Vs certaine exceptions taken against the Articles by the Pope, with an intention as it seemes, to ingage Vs in a Treaty, or dispute with him about the said Articles, which was never the meaning, but that the King of *Spain* should have undertaken that businessse himselfe. This was the reason that moved Vs at the earnest instance and perswasion of Our Councell to urge the matter, so as to bring it to a speedy point; not but that the very precisest of them, were alwaies of opinion, that if the Match were once concluded, the other businessse would be accommodated to Our satisfaction. Neverthelessse these doubts and causes of jealousie, occurring, they did all *una voce* represent unto Vs, how highly and importunately it concerned Our estate and service to be at some certainty, and to know what to trust to; neither is the usage and respect We yet find from the Infanta at *Bruxelles* and that Kings Ministers any thing at all amended, notwithstanding all the great demonstrations We have made of Our confidence and good correspondency with them, and the meanes We have alwayes sought to oblige them, as no doubt you have understood by sundry late dispatches from Our Secretary. And now lastly, when We out of Our especiall trust in the Infanta, had made an offer of late to sequester the Towne of *Frankendale* into her hands, upon no other assurance then shee her selfe had offered Vs before *Manheim* was lost, by *Don Carlos Coloma*, which was to restore it, and those other places againe which were at that time also required, either upon the conclusion of the peace with the Emperour, or upon a rupture in case that proceeded not; the same proposition being now againe revived by Vs, shee is fallen away from the conditions

NOTE.

first propounded by Our Selfe, offering onely to accept it upon trust if We will put it into her hands, without obliging her selfe to restore it againe; which VVe take to be a great disrespect, if not a scorne. And therefore being resolved not to treat with her any more about it, it is Our pleasure that you shall presently deal with the King of Spaine to the same purpose, and to make him an offer of *Frankendale* from Vs by way of sequestration, upon the condition aforesaid, of restitution in the State as it now stands, whether the peace with the Emperour succeed or not; and if he accept it, that he will signifie so much to Vs under his hand, and give order for the present receiving it accordingly, for the case will not admit any long time of treaty.

In your last dispatch you advertise Vs, that the King of Spaine hath written againe very effectually unto the Emperour about these affaires of the *Palatinate*. VVe doe much desire to know what the particulars of that Letter were, and to what effect, and what other endeavours that King intends to use for procuring Vs satisfaction therein, whereof VVe require you to informe Vs as particularly as you may, because you know it concernes Vs much to have that businesse at a point. There are some other matters concerning Our service which VVe have commanded Our Secretary to impart unto you, and therefore will hold you no longer now, but wish you health and a good success in your affaires.

White-hall, 7. Jan.

1622.

My very good Lord,

BEcause I know you will with much longing expect an answer to the dispatch brought by Master *Porter*, and his Majesties service requires it; this Bearer Master *Digby* is sent to you with all speed that may be, being specially chosen by his Majesty, both out of the former experience he hath had of his diligence, and for that he is best able to informe you how all things have passed in *Germany*; for *Frankendale* your Lordship will understand by his Majesties owne Letter in what state it now remaines, and this morning I have received a Letter from Captaine *Burgh* who is the Governor, that they have not above foure moneths Bread and VVine, beginning to reckon from the 24. of *November*, which was the time that *Tilly* departed from thence: since that time Colonell *Papenheim* blocks us the Towne with twelve Companies of Horse and some few of Foot, to whom are since joyned two Regiments more of the Dukes of *Saxen* and *Holsten*, which makes 2000. Horse come out of *Brabant*, which have girt them up so close as there is no further meanes left to relieve them. He writes to me further, that they have it from many places, how the Imperialists doe laugh to think, that we had any hope out of that Letter from the King of Spaine to the Infanta, saying, that they know that those of *Frankendale* must seeke to them before Summer, and entreat them to take the Towne. It will therefore much import his Majesties service that your Lordship doe procure some answer and resolution from the King of Spaine concerning that Towne, and that with all speed.

To leave those businesse of the *Palatinate* of which I have no more to say, saving onely this, which his Majesty commanded me the other day to write unto you, that your Lordship should use all the meanes possible to stirre up that King for diverting the Translation of the Electorate at this Diet.

Your Lordship shall understand, that there hath been no want of care here to make all things sure, which you have promised there on his Majesties behalfe; and therefore your Lordship shall receive a confirmation of all under his Majesties and the Princes hands, subscribed to the paper it selfe, which you sent hither, so you may please also to know, that least it should be discovered, that the assent you gave there unto the Propositions was but conditionall, and so retard the proceedings at *Rome*; his Majesty hath likewise dispatched an Extraordinary, who is this day already gone with much diligence to find our Master *Gage* at *Rome* or elsewhere, to whom his Majesty hath been pleased to write himselfe, taking notice of the report your Lordship made of his good service at *Madrid*, and requiring him now, if he saw that the Dis-

penation

NOTE.

penſation would certainly be granted, to deliver his Letters, thereof to be firſt ſure and ſecret. I have written unto him alſo, and told him all that is done here, how his Ma- jeſty and the Prince have confirmed the Articles, and to that purpoſe they have both written unto the King of *Spaine*, promiſing favour to the Catholiques; and *Don Car- los Coloma* hath written the like unto the Duke of *Alberquerque*, and to *Padre Ma- eſtro*, ſo as there needs be no ſcruple now, nor colour of deferring the Diſpenſation.

NOTE

For the 303. li. which your Lordſhip hath laid out to Maſter *Gage*, I ſhall take or- der for a privy Seale here to repay it unto Maſter *Lyonell Wake* of *Antwerpe* upon whom it is to be charged, as I underſtand from Maſter Secretary *Cottingham*; I ſhall not need to remember your Lordſhip, were it not that his Maſteſty hath commanded me, becauſe I perceive by your Letters you are carefull enough of it your ſelfe, not to deliver thoſe private Letters of his and the Princes, concerning the favour intended to the Catholiques untill the Diſpenſation be granted and the Match fully concluded. His Maſteſty hath further commanded me to put your Lordſhip in mind of that which muſt neceſſarily be thought on before the ſolemnization of the Marriage, and that is, what perſon of that Court is fitteſt to be deputed by his Highneſſe for that office, and to ſend him word of it betimes, that he may diſpatch away his Commiſſion to him for that purpoſe: and if your Lordſhip pleaſe to cauſe the forme thereof to be drawne there, ſuch a one as will give them contentment and is fitting for his Highneſſe to ſigne; I ſhould thinke it were not amiſſe.

NOTE

Your Lordſhip will not forget alſo to ſend Vs word when it is time for his High- neſſe to ſend Love Letters and tokens to his Miſtreſſe. I hope your next diſpatch will inſorme Vs of all theſe things, in the meane time, &c.

White-hall, 7. Jan.

1622.

After this, Secretary *Calvert* writ this enſuing Letter to the ſaid Earle having ſome relation to the Match, and the uſe the Spaniards made of it.

My very good Lord,

Y^Ou will underſtand before theſe come to your hands by Maſter Secretary *Digby* who was diſpatched away from hence with much Diligence, that Maſter *Porter* was ſafely arriv'd here, and to the diſpatch which he brought with him, your Lordſhip by Maſter *Digby* receives full and particular answer to all points that required it; ne- vertheſſe upon the hazard of one mans perſon, I have ſent your Lordſhip herewithall by the Ordinary, Duplicats of that diſpatch.

Yours of the 20. of the laſt moneth old ſtile, came ſafely into my hands, and for the matter of *Ormus*, his Maſteſty hath commanded me to tell you, that he had heard of it before by a flying report, but never the certainty thereof till now, wherefore his Maſteſty would have your Lordſhip to let the King of *Spaine* underſtand, that he is ver- ry ſenſible of the accident, deſiring him to reſt aſſured, that he will doe his utmoſt en- deavour to diſcover the verity of the fact, and upon the diſcovery thereof will af- terwards proceed as a juſt Prince ought to doe, and as a faithfull friend to that King.

Within theſe few dayes here hath happened an accident that hath put Vs into ſome diſorder: The Prince taking notice of two of his Muſicians *Angelo*, an *Italian*, and *Drew* an *Engliſh man*, that were at the Spaniſh Ambaſſadours on Chriſtmas Eve aſſi- ſting with their voices and muſick at the midnight Maſſe; (at which his Maſteſty and his Highneſſe were much diſpleaſed) turned them both out of his ſervice: The Spaniſh Ambaſſadour mediated for them by an earneſt Letter which he writ unto his Highneſſe, but could not at firſt prevaile, though ſince, as I underſtand, he hath obtai- ned remiſſion for them; it was not well done of them to goe, and an ill fortune I doubt that ſo much notice is taken of it.

Upon a complaint of the ſaid Ambaſſadour in his Maſteſties name of certaine ſpoyles and depredations, as he termes them, committed by his Maſteſties Subjects trading in- to the Eaſt Indies, upon the Portugueſſes there, and thereupon demanding juſtice; he obtained a Commiſſion directed ſo ſome ſeven or eight of the Counſell under the
great

great Seale of England, to examine upon oath the verity of the accusation, and informing his Majesty thereof, a legall course afterwards to be directed for the further proceeding and sentencing the fact. Of this Commission amongst divers others of the Board I am one, and we have met once or twice about it: Yesterday my Lord Admirall representing unto his Majesty how derogatory this course of commissioning was to the Jurisdiction of his Court of Admiralty, as in truth I think it be, his Majesty hath given order, that there shall be no further proceeding upon it, but the businesse left to a legall tryall in that Court to which it appertaines, and I am commanded to speake with the Spanish Ambassadour to that purpose; I pray God I may give him satisfaction, howsoever I shall doe my best; and so kissing your Lordships hands I rest.

White-hall, 14. Jan^y

1622.

(a) Tom. 9.
An. 1624. pag.
39.

NOTE.

(b) Tom. 9. p.
485, &c.

NOTE.

The Articles concerning Religion being thus concluded and signed by the King and Prince; the Lawes against Jesuits, popish Priests and Recusants by promise suspended for the future, all imprisoned Roman Catholiques of all sorts enlarged throughout his Majesties Dominions, the free exercise of their Religion without molestation, promised in expresse termes, and the Marquesse of Buckingham hereupon then writing into Spaine (as the (a) *French Mercury* informes us) That our Informers, Purservants, Prisons, should from thenceforth serve no more but for our owne Ministers and other persons zealous of our Religion, (which hath ever since experimentally proved most true) King James made no doubt at all, but that the Pope would presently grant the Dispensation, and the Spaniard without more delays consummate the marriage. To hasten which King James (as the same (b) *Mercury* records, and I have credibly heard the same from others) assembling his Privy Counsell together, Febr. 25. 1622. made a long Oration to them (which he recites at large) the summe whereof was this: That the Roman Catholiques in England had sustained great and intolerable surcharges, imposed upon their goods, bodies, consciences, during Queen Elizabeths reigne, of which they hoped to be relieved in his; that his Mother suffered martyrdom in this Realme for the profession of the said Catholique Religion; a Religion which had been publicly professed for many ages in this Realme, confirmed by many great and excellent Emperours, and famous in all Ecclesiastical Histories, by an infinite number of Martyrs, who had sealed it with their blood: That the Catholiques well knew that there was in him a grand affection to the Catholique Religion, insomuch that they beleevd at Rome that he did but dissemble his Religion to obtaine the Crowne of England: That now he had maturely considered the penury and calamities of the Roman Catholiques, who were in the number of his faithfull Subjects, and was resolved to relieve them; and therefore did from thenceforth take all his Roman Catholike Subjects into his protection, permitting them the liberty and intire exercise of their Religion, and liberty to celebrate the masse, with other divine offices of their Religion without any inquisition, processe, or molestation from that day forwards; and likewise will and ordaine that they shall be restored to all their estates, lands, fees & seignories and re-established in them; commanding all his Magistrates, Iustices, and other Officers whatsoever in this behalfe to hold their hands; and for what cause soever it be, not to attempt hereafter, to grieve or molest the said Catholiques, neither in publique nor private, in the liberty of the exercise of their Religion, upon paine of being reputed guilty of high treason, and disturbers of the Kingdoms peace and repose; this being his will and definitive sentence.

But notwithstanding all these compliances and favours to the Roman Catholiques, those crafty Machiavillians had a further deeper plot, both upon King James, the Prince, the old and young Prince Palatine, and Protestant Religion, which they must effect by delays; namely to betray the Prince into the Spaniards power, by engaging him in a private journey into Spaine, upon pretence to expedite the Match; and thereby force or flattery to pervert him in his Religion, and induce him publicly to profess himselfe a Roman Catholique, and likewise to put the young Prince Palatine into the Empe-

Emperours hands, under pretext of a match with his Daughter, and to traine him up in his Court in the popish Religion, and by this hellish policy to scruce up King James, and the old Prince Palatine to whatever conditions the Pope, Spaniard or Emperour should propose unto them, for the advancement of Popery or of their owne temporall greatnesse.

In pursuance of this infernall design, the ^(a) Prince and the Marquesse of Buckingham accompanied with *Cottington* and *Porter* on the 17. day of Febr. 1622. departe privately from the Court disguised to *Dover*, and posted through *France* into *Spaine*: to what desperate purposes and by whose procurement, these ensuing Articles of the Earle of *Bristol* exhibited to the Lords against the Duke of *Buckingham* (whom he accused of high-treason upon them in open Parliament) May 1. 1626. with the crosse Articles exhibited against the Earle of *Bristol* in Parliament, by Sir *Robert Heath* the Kings Attourney generall, by his Majesties Speciall command, May 6. 1626. (both of which you may find recorded in the Lords Parchment Journall of that Parliament) will most cleerly discover to all the world, to the deserved infamy of these detestable Projectors.

(a) *Mercurio Francius*, Tom. 9. p. 471, 472, &c. The Breviate of the Arch. bishops life, pag. 3

Articles of the Earle of Bristol, wherewith he chargeith the Duke of Buckingham, May 1. 1626.

THat the Duke of *Buckingham* did secretly combine and conspire with *Conde Gondomar*, Ambassadour for the King of *Spaine*, before the said last Ambassadours returne into *Spaine* in the Summer 1622. to carry his Majesty (the Prince) into *Spaine*, to the end, that he might be informed and instructed in the Roman Religion, and thereby have have perverted the Prince, and subverted the true Religion established in *England*: from which misery this Kingdome, next under Gods mercy, hath by the wise, religious and constant carriage of his Majesty, been almost miraculously delivered, considering the many bold and subtle attempts of the said Duke in that kind.

1. NOTE.

That Master *Porter* was made acquainted therewith, and sent into *Spaine*, and such Message at his returne framed, as might serve for a ground to set on foot this conspiracy; the wick was done accordingly, and thereby the King and Prince highly abused, and thereby their consents first gotten to the said journey (that is to say) after the returne of Master *Porter*, which was about the end of *December* 1622. whereas the said Duke had plotted it many moneths before.

2.

That the Duke at his arrivall in *Spaine* nourished the Spanish Ministers, not onely in the belief of his owne being popishly affected, but did both by absenting himselfe from all exercises of Religion constantly used in the Earle of *Bristol*s house and frequented by all other Protestants English, and by conforming himselfe to please the Spaniard to divers rites of their Religion (even so farre as to kneele and adore their Sacrament from time to time) gave the Spaniard hope of the Princes conversion; the which conversion he endeavoure to procure by all meanes possible, and thereby caused the Spanish Ministers to propound farre worse conditions for Religion, then had been formerly by the Earle of *Bristol* and Sir *Walter Aston* settled, and signed under his Majesties hand, with a clause in the King of *Spaines* answer of the 12. of *December* 1622. that they held the Articles agreed upon sufficient, and such as ought to induce the Pope to the granting of the Dispensation.

3. NOTE.

That the Duke having severall times in the presence of the Earle of *Bristol*, moved his late Majesty at the instance of the *Conde Gondomar*, to write a Letter to the Pope, and to that purpose having once brought a Letter ready drawne, wherewith the Earle of *Bristol* being by his Majesty made acquainted, did so strongly oppose the writing of any such Letter, that during the abode of the said Earle of *Bristol* in *England*, the said Duke could not obtaine it: Yet not long after the said Earle was gone, he procured such a Letter to be written from his late Majesty unto the Pope, and have him sealed therein *Sanctissime Pater*.

4.

That the Pope being informed of the Duke of *Buckingham* his inclination and intention

5.

NOTE. tention in point of Religion, sent unto the said Duke a particular Bull in Parchment for to perswade and encourage him in the perversion of his Majesty then Prince, &c.

12.

That the Earle of *Bristol* did reveale unto his Majesty, both by word and Letter, in what sort the Duke had deceived him and abused his trust, and that the King by severall wayes sent him word, that he should rest assured that he would heare him, but that he should leave it to him to take his owne time; and thereupon few dayes before his sicknesse he sent the Earle word, that he would heare him against the Duke, as well as he had heard the Duke against him, which the Duke himsefe heard; and not long after, his blessed Majesty sickned and dyed, having in the interim been much vexed and pressed by the said Duke.

All these Articles with six others of like nature, the Earle of *Bristol* preferred to make good against the Duke by Letters and Witnesses; but the Duke by his overruling potency and instruments (whereof *Bishop Laud* was chiefe) dissolved the Parliament before any answer given to them.

The Articles exhibited to the House of Peeres against the Earle through the Dukes procurement, by way of recrimination, were many, I shall onely recite the most pertinent to the present businesse of Religion.

(b) In the
Lords Parchment Journall
May 6. 1626.
pag. 150, 151,
152, &c.

(b) Articles of severall High-treasons & other great and enormous Crimes Offences and Contempts, committed by *John Earle of Bristol*, against Our late Sovereigne Lord King *James* of blessed memory deceased, and Our Sovereigne Lord the Kings Majesty which now is, wherewith the said Earle is charged by his Maiesties Attourney generall on his Majesties behalfe, in the most high and honourable Court of Parliament, before the King and his Lords,

5.

THAT the said Earle from the beginning of his Negotiation, and the whole managing thereof by him, during his ambassage into *Spaine*, he the said Earle contrary to his faith and duty to God, the true Religion professed by the Church of *England* and the peace of this Church and State, did intend and resolve, that if the said marriage so treated of as aforesaid, should by his ministry be effected that thereby the Romish Religion and the professors thereof should be advanced within this Realme, and other his Majesties Realmes and Dominions, and the true Religion and the professors thereof discouraged and discontenanced: And to that end and purpose the said Earle, during the time aforesaid by Letters unto his late Majesty and otherwise, often counselled and perswaded the said late Kings Majesty, to set at liberty the Jesuits, and Priests of the Roman Religion, which according to the good, religious and politicke Lawes of this Realme were imprisoned or restrained, and to grant and allow unto the Papists and professors of the Romish Religion a free toleration, and silencing of the lawes made and standing in force against them.

NOTE.

7.

NOTE.

That at the Princes comming into *Spain*, during the time aforesaid, the said Earle of *Bristol*, cunningly falsely, and traiterously moved and perswaded the Prince (being then in the power of a forreigne King of the Romish Religion) to change his Religion; which was done in this manner: At the Princes first comming to the said Earle, he asked the Prince, for what he came thither? The Prince at first not conceiving the Earles meaning answered, you know as well as I: the Earle replied, Sir, servants can never serve their Master industriously, although they may doe it faithfully, unless they know their meanings fully; give me leave therefore to tell you what they say in the Towne, is the cause of your comming, THAT YOU MEANE TO CHANGE YOUR RELIGION, AND TO DECLARE IT HERE: and yet cunningly to disguise it, the Earle added further; Sir, I doe not speake this that I will perswade you to doe it, or that I will promise you that I will follow your example; though you will doe it, but as your faithfull servants, if you will trust me with so great a secret, I will endeavour to carry it the discrettest way I can. The Prince being moved with this unexpected motion, againe said unto him; I wonder what you have ever found in me, that you should conceive I would be so base or unworthy, as for a Wife to change

change my Religion? The said Earle replying, desired the Prince to pardon him, if he had offended him, it was but out of his desire to serve him: which perswasion of the said Earle was the more dangerous, because the more subtrill: Whereas it had beene the duty of a faithfull servant, to God and his Matter, if he had found the Prince ttaggering in his Religion to have prevented so great an Error, and to have perswaded against it, so to have avoyded the dangerous consequences thereof, to the true Religion and to this State, if such a thing should have happened.

8. That afterward during the Princes being in Spaine, the said Earle having conference with the said Prince about the *Romish Religion*, he endeavoured falsely and traitterously to perswade the Prince to change his Religion as aforesaid, **AND BECOME A ROMISH CATHOLIKE**, and to Become **OBEDIENT TO THE VSRPED AVTHORITY OF THE POPE OF ROME**: And to that end and purpose the said Earle traitterously used these words unto the said Prince; *That the State of England did never any great thing, but when they were under the obedience of the Pope of Rome, and that it was impossible they could doe any thing of note otherwise.*

NOTE.

9. That during the time of the Princes being in Spaine as aforesaid, the Prince consulting, and advising with the said Earle and others, about a new offer made by the King of Spaine touching the *Palatinate*, which was, that the eldest Son of the Prince Palatine, should marry with the Emperours Daughter, but must be bread up in the Emperours Court: The said Earle delivered his opinion, that the Proposition was reasonable; whereat when Sir *Walter Ashon* then present falling into some passion said; that he durst not for his head consent unto it: The Earle of Brittolle replied, that hee saw no such great inconvenience in it, for that he might be there bred up in the Emperours Court in our Religion. But when the extreame danger, and in a manner the impossibility thereof was pressed unto the said Earle, he said againe, *That without some such great action the peace of Christerdome would never be had.* Which was so dangerous and desperate a counsell that one so neare to the Crowne of England should be poisoned in his Religion, and put into the power of a Foraigne Prince, Enemy to our Religion, and an unreind to our State, that the consequence thereof both for the present and future times were infinitely dangerous, and yet hereunto did his disaffection to our Religion, the blindness in his judgment, caused by sinister respects, and the too much regard he had to the House of *Austria*, lead him, &c. *Ro. Heath*

These Articles were exhibited against the Earle by the Kings owne speciall direction, and perused, corrected by him before they were put in, as appears by the *Lords Journall*, the Kings Atturney averring it openly in the House of Peers. It seems therefore a great Wonder to many observing men, that he who was thus impeached by his Majesties speciall command, as the wort of Councillors, and a strong perswader of him to become a professed Roman Catholik, an advancer of Popery and Papists then, should become his principle Cabinet Councillor to advise him to side with the Popish patty in *England, Ireland, Scotland*, against his Parliament, and Protestant subjects, now.

But to pretermit his present Councillors, which seeme to justifie the former Articles, the Earle of *Bristol* himselfe in his answer* to the 7th. Article confesseth, that there was a generall received opinion in the Spanish Court, that his Majesties comming thither was with intention to become a Roman Catholike, and that the Conde *Gundimar*, that very morning pressed the Earle, not to hinder so pious a worke (for so he termed it) of his Majesties conversion, & seemed to be assured of the Duke of *Buckingham*s assistance therein: whereupon he told his Majesty; That the Generall opinion in that Court was, that his Majesties comming thither was, **WITH INTENTION TO BE A ROMAN CATHOLIKE AND THERE TO DECLARE IT**, &c. Whereupon he intreated him not to suffer his businesse to be overthrowne by permitting that conceit of his conversion any longer to remaine with the Spaniards, nor to do any thing that might give them hope therein; alleaging, that it was impossible the Mariage could be without a dispensation. And so long as the Spaniard,

* In the
Lords Parchment Journall
P. 249. &c.

who were to procure the dispensation, should have hope of his Majesties conversion, they would rather clogge the Dispensation then hasten it, for whiles they should have hope of all by his conversion, they would never content themselves with a part, so which they were tyed by the Articles agreed upon; At which time his Majesty was pleased to approve of his opinion, and said, he would expect the dispensatory, and did thereupon afterward send Master Andrews to Rome to hasten it.

By all these Articles and passages, it is most perspicuous, that there was a professed designe in the Duke of Buckingham, the Earle of Bristol, Secretary Calvert, Cottington, Porter, Gage, and other instruments, who contrived the Princes dangerous Journey into Spaine, to pervert the Prince in his Religion, to make him and all his Children professed Roman Catholikes, and the Prince Palatine too, and by this meanes to set up Popery in their Dominions, to suppress the Protestant Religion, and Professors of it in all places, that so the Pope might become Lord Paramount over them and all their Subjects, and they his sworne Vassalls. How far the Archbishop was privy and assistant to this designe, you may partly read in the *Breviat of his life*, P. 3. 14. and shall heare more hereafter in its proper place.

What the aymes of the Pope and Spaniard were in contriving the Princes progresse into Spaine, appeares, First, by the forementioned common report in the Spanish Court, that it was to become a professed Roman Catholike, &c.

Secondly by this notable Letter of the Pope to the Bishop of Conchen (one Coppy whereof I found in the Archbishop of Canterburies Study, indorsed with his owne hand, and another among Secretary Windebankes and the Lord Cottingtons sequestred Papers) exhorting him to take this happy opportunity, to convert, subiect and reconcile the Prince and his Dominions to the Sea of Rome.

Greg. P p: 15^{us}.

*Venerabili Fratri Episcopo Conchen in Hispaniarum
Regnis Inquisitori generali.*

Venerabile Frater, salutem et Apostolicam benedictionem, Orthodoxæ Religionis, tutelam feliciter existimamus, in amplissimis Hispaniæ Regnis commendatam esse Fraternitati tuæ: scimus enim quàm vigilanter excubans in illustri ista statione, Caveas ne illa impiorum Dogmatum monstra in ecclesiastica vinea sepes irrepant. Verum occasia tibi hoc tempore divinitus oblata est, per quam pietatis tuæ beneficia è regnorum istarum finibus educere, et ad exterarum Nationes proferre possis. Accepimus istuc nuper apulisse Walliæ Principem, Britanniæ Regis filium, spe ductum Catholici Matrimonij. Cupimus eum non frustra commorari in illorum Regum adibus, quibus illustre Catholici Cognomentum, Pontificæ Authoritatis defensio, et Religionis proferenda studium peperit. Quare, Apostolicis litteris hortamur Catholicam Majtatem, ut eum Principem redigere suaviter conetur sub Romanæ Ecclesiæ ditionem, cui veteres magnæ Britanniæ Domini, Coronatum Caput, et Imperij fasces (Cælo plaudente) submiserunt. Ad hanc autem victoriam comparandam, quæ vultis æternos celestis beatitudinis pollicetur triumphos atque principatus, non Regalis Aerij viscera exhaurienda, non servientium militum legiones conscribenda sunt, sed Arma lucis è Cælo petenda, quæ divini luminis splendore ejus Principis oculos alliciant, atque ex illius animo errores omnes mansuetudine profligent. In ijs vero tractandis, quæ sit vis, et ars Fraternitatis tuæ, jam pridem accepimus. Quare te monemus, ut ad Catholicum Regem Religiosus confiliarius accedas, easque rationes dispicias, quibus insigne aliquod beneficium Britanniæ Regnis, et Romanæ Ecclesiæ, in presenti rerum opportunitate comparetur. Res ipsa magna, atque gravissima est, quare eam verbis amplificare non debemus, Regnum Cælorum Britanniæ Principi patefacere, Regnum Britanniæ sedi Apostolicæ restituere incipiet, qui Regi iustus Adolescentis animum, Catholice Religionis studio inflamaverit, atque hæreticæ impietatis odio impleverit. In tanta Gloria possessionem

NOTE.

NOTE.

nomen dubitamus, ut gladio Charitatis armata pervenire capiet fraternitas tua, cum qua uberius hac de re differet, venerabilis frater, Innocentius Episcopus Britoniorum. Nuncius Apostolicus, cui fidem habere poteris, Nos autem accuratissimis precibus divina auxilia parere conabimur fraternitati tue, cui Apostolicam benedictionem peramanter impertimur. Dat. Roma apud S. Petrum sub Annulo Piscatoris. Die 19. Aprilis. 1633. Pontificatus Nostri Anno tertio.

Thirdly by this following Latine Oration of a Jesuite made to the Prince in Spaine to pervert him in his Religion, and reduce him and our Dominions into the bosome of the Roman Church, one copy whereof was found among Secretary Windebankes Writings.

SI quid mortalibus unquam oculis hilarem & gratum aperuit diem; Si quid peramantibus subditorum tuorum animis gaudium attulit, peperitque letitiam; Si quid salutem Patrie, felicitatem civium, securitatem imperij, Christiana Reipublica pacem & incolumitatem promisit nobis unquam, nobis unquam spondit (Clarissime et Serenissime Princeps) felicem profecto, Iam ad Hesperias oras accessum, felicem in Hispaniam adventum, novum utrumque & inauditum promississe, peperisse, attulisse fatemur. Aurea mihi optarem verba, auream Ciceronis Eloquentiam, os alterum Chrysostomi, Nazianzeni, animum ut eloquere, et patefacere tibi, quam in animis de te spem concepimus, quem in animis erga te amorem gerimus, quas ex intimis animis pro te preces ad Deum quotidie fundimus, quam libenter denique non unius alicujus, sed omnes omnium animas pro anime tua salute, pro sospitate Septri, pro presenti et futura, pro occidua hac aeterna tua felicitate, gloria & honore in hostias & holocausta damus, consecramus, devovemus. Ausim dicere (florentissime Princeps) neminem non dico Religiosum, Sacerdotem, Collegam aut Consodalem, sed nec Catholicum quidem existere, qui amplissimo Britania subiacet imperio, qui ut anime tuae servire, animam tuam beare possit, animam suam animo cupienti non perdat, vitam, inquam, ad pedes tuos non deponat, earumque lacerato corpore, confosso pectore, exhausto sanguine lubeus gaudensque non profundat. Sedet profecto, sedet (Clarissime Princeps) letissima facies tua, amabilis vultus, jucundissimus & humanissimus aspectus in omnium tuorum Civium et subditorum ore, oculis & animis, suavitatem tuam, humanitatem, moderationem, et benignitatem nemo est qui non miretur, & cum miratur, non admiretur, et admirando non veneretur. O felicem et fortunatam Britania magna Insulam, quae talem & tam illustrem procreasti Principem; Cujus splendoris immensitatem proprijs tuis metiri terminis ne cogites, major est quam ut tuis cingatur maxijs, aut qua Britannico tantum affulgeat hemisphærio. In exteras ecce se diffundit oras, in novos irrumpit horizontes, foris lucere, gaudet & effulgere, foris sua gloria ejaculari radios, qui quidem et si ad plenissimos fulgurantium Imperatorum accedant splendorcs, ea tamen luce, ea claritate coruscabunt, ut si pre modestia superare recusaverint, tamen, licet quantum velint dissimulaverint, non maximos fulgores assequi & adequare. Testes mihi. O Hispania Caesaris, tui Majestas angustissima, testes Heroum tuarum nobilitas lucidissima, testes Magistratuum gravitas, concursus cujus, Plebis universus applausus, quiquidem iisdem te (Prelucensissimus Princeps) quibus proprium et potentissimum Monarcham suam obsequijs, Officijs, honoribus prosequuntur. Sed quid? Annon citius tanta et anima carentia gloriam et fulgorem tuum persentiscere videntur? Admove, si lubet, oculos, adverte compita, plateas circumspice, universum Madritum diligentius intueere; agrosce profecto non exiguo perfundi gaudio non mediocriter letari, quod honoris & glorie tue effectum sit Theatrum, quod Te presente Te coruscante inivat, resplendat, fulgeat, frequentetur. Et si Augustam Philippi Basilicam attentius contemp'ris, gloriari quodammodo et super te dixeris, quod duorum incipiat Principum esse Regia, quæ unum semper hactenus non plures pariter agnovit Dominos. Sed quo me direxit oratio? quo me (Dij boni modo me a me ipso abri mi? Perdidisti me fateor, innumerosa exultantium in hac fascinavit me (ut ita loquar) insolita hilaritatis solemnitas. Sed da veniam perbeignissime Princeps) canam receptui: vertam jam tandem vela, & in proprium portum remeare conabor. Ad vallis eletanum contendo Collegium, ad divi Albani, primi Britannia Martyris Seminarium.

Salutârunt Te Cæsares, salutârunt Te Principes, salutârunt Te Heroes, salutârunt Te Consules, Prætores, Senatores, omnes adventum Tuum appropinquârunt, acclamârunt, honorârunt, imo quasi caluïs te missum receperunt. Et quid? An domus nostra vallis-olotana seminarium nostrum, Collegium nostrum, nostrum? quid dico? Domus, inquam, Tua, seminarium Tuum Tibi congratulari, manum Tuam sacram deosculari, animorum nostrorum gaudia, pectorum letitiam, jubiliū cordium explicare prætermittat? Procul hinc, procul ite profani, ne istam nobis appingite, inurite notam. Quod serò accessimus quod ultimi accessimus, qui primi fuisse debuimus, non officii fecit ignorantia, non affectus ignavia, non defectus voluntatis, aut desiderii tepiditas, verecunda, fateor & modesta reverentia præsumere nos vetuit ad Te (Princeps potentissime) ad Te, inquam, accedere, priusquam Celsitudinis Tue benevola & perbenigna gratia viam nobis sternere dignata fuerit, adiunq; reserare. Accipe igitur (Serenissime Princeps) accipe communem omnium letitiam, commune gaudium, gratulationem communem, acclamationem communem, accipe singulorum obsequium, singulorum amorem, pium & constantem singulorum affectum, omni qua possumus letitia, gaudio, congratulatione, acclamatione sospitem tuum & felicem congratulamur Tibi adventum, maximo, quo licet obsequio, amore, affectu omnia Tibi nostra & nosmetipsos tradimus. Siquid studia & lucubrationes nostra, si quid preces & vota, si quid ulla pietatis officia apud supremam Majestatem, immortalem Regem Regum, communem omnium Patrem ac Dominum valere possint & obtinere; hæc omnia & singula (auspiciatissime Princeps) observantissimis animis, devotissimis affectibus, venerabundis obsequiis ad lætas & Augustas Tuas fortunas, ad prosperos & felices auspitiū tuorum successus, ad beatas & optatas Tuorum amorum messes, ad salutem tuam immortalem, felicitatem perpetuam, immarcescibilem honorem dirigimus. Macte gloriā (invictissime Princeps) prospere procedas & regnes: Nescio enim profecto an gloriosius Tuo viderit unquam, universus orbis imperium. Relege, si libet, titulos, dignitatem agnosce. Quid Anglia? Primogenita Ecclesiæ, Dos Mariæ, Regnum Dei, quo ferax fructu? Qua sæcunda sobole? Duodeviginti Reges, Regina Duodeviginti, antegenitores Tui in cælestem Sanctorum senatum relati numerantur, & conscripti. Episcoporum sanctorum turba trigessimam supra centesimam transcendat numerum. Archimandritas & Carnobiarcho sexaginta octo in cives acceperunt cæli. Martyrum si palmas, si Confessorum numerarem coronas, nec lingua sane, nec latera suo satisfacerent officio. Sed eheu? quo jam exulat avita pietas? ubi jacet pia Religio? ubi delitescit religiosa pietas? Per Te (Serenissime Princeps) pro te & sub Te confidimus, & spiritum aliquando & sanguinem, & vitam, & patriam recipient [quæ---horum temporum improbitas exiliis punivit, & relegavit. In finem Tuum confugit labefacta Resp: dilacerata Patria; carceres & rapinas, mortes & exilia, passa & perpessa diu fides & Religio Catholica] * Tu nobis a Deo datus, Tu nobis natus (dulcissime Princeps) ad patriam nostram sublevandam, ad pacem & pietatem restaurandam, ad imperium Christi dilatandum, ad Regiam progeniem amplissima serie propagandam, ad mundum universum felicibus Tuis Hymenais perbeandum. Vive igitur (Augusta Cæsarum Prosapia) vive, & vive ad Nestoris annos, Regia Tua gaude, & triumphare compare.

NOTA.

NOTA.

Fourthly by the Popes owne Letter to the Prince during his residence in Spaine, and the Princes answer thereunto, printed in diverse languages and Authors, which I * shall here once more present unto you onely in English, truly translated out of the French Copie.

* Mercure
Francois. Tom.
9. Anno 1623.
p. 509. 510.
&c.

The Popes Letter to the King when Prince of Wales, and in Spain.

Most noble PRINCE, health and light of the divine grace: Forasmuch as great Britaine hath alwayes beene fruitfull in Vertues, and in men of great worth, having filled the one and the other world with the glory of her renowne; Shee doth also very often draw the thoughts of the holy Apostolicall Chaire, to the consideration of her praises. And indeed the Church was but then in her infancy, when the King of Kings did chuse her for his inheritance, and

and so affectionately, that we beleeve the Romane Eagles have hardly out-passed the Banner of the Crosse. Besides that many of her Kings, instructed in the knowledge of the true salvation, have preferred the *Crosse* before the royall *Scepter*, and the discipline of Religion before coverousnesse, leaving examples of piety to other Nations, and to the ages yet to come. So that having merited the Principalities and first places of blessednesse in heaven, they have obtained on earth the triumphant ornaments of holinesse. And although now the state of the English Church is altered, we see neverthelesse the Court of great *Britaine*, adorned and furnished with morall Virtues, which might serve to support the charity that we beare unto her, and be an ornament to the name of Christianity, if withall she could have for her defence and protection the orthodox and catholike truth; Therefore by how much the more the Glory of your most noble Father, and the apprehension of your Royall inclination delights us, with so much more zeale we desire that the gates of the kingdome of Heaven might be opened unto you, and that you might purchase to your selfe the love of the universall Church. Moreover, it being certain that *Gregory* the great, of most blessed memory, hath introduced to the English people, and taught to their Kings the Law of the Gospel, and the respect of Apostolicall authority, We, as inferiour to him in holinesse and virtue, but equall in name and degree of dignity, it is very reasonable that we, following his blessed foot-steps, should endeavour the salvation of those Provinces, especially at this time, when *Note.* your designe (most noble Prince) elevates us to the hope of an extraordinary advantage: Therefore as you have directed your journey to *Spain*, towards the catholike King, with desire to ally your selfe to the house of *Austria*, we doe commend your designe, and indeed doe testifie openly in this present businesse, that you are he that takes principall care of our Prelacy. For seeing that you desire to take in marriage the daughter of *Spain*, from thence we may easily conjecture that the ancient seeds of Christian piety, which have so happily flourished in the hearts of the Kings of great *Britaine*, may (God prospering them) revive againe in your soule. And indeed it is not to be beleeved, that the same man should love such an alliance, that hates the Catholike Religion, and should take delight to oppress the holy Chaire. *Note.* To that purpose we have commanded to make continually most humble prayers to the Father of lights, that he would be pleased to put you as a faire flower of Christendome, and the onely hope of great *Britaine*, in possession of that most noble heritage, that your Ancestors have purchased for you, to defend the authority of the Sovereigne High-Priest, and to fight against the monsters of heresie. Remember the dayes of old, enquire of your Fathers, and they will tell you the way that leads to heaven, and what way the temporall Princes have taken to attaine to the everlasting Kingdom: Behold the gates of heaven opened, the most holy Kings of *England*, who came from *England* to *Rome* accompanied with Angels, did come to honour and doe homage to the Lord of Lords, and to the Prince of the Apostles in the Apostolicall chaire; their actions and their examples being as so many voices of God, speaking and exhorting you to follow the course of the lives of those to whose Empire you shall one day attaine.

Is it possible that you can suffer that the Heretickes should hold them for impious, and condemne those whom the Faith of the Church testifies to reign in the heavens with Iesus Christ, and have command and authority over all Principalities and Empires of the Earth? Behold how they tender you the hand of this truly happy inheritance, to conduct you safe and sound to the Court of the Catholique King, and who desire to bring you back again into the lap of the Roman Church: Beseeching with *Note.* unpeakable sighs & groanes the God of all mercy for your Salvation, and do stretch out to you the Armes of the Apostolicall Charity, to imbrace you with all Christian affection; Even you that are her desired Sonne, in shewing you the happie hope of the Kingdome of Heaven. And indeed you cannot give a greater consolation to all the people *Note.* of the Christian Estates, then to put the Prince of the Apostles in possession of your most Noble Island, whose authority hath beene held so long in the Kingdome of

NOTE.

Britain, for the defence of Kingdomes, and for a devine Oracle; *the which will easely arrive, and that without difficulty, if you open your heart to the Lord that knocks, upon which depends all the happines of that Kingdome.* It is from this our great Charity that we cherish the praises of the Royall Name; and that which makes us desire that you and your Royall Father might be stiled with the names of Deliverers and Restorers of the ancient & paternall Religion of Great Britain. This is it we hope for, trusting in the goodnesse of God, in whose hands are the hearts of Kings, and who causeth the people of the Earth to receive healing, to whom we will alwayes labour with all our power to render you gracious and favourable; In the interim take notice by these Letters of the care of our Charity, which is none other then to procure your happinesse; and it will never grieve us to have written them if the reading of them stirre but the least sparke of the Catholique Faith in the heart of so great a Prince, whom we wish to be filled with long countinuanee of joy, and flourishing in the glory of all vertues.

*Given at Rome in the Pallace of S. Peter the
20. of Aprill, 1623. in the Third yeare of
our Popedome.*

The Prince of Wales having received this Letter, made this following answer, which was after published in print.

NOTE.

MOST Holy Father, I received the dispatch from your Holinesse with great content, and with that respect which the pietie and care wherewith your Holinesse writes, doth require: It was an unspeakeable pleasure to me to read the generous exploits of the Kings my Predetessours, to whose memory, posterity hath not given those praises and Elogies of honour, as were due to them: *I do beleve that your Holines hath set their examples before my eyes, to the end that I might imitate them in all my actions, for in truth they have often exposed their estates and lives for the exaltation of the holy Chaire; And the courage with which they have assaulted the enemies of the Crosse of Jesus Christ, hath not beene lesse than the care and thought which I have, to the end that the peace and Intelligence which hath hitherto been wanting in Christendome, might be bound with the bond of a true concord: for like as the common Enemy of peace, watcheth alwayes to put hatred and dissention betweene the Christian Princes, so I believe that the glory of God requires that we should endeavour to unite them; And I doe not esteeme it a greater honour to be discerned from so great Princes, than to imitate them in the zeale of their pietie. In which it helps me very much to have knowne the mind and will of our thrice honoured Lord and Father, & the holy intentions of his Catholike Majestie to give a happie concurrence to so laudable a designe: For it grieves him extreemely to see the great evill that grows from the diviſion of Christian Princes, which the wisdom of Your Holinesse foresaw, when it judged the Marriage which you pleased to designe, betweene the Infanta of Spaine and my selfe, to be necessary to procure so great a good; for 'tis verycertaine, that I shall never be so extreemely affectionate to any thing in the world as to endeavour allyance with a Prince that hath the same apprehension of the true Religion with my selfe: Therefore, I intreate Your Holinesse to beleve, that I have been alwayes very far from encouraging Novelties, or to be a partisan of any Faction against the Catholick, Apostolike Roman Religion: But on the contrary, I have sought all occasions to take away the suspition that might rest upon me, and that I will imploy my selfe for the time to come, to have but one Religion and one Faith, seeing that we all beleve in one Jesus Christ. Having resolved in my selfe, to spare nothing that I have in the world, and to suffer all manner of discommodities, even to the hazarding of my estate and life, for a thing so pleasing unto God:*

NOTE.

It

It rests only that I thank Your Holinesse, for the permission which you have been pleased to afford me, & that I pray God to give you a blessed health, and his glory, after so much trouble which Your Holinesse takes within his Church. Signed,

CHARLES STEWARD.

Fiftly by dedicating and writing Bookes unto his Highnesse, to seduce him to the Romish Religion, by inviting him to behold their *solmne Processions*, to induce him to reverence and adore their *ambularitie Hostia* or Breaden God, carying him to their most religious places, persons (famous for pretended miracles) especially to the holy Nunne of Carion, to whom the Popes Nuncio sent a speciall dispensation, to entertaine the Prince, and to discourse with him, as a thing necessary for the good of the Catholike Church.

* Mercure
Francois, Tom.
9. Anno 1623.
p. to 539. 535
to 539. 562.

Sixtly by presenting him with Popish Pictures, as *with the beautifull Pictures of our Lady, of Saint Joseph and of sweet Iesus*, to omit all other Artifices.

Some Months after the Princes arrivall in Spaine, the long expected dispensation for the marriage came from Pope Gregory the 15. to the Spanish Court, before which time the Prince was not admitted to speake with the Infanta in quality of a Suiter, but of a Prince: * but it came clogged with an unhappie unexpected clause, thrust in of purpose to retard the proceedings: Namely, *That whereas there were certaine Articles* condescended to by King James, in favour of the Roman Catholikes in England, and other his Majesties dominions the Pope demanded caution from the King and Prince for performance of them, before the Marriage consummate: To which the King answered; *That he could give no other caution but his owne, and the Princes Royall words and Oaths, confirmed by his Councell of State, and exemplified under the great Seale of England*: which security was tendered; but this would not satisfie, unlesse some Sovereaign Catholique Prince would ingage himselfe for them. Thereupon all matters were like to goe off the hinges; and a bruit went abroad, that the Prince intended to get away covertly: At last Conde Olivares propounded three wayes of accommodation; *The first was, that Prince Charles should become a Papist. The second, that the Infanta should be delivered to him upon the former security, without further condition. The third was, to binde him as fast as they could, and not trust him with any thing.*

* The Vocall
Forrest.
p. 125. 126.
127. Mercure
Francois.

Whiles matters were thus canvasing and gathering ill bloud; the King of Spaine profered to engage himselfe by Oath for the Kings and Princes performance of the Articles, to satisfie the Pope, provided he must first consult with his Ghostly Fathers, whether he might doe it with safe Conscience, or no.

Whereupon the businesse was referred to a Committee of Learned Divines; *Whether the King of Spaine might with safety of Conscience take an Oath in the behalfe of the King of England, and Prince Charles, for performance of such and such Articles as were in favour of the Papists throughout the Kings Dminions?* who after a long demurre and protraction of time, concluded at last affirmatively, *that he might: and in case they faild to execute what was Capitulated, the King of Spaine was to vindicate his Oath, and right himselfe by the sword.*

While things were thus agitating in Spaine, diverse well affected persons stilly opposed the match in England, and writ against it; Among others * Doctor George Abbott Archbishop of Canterbury made this Remonstrance to His Majestie against the match, and toleration indulged to the Roman Catholiks, one transcript whereof was among Wendebanks Papers, agreeing with that recorded in the French Mercurie.

* Mercurio
Francois, Tom.
9. p. 497. 505.

May it please your Majestie,

I Have beene too long silent, and am affraid by my silence, I have neglected the duty of the place, it hath pleased God to call me unto, and your Majestie to place me in. And now I humbly crave leave, I may discharge my Conscience toward God, and my duty toward Your Majestie. And therefore I beseech you (Sir) to give me leave freely to deliver my selfe, and then let Your Majesty doe what you please with me. Your Majestie hath propounded a toleration of Religion: I beseech you (Sir)

take

take it into your consideration, what your Act is, what the consequence may be. By Your Act you labour to set up that most damnable and hereticall doctrine of the Church of Rome, the Whore of Babylon. How hatefull will it be to God, and grievous unto your good Subjects, the true professors of the Gospell, that your Majesty who hath often disputed and learnedly written against those wicked heresies, should now shew your selfe a Patron of those doctrines which your penne hath told the world, and your Conscience tells your selfe, are superstitious, idolatrous, and detestable. Adde hereunto, what you have done in sending the Prince into Spaine without the consent of your Counsell, the privitie and approbation of your people. And though you have a larger interest in the Prince, as the Sonne of your flesh, yet have the people a greater, as the Sonne of the Kingdome, upon whom next after Your Majestie, their eyes are fixed, and welfare depends. And so tenderly is this going apprehended, as believe it (Sir) howsoever his returne may be safe, yet the drawers of him to that action so dangerous to himselfe, so desperate to the Kingdome, will not passe away unquestioned, unpunished. Besides, this toleration which you endeavour to set up by your Proclamation, it cannot be done without a Parliament, unlesse Your Majestie will let your subjects see, that you will take unto your selfe a liberty to throw downe the Lawes of the Land at your pleasure. What dreadfull consequence (Sir) these things may draw after, I beseech Your MAJESTIE to consider, and above all, least by this tolleration & discontinuance of the true profession of the Gospell, wherewith God hath blessed us, and under which this Kingdome hath these many yeares flourished, Your Majestie doe not draw upon the Kingdome in Generall, and your selfe in particular, Gods heavie wrath and indignation: Thus in discharge of my duty toward God, to Your Majestie, and the place of my calling, I have taken humble boldnesse, to deliver my Conscience. And now (Sir) doe with me what you please.

This Remonstrance of his was seconded by *Vox Populi*, Doctor Hackwell and others; But all in vaine, the King being so resolutely bent upon it, that hee would permit none to contradict it, and * committed the Earle of Oxford prisoner to the Tower, for some speeches against it.

* *Mercurio*
Francois. Tom.
9. 1624. p. 29.

* *Mercurio*
Francois. Anno
1623. p. 522.
523.

* *Tom. 9. An.*
1624. p. 11.
28.

At last the difficulties in Spaine and Rome being surmounted, and the Pope satisfied by the King of Spaines engagement for the performance of the Articles, and Propositions * (for the Right, augmentation, and Weale of the Roman Catholike Religion: as the Cardinalls for the propagation of the Faith, stiled them) there was exceeding great joy, and all the Capitulations were thereupon soone after engrossed, sealed, subscribed, and solemnly sworne to by both the Kings, the Prince, and Privie Councell: the Copie of which Articles both concerning the Infanta, her family, and the Papists in generall, I shall here insert in Latine, as I find them printed in the * *French Mercury*, and in written Copies belonging to the Lord Cottington and Secretary Windebancke agreeing with it.

NO S Iacobus, Dei Gratia, Angliæ, Scotiæ, Galliæ, Hiberniæ &c. Rex: Relatione atque notitia hujus Instrumenti atque scripturae Obligationis, Approbationis, Confirmationis, Ratificationis et novi contractus, atque ad perpetuam ejus memoriam, Notum facimus, et manifestum omnibus Regibus, Principibus, Potentatibus, Rebus publicis, Communitatibus Universitatibus, et Privatis Personis cujuscunque status et conditionis sint et in futurum fuerint. Quemadmodum ad gloriam et honorem Dei cum maxime optaremus, ut novis strictioribusque Amicitie nexibus consanguinitatis et affinitatis vincula quæ Nos et serenissimum Carolum Walliæ Principem, nostrum charissimum atque amantissimum Filium Unicum, cum Serenissimo Principe Philippo quarto Catholico, Hispaniæ, Neapolis, Sicilia, Hierusalem, Indiarum Orientalium et Occidentalium, Insularum et continentis Maris Oceani Rege, Archiduci, Austria conjungunt, constringantur arctius, et confirmantur, atque ut in Nobis, Successoribusque Nostris fraternitatis concordia, et inter utramque Coronam mutua Benevolentia ad majus utriusque bonum et felicitatem concilietur, stabiliatur atque permaneat. Actum est, et agitur de Matrimonio contrahendo inter

inter predictum Serenissimum Walliæ Principem, & Serenissimam Infantem Mariam, Catholicam Serenitatis sororem. Ad cuius rei tractatum & conclusionem, predictum Serenissimum Principem filium Nostrum, ad Regem Hispaniarum & Regiam missimus, ubi nunc reperitur. Inter quem, pro Se & pro Nobis & Nostro nomine, una cum Georgio Vilerio Buckinghamiæ Duce, Maris Anglicani Præsente, Garterij ordinis periscelidi insigni, a Concilio Nostri status, & Nostri Equitis Præpositum etiam Joanne Digbeio Bristoliæ Comice, Vice-camerario Hospitij Nostri & Nostri status conciliario, & Gualtero Alstone. Nostri apud Catholicam Serenitatem Oratoribus, ordinario & extraordinario, Francisco adhuc Corintone Barinnetto, præfati Filii Nostri Secretario; ut virtute præscripti atque Instructionis quam a nobis habuerunt & habent, ut omnibus necessariis ad dictum Matrimonium tractandum & conficiendum intersint. Et ex altera parte, inter Serenitatem Catholicam, pro se, ac tanquam fratre & legitimo administratore prædictæ Serenissimæ Infantis Mariæ, & de ejusdem voluntate et consensu, Commissionarios etiam ad id ipsam designatos. Joannem Mendozium & Lunam. Marchionem Montium Clarorum, & Castellum Barbelle Marchionem, a consiliis status & Belli Serenitatis Catholicæ. & Didacum Sarmiento de Acuna Comitem Condomarij a prædictis consiliis, unacum Joanne de Cirica sanctioris Consilij Secretario, & Libere commendataria Præfectura insignito, Præmissi et præmissæ fuerunt, facultate et Dispensationibus sua Sanctitatis, & alijs quæ necessariæ requirabantur. Postquam magna & matura deliberatione, viro, citroque propter earationum momenta quæ retulimus, quæque hujus Matrimonij convenientia & commoda certo suadent, & ostendunt, & rem gravissimam disceptarunt. Hi omnis communi consensu atque iudicio in aliquot capitulationes, & conditiones, ad rem terminandam & absolvendam accommodata, quæ sic se habent, convenerunt.

1. Quod Matrimonium perficiendum est per Dispensationem Sanctissimi Domini Papæ, sed hæc per operam Catholici Regis habenda est.
2. Quod Matrimonium semel etiam celebrandum est in Hispania, & in Anglia ratificari debet in forma sequenti. Mane postquam Serenissima Domina Infans devotiones suas in capella absolverit; Ipsa & Serenissimus Princeps Carolus, in capella Regia, seu in aliqua Palatii Aula, ubi magis expedire visum fuerit, conveniant, ibique procuraciones omnes quarum virtute, Matrimonium in Hispania fuerit celebratum, legantur, et tam Serenissimus Princeps, quam Serenissima Infans, præfatum Matrimonium in Hispania celebratum, ratum habeant, cum omni solemnitate, ad hujusmodi actum necessaria, modo enim nulla Ceremonia seu res aliqua interveniat, qua Religioni NOTÆ Catholicæ Apostolicæ Romanæ contradicatur.
3. Quod Serenissima Infans, servos et familiam pro suo servitio convenientem secum deferat; quam familiam et personas omnes ad illam attinentes eliget et nominabit Catholica Serenitas, modo nullum servum nominaverit qui sit vassallus Regis magnæ Britannia sine sua voluntate et consensu.
4. Quod tam Serenissima Domina Infans quam servi et universa ejus familia habebunt liberum usum, et publicum exercitium Religionis Catholica in modo et forma, prout infra capitulatum est.
5. Quod habebit Oratorium et Capellam decentem in suo Palatio, ubi Missæ pro libito Serenissimæ Infantis celebrari possint, et similiter Londini, et ubicunque morabitur, Ecclesiam publicam et capacem habebit prope Palatium, ubi omnia officia solenniter celebrentur, cum cimiterio, et omnibus alijs necessariis pro publica verbi Dei predicatione, et omnium Sacramentorum Ecclesiæ Catholicæ Romanæ celebratione & Administratione; proque sepeliendis Mortuis & Baptizandis Parvulis: & quod præfatum Oratorium, Capella & Ecclesia cum tali decentia ornabuntur, quæ Ser. Infanti conveniens videbitur.
6. Quod servi & servæ Serenissimæ Infantis, & servi servorum, eorumque filij & descendentes, ac familiares omnes quomodocunque sue Celsitudini inservientes, valeant Catholici esse libere & publice.
7. Quod Serenissimæ Infantis servi & familiares prædicti valeant Catholici esse in forma sequenti.

8. Quod Serenissima Infans habeat in Palatio suum Oratorium & Capellam ita capacem ut Dicti servi & familiares (ut supra) possint intrare, & commorari in illa. In qua una sit porta publica & ordinaria pro illis, & altera interior per quam Serenissima Domina Infans habeat ingressum in dictam Capellam, ubi ipsa, & alij, ut supra, divinis officijs interesse possint.

9. Quod Oratorium, Capella & Ecclesia publica ornentur cum decenti ornatu Altarium & aliarum rerum quæ necessariae sunt pro cultu divino, qui in illis secundum ritum S. R. Eccl. celebrandus est, & quod dicti servis, & aliis (ut supra) licebit se conferre ad dictas Capellam & Ecclesiam omnibus horis prout illis videbitur.

10. Quod cura et custodia dictarum capella et Ecclesiarum erit penes eos qui deputabuntur a Serenissima Domina Infanti, cui licebit constituere custodes, ne quis possit intrare ad faciendum quid indecorum.

11. Quod ad administrandum Sacramenta, et serviendum in Capella et Ecclesia prædictis viginti quatuor Sacerdotes et Assistentes nominabuntur, qui per Hebdomadam aut menses, prout Ser. Infanti visum fuerit inservient, et eorum electio ad præfatam Serenissimum Regem Catholicum et Serenissimam Infantem attinebit, modo non sint vassalli Regis magnæ Britanniarum, aut si fuerint, ejus voluntas et consensus præcedat.

12. Quod sit unus Minister in ordine Episcopali constitutus superior, cum autoritate necessaria, ad omnes casus qui acciderint spectantes ad Religionem; et Episcopo deficiente illius Vicarius eandem habeat auctoritatem et Jurisdictionem.

13. Quod iste Episcopus et Minister superior poterit corrigere, emendare et castigare Catholicos qui deliquerint, et in illis omnem Jurisdictionem Ecclesiasticam exercere; et ultra hoc, poterit etiam Serenissima Infans illos de servitio suo abdicare quando illi visum fuerit.

14. Quod dictus Superior in ordine Episcopali constitutus, vel ejus Vicarius, poterit servos et alios (ut supra) Ecclesiasticos punire juxta leges et pœnas ecclesiasticas, et illos etiam Serenissima Domina Infans a suo servitio abdicare.

15. Quod licebit Serenissimæ Domine Infanti et servis (ut supra) adquirere Romæ Dispensationes, Indulgentias, Jubileos, et omnes gratias quæ videbuntur Religioni et conscientijs suis competere, et undecunque libros quoslibet Catholicos sibi comparare.

NOTE.

16. Quod servi et familiares Serenissimæ Domine Infantis qui in Angliam migrabunt, suscipient iuramentum fidelitatis Regi magnæ Britanniarum, modo nulla sit clausula neque verbum quod contradicat Religioni Romanæ, et conscientijs Catholicorum, et si forte sint vassalli Regis magnæ Britanniarum, idem iuramentum suscipient quod Hispani, utriusque in sequenti forma.

Ego N. juro et promitto fidelitatem Serenissimo Jacobo magnæ Britanniarum Regi, et Serenissimo Carolo Principi Walliæ, et Mariæ Hispaniarum Infanti, quam firmiter et fideliter observabo: et si quid contra personas, Honorem, et dignitatem Regiam præfatæ Regis et Principum, statumve et commune bonum Regnorum intentari cognovero, statim renunciabo dictis Domino Regi, et Principibus aut Ministris ad id constitutis.

NOTE.

17. Quod leges quæ sunt vel erunt in Anglia et aliis Regnis, spectantes ad Religionem, dictos servos, et alios (ut supra) laicos non attingent: qui tum legibus tum pœnis contra transgressores earum impositis erunt exempti. Et contra Ecclesiasticos solummodo eorum Superior ecclesiasticus Catholicus procedere valeat, prout apud Catholicos fieri consuevit: quod si Judex aliquis secularis, ecclesiasticum virum comprehenderit propter aliquod delictum, ad hoc enim faciet ut prædicto suo Superiori ecclesiastico statim tradat & remittat, qui contra illum juxta canones et regulas juris procedat.

18. Quod leges contra Catholicos latæ, vel ferendæ in Anglia et aliis Regnis Regis magnæ Britanniarum subiectis, non attingent liberos ex hoc Matrimonio oriundos, et libere jure successione in Regnis et Dominis Mag. Brit. fruantur.

19. Quod Nutrices quæ lactabunt liberos Ser. Dom. Infantis Catholicæ valeant esse, earumque electio ad præfatam Dominam Infantem spectet, siue sint ex natione, Anglicana, siue ex alia quacunque, prout Ser. Infanti placuerit, et familiæ suæ annuere-
rentur, ejusque privilegijs gaudeant et potiantur

20. Quod Episcopus, personæ ecclesiasticæ et religiosæ ex familia Dom. Infantis poterunt retinere

retinere vestitum et habitum suæ Dignitatis, professionis, Religionis more Romano.

21. Pro securitate quod dictum Matrimonium nullatenus aliqua ex causa dissolvatur, Rex Mag. Brit. et Carolus Princeps verbo Regis pariter et honore astringendi sunt, Prestabunt insuper quicquid a Rege Catholico propositum fuerit, si enim decenter et commode fieri possit.

22. Quod filij et filia qui ex hoc Matrimonio nascentur penes, Serenissimam Infantem, at minimum usque ad decennium educantur, et libere jure successionis in prædictis Regnis (ut dictum est) fruantur.

23. Quod quomodocumq; loci servorum et servarum, quos Serenissima Domina Infans secum attulerit, nominatos per Regem Catholicum fratrem suum, vacare contigerit, sive per mortem, sive per absentiam, sive ex aliqua alia causa seu accidenet, subrogentur per dictum Regem Catholicum omnes servi & familiares, ut supra.

24. Pro securitate quod totum ut capitulatum est compleatur: Rex mag. Brit. & serenissimus Carolus Pr. juramento obstringendi sunt, ut omnes Consiliarij Regis, tractatum Chyrogapho firmare debent: insuper quod prædicti Rex & Princeps, verbo Regis fidem daturi sunt, se facturos quod possibile est, ut omnia supra capitulata per Parliamentum stabiliantur.

25. Quod conformiter ad ea quæ tractata sunt, omnia ista proponenda & exponenda sunt **NOTE** Sanctissimo Domino Papæ, quatenus ea approbare, Apostolicamque Benedictionem, ac necessariam Dispensationem ad effectum Matrimonij concedere dignetur.

Nos tractatum prædictum ac omnia & singula capitulata in eodem contenta ac specificata rata & grata habentes, ea omnia & singula ex certa scientia Nostra quatenus Nos, Heredes, vel Successores Nostros concernunt, approbamus, laudamus, confirmamus, ac ratificamus: Et inviolabiliter, firmiter, bene & fideliter, tenere, observare, perimplere, tenerique, observari & perimpleri facere cum effectu, bona fide, in verbo Regis promittimus per presentes, omni exceptione, seu contradictione cessante: Eademque in præsentia illustrium & nobilium viro- rum Ioannis de Mendoza, & Caroli a Coloma serenissimi Regis Catholici Oratorum in curia Nostra residentium, sacrosanctis Evangelijis per nos tactis, iurejurando firmamus, non obstantibus quibuscunque opinionibus, sententiis aut legibus in contrarium. In quorum omnium & singulorum præmissorum fidem ac testimonium hisce Articulis manu Nostra subscriptis, magnum sigillam Nostrum apponi fecimus, presentibus Reverendissimo in Christo patre Georgio Archiepiscopo Cantuariensi totius Angliæ primati, Reverendissimo in Christo patre Ioanne Episcopo Lincolnensi, magni sigilli Angliæ custode, & prædictis consanguineis No- stris Lionello Comite Middlesexiæ, summo Thesaurario Nostræ Angliæ, Henrici Vi- ce-Comite de Maundevill in Consilio Nostræ status præsideme, Edvardo Comite Wigornien- si, privati sigilli Nostræ custode, Ludovico Duce Richmondie & Lenoxiæ, Hospitij Nostræ Seneschallo supremo, Jacobo Marchione Hamiltoniæ, Jacobo Comite Carlionensi, Thoma Comite de Kellij, Oliverio Vice comite Grandiflori, & Reverendissimo in Chri- sto patre Lanceloto Episcopo Wintoniensi, Sacelli Nostræ Regiæ Decano, & prædilectis, & fidelibus Nostris Georgio Barone Careffe de Cloptno rei Nostræ tormentariæ majoris in An- glia præfecto, Arthuro Barone Chichister de Belfort, Regni Nostræ Hiberniæ summo The- saurario, Thoma Edmonds milite, ejusdem Nostræ Hospitij Regiæ Thesaurario, Joanne Suckling Milite ejusdem Nostræ Hospitij Contrarotulatore, Georgio Calvert Milite uno e Secretariis Nostris primariis, Edvardo Conweij Milite altero e Secretariis Nostris primariis, Richardo Weston Milite, Scaetarij Nostræ Cancellario & sub Thesaurario, & Julio Casare Milite, Archiverum Nostrorum præfecto, omnibusque a Consilijs Nostris, Sanctioribus. Dat. apud Palatium Nostrum Westmonasterijs, 20. die Julij, Anno Regni Nostræ magnæ Britanniæ, &c. 21.

S. S. Jacobus Rex.

The solemnity observed in swearing these Articles of the Match in England by King James, you may read at large in the (a) French Mercury, who likewise informes us, (a) Tom. 9.^o That there arose these two difficulties between King James and the Spanish Ambassadors Anno 1624. about P. 9. to 28.

NOTE.

about the taking of this Oath. The first was about this title of the Pope, MOST HOLY; which King James refused to give (openly) to the Pope, in the Oath which he was to pronounce in the Chappell (at White hall) alleging the repugnancy thereof to his Religion, and that this would be a reproach, and by consequence prejudiciall to him for the future: but the Ambassadors refused to proceed further, if his Majesty would not consent to give him the foresaid title, to which at last he consented. The second difficulty was, that some reported to the Ambassadors that they should have such prayers in the Kings Chappell when they came to see the Articles sealed and sworn to by the King, and such singing as were used in the Protestant Church and Kings Chappell, at which prayers they could not be present, since they came thither to no other end; but to assure, maintaine and warrant the Catholique Apostollicall and Roman Church: whereupon the King commanded that nothing should be there sung but what was chaunted when the Constable of Castile tooke his Oath there, to sweare the peace between the two Crownes, which was an hymne of joy in praise of peace; and to our all scruple, the King caused the Register of his Chappell to carry the hymne to the Ambassadors to peruse, and so all difficulties were removed: the King yeelding to these Popish Ambassadors, to gratifie the Pope in his Antichristian title, but they not condescending one haire breadth to him in honour or approbation of our Prayers, Psalmes, or Protestant Religion, which must give place to their Catholique pleasures.

(a) Mercury
Francois,
Tom. 9. Anno
1624 p. 25, 26
27.

The Articles being solemnly sworne in the forenoone, the King made an extraordinary Feast to the Ambassadors: Which ended, the King and they went to the Councell Chamber, where all the Lords of the Councell sealed and subscribed the generall Articles of the Marriage; which done the Ambassadors came to the King, who tooke this solemn Oath, and swore these (a) private Articles to them in favour of Papists and advancement of the Romish Religion; which I shall here truly set downe both in Latin and English.

JACOBUS Dei gratia magna Britannia, &c. Rex, Fidei defensor, &c. Omnibus ad quas hoc presens scriptum pervenerit salutem. In quantum inter multa alia quae in tractatu de Matrimonio, inter Charissimum Filium Nostrum Carolum Walliae Principem, & Serenissimam Dominam Donnam Mariam, Serenissimi Principis & per-dilecti fratris nostri Philippi quarti Regis Hispaniarum Sororem continentur, conventum est, quod Nos juramento Nostro approbaremus, ratosque faceremus Articulos infra ad verbum expressos.

NOTE.

1. Quod nulla lex particularis contra Catholicos Romanos lata, sub qua alij Regnorum Nostrorum Vassalli non comprehenduntur, & ad cujus observationem omnes generaliter non obligantur, nec non leges generales sub quibus omnes ex aequo comprehenduntur, modo ejusmodi sint quae Religioni Romanae repugnent, ullo unquam tempore, ullo omnino modo, aut casu, directè, vel indirectè, quoad dictos Catholicos Romanos executioni mandabitur; & efficiemus ut Consiliarij nostri idem praestent juramentum, quantum ad illos pertinet, & spectat ad executionem quae per manus eo-

JAMES by the grace of God, of great Brittain. &c. King, defender of the Faith, &c. To all to whom this present Writing shall come, greeting. In as much as among many other things which are contained within the treaty of Marriage betweene Our most deare Sonne Charles Prince of Wales, and the most renowned Lady Donna Maria, Sister of the most renowned Prince and Our well-beloved Brother Phillip the fourth, King of Spaine; it is agreed, that We by Our Oath shall approve the Articles under expressed to a word.

1. That particular lawes made against Roman Catholiques, under which other vassals of Our Realmes are not comprehended, and to whose observation all generally are not obliged; as likewise general laws under which all are equally comprized, if so be they are such which are repugnant to the Romish Religion shall not at any time hereafter by any means or chance whatsoever directly, or indirectly, be commanded to be put in execution against the said Roman Catholiques; & We will cause that Our Counsell shall take the same Oath, as farre as it pertaines to

rum

rum & ministrorum suorum solet exerceri.

2. Quod nulle alie leges impofterum de integro ferentur contra dictos Catholicos Romano; sed toleratio perpetua exercij Religionis Catholica Romanae inter privatos parietes per omnia nostra Regna & Dominia quod intelligi volumus tam in Regnis nostris Scotiæ & Hiberniæ quam in Angliâ, ijs concedetur modo & forma prout capitulatum, declaratum & concessum est in Articulis tractatus de Matrimonio.

3. Quod nec per Nos, nec per aliam ullam interpositam personam directè vel indirectè, privatim vel publicè, rem ullam cum Serenissima Domina Infanta Donna Maria tractabimus, quæ repugnet Religioni Catholica Romanae: illique nequaquam persuadebimus, ut in substantia vel forma eadem unquam renunciet, aut delinquat, aut ut agat aliquid ijs quæ continentur in tractatu de Matrimonio repugnans aut contrarium.

4. Quod auctoritatem Nostram interponemus, faciemusque quantum in Nobis erit, Parliamentum omnes & singulos Articulos ratione hujus Matrimonij in favorem Catholicorum Romanorum inter Serenissimos Reges capitulatos approbet, confirmet, ratosque faciat, & ut dictum Parliamentum revocet abrogetque leges particulares contra dictos Catholicos Romanos latis, ad cujus observationem reliqui item subditi, & vassalli non obligantur, necnon leges etiam generales, sub quibus omnes ex æquo compræbentur, nimum quoad Catholicos Romanos, modo ejusmodi sint, uti dictum est, quæ Religioni Catholica Romanae repugnent, & quod impofterum non consentiemus ut dictum Parliamentum ullo unquam tempore alias de integro contra Catholicos Romanos sanciat aut conscribat,

Nos omnia & singula capitula præcedentiarata & grata habentes, ex certa scientia Nostra quatenus Nos, Hæredes vel Successores nostros concernunt approbamus, ra-

them and belongs to the execution, which by the hands of them and their Ministers is to be exercised.

2. That no other lawes shall hereafter be made anew against the said Roman Catholiques, but that there shall be a perpetuall toleration of the Roman Catholique Religion within private houses throughout all Our Realmes and Dominions, which We will have to be understood, as well of Our Kingdome of Scotland and Ireland, as in England, which shall be granted to them in manner and forme as is capitulated, decreed and granted in the Articles of the Treaty concerning the Marriage.

3. That neither by Us, nor by any other interposed person whatsoever, directly or indirectly, privately or publicly, will We treat (or attempt) any thing with the most Renowned Lady Infanta Donna Maria, which shall be repugnant to the Romish Catholique Religion, neither will We by any meanes persuade her that shee should ever renounce or relinquish the same in substance or forme, or that she should doe any thing repugnant or contrary to those things which are contained in the treaty of Matrimony.

4. That We will interpose Our authority, and will do as much as in Us shall lye, that the Parliament shall approve confirm and ratifie all and singular Articles in favour of the Roman Catholiques, capitulated between the most renowned Kings, by reason of this Marriage; and that the said Parliament shall revoke and abrogate the particular lawes made against the said Roman Catholiques, to whose observance also the rest of Our Subjects & Vassals are not obliged; as likewise the general lawes under which all are equally comprehended, to wit, as to the Roman Catholiques, if they be such as is aforesaid. which are repugnant to the Roman Catholique Religion: and that hereafter We will not consent, that the said Parliament should ever at any time enact or write any other new lawes against Roman Catholiques.

We accounting all and singular the preceding Articles, ratified and accepted, out of Our certaine knowledge, as farre as they concerne Vs, Our Heires or Successors.

tificamus, laudamus, & inviolabiliter, fir-
muer, bene, & fideliter tenere, observare,
& perimplere, tenerique, observari & per-
impleri facere cum effectu, bona fide, &
verbo Regio promittimus per presentes, om-
ni exceptione, seu contradictione cessante,
eademque sacris Evāgelis per Nos tactis
firmamus, non obstantibus quibuscunque,
opinionibus, sententiis, aut legibus in contra-
rium: in presentia illustrissimorum Domi-
norum D. Joannis de Mendoza Marchio-
nis de Inojosa, & D. Caroli Coloma Regis
Catholici Legatorum extraordinariorum,
Georgij Calvert Militis, unius Secreta-
riorum nostrorum (primariorum, Edwardi
Conway Militis alterius Secretariorum
nostrorum primariorum Francisci Cotting-
ton Baronetti, Filio nostro Principi a Secre-
tis, Francisci de Carondelet prothonotarii
Apostolici & Archidiaconi Cameracensi.
Dat in Palatio nostro Westmonasteriensi
20. die Julij, Anno Domini millesimo sex
centesimo vigesimo tertio, stilo Anglie.

Copia collata & vera.

Jacobus Rex.

cessors, approve, ratifie, applaud, and pro-
mise bona fide, and in the word of a King
by these presents, inviolably, firmly, well
and faithfully to keep, obierve, and fulfill
the same, and to cause them to be kept,
observed and fulfilled without any ex-
ception or contradiction, and doe con-
firme the same by Oath upon the ho-
ly Evangelists, notwithstanding any opi-
nions, sentences or lawes whatsoever to
the contrary; in the presence of the most
illustrious Don John de Mendoza, Mar-
quesse of Inojosa, and Don Charles Colo-
ma, Extraordinary Ambassadors of the
Catholique King, of George Calvert Kt.
one of Our chiefe Secretaries, of Edward
Conway Knight, another of Our chiefe
Secretaries, of Francis Cottington Baro-
net, of the Privy Counsell to Our Sonne
the Prince, of Francis de Corondelet, A-
postolicall (or the Popes) Prothonotary,
and Arch-deacon of Cambray.
Dated at Our Pallace at Westminster the
20. day of July, An. Dom. 1623. in the
English stile.

Jacobus Rex.

A compared and true Copy.

George Calvert, then chiefe Secretary.

The forme of the Oath which the Lords of the Counsell tooke to the former Ar-
ticles is this which followeth, (found among the Lord Cottingtons papers.)

Formula Juramenti a Consiliarijs Præstandi.

EGO N. juro me debite pleneque observaturum, quantum ad me spectat, omnes & sin-
gulos Articulos qui in tractatu Matrimonij, inter serenissimum Carolum, Walliae
Principem, et Serenissimam Dominam Donnam Mariam Hispaniarum Infantem
continentur. Juro etiam quod neque per me, nec per Ministrum aliquem inferiorem mihi in-
servientem, legem ullam contra quemcunque Catholicum Romanum conscriptum executioni
mandabo, aut mandari faciam, Penamque ullam ab earum aliqua irrogatam exigam. Sed in
omnibus quæ ad me pertinent, ordines a Majestate sua ea ex parte constitutos fideliter obser-
vabo.

These things thus acted in England by the King, I shall next informe you what was
acted in Spaine by the Prince, (b) Pope Gregory the 15. before his death and gran-
ting of the Dispensation, had obliged and charged the conscience of his Catholique
Majesty, to see the execution and accomplishment of all the conditions required by
his Holinesse in favour of the Catholiques of England Ireland and Scotland, (c) for
the Dispensation to which he had assented: His Majesty hereupon called an As-
sembly of Divines to consult with, what he ought to doe for the discharge of his
conscience in this regard. Their resolution was, First, that the Prince of Wales should
promise upon his Oath for to performe the conditions, and that the King his Father
should doe the like. Secondly, that the promises of Marriage should be presently
made betweene the Prince of Wales and the most illustrious Infanta; but that the
consummation of the Marriage and delivery of the said Infanta should not at all be ex-
ecuted untill the month of May in the following yeere 1624. to the end that they might
expe-

(b) Mercure
francois Tom.
9. An. 1624.
p. 8. 9.
(c) Popes
know how to
make good
bargaines.

" experimentally see during this time, if the foresaid conditions required by his Holinesse
 " should be faithfully accomplished. This last condition seemed very rigorous to the
 " Prince, but the King of Spaine promised him to procure that the time should be
 " abridged. As to the first, the Prince of Wales tooke an Oath to his Majesty to observe
 " the foresaid conditions, and signed them with his hand: and he likewise swore and
 " signed this by way of overplus, To permit at all times, that any should freely propose
 " to him the arguments of the Catholike Religion without giving any impediment; and
 " that he would never directly nor indirectly permit any to speake to the Infanta against
 " the same. A very strange, dishonourable, eninaring Oath, exposing the Prince to
 all seducements and seducers from our Religion without the least impeachment on
 the one hand; and debarring his Highnesse and all others, so much as once to open
 their lips to speake against Popery, or to attempt the conversion of the Infanta to our
 Religion on the other hand.

NOTE.

These later strange Articles in favour of the Roman Catholiques (originally contri-
 ved by the Pope himselfe and his Cardinals) being thus sworn & signed by the King and
 Prince, gave great distaste to those of the Protestant party in England who had notice of
 them; whereupon King James soon after perceiving the Spaniards juggling with him and
 that this Match notwithstanding all the former Articles sworne and sealed, might re-
 ceive a rupture (though at first he was so confident of it, that he said openly in Court;
 (d) That now al the devils in hel could not hinder the Match) therupon made this Protesta-
 tion (sent to Salisbury) by way of explanation of the latter Articles (found among Secre-
 ry Windebanks and Cottingtons papers) sufficiently manifesting the verity of the said Ar-
 ticles, printed long since, Cum Privilegio, in the French Mercury (one of the tru-
 est Histories in this latter age, how ever the Author of (e) A Royall Vindication, (c) Pag. 34.
 in answer to the Royall Popish Favourite, flights it as most false, fabulous) and ma-
 king a kind of Commentary on them.

(d) The Vo-
 call forrest, p.
 126. 127.

(c) Pag. 34.
 44, 45.

Whereas his Majesty obligeth himselfe by oath, that no particular Law now in
 force against the Roman Catholiques, to which the rest of his Subjects gene-
 rally are not liable, nor any generall Lawes which may concerne all his Subjects equal-
 ly and indifferently, being such nevertheless as are repugnant to the Roman religion,
 shall be executed at any time, as to the said Roman Catholiques in any manner or case
 whatsoever, directly or indirectly: And that his Majesty shall cause the Lords of his
 Pivy Councell to take the same oath in so much as concernes them, or the execution
 of the Lawes afore mentioned, so far forth as the same appertaines unto them, or any
 officers or Ministers under them.

King James
 his Protesta-
 tion.

And whereas further his Majesty obligeth himselfe by the oath, that no other Laws
 shall hereafter be enacted against the said Roman Catholiques, but that a perpetuall
 toleration to exercise the Roman Catholique Religion within their private houses
 shall be allowed unto them; throughout all his Majesties Kingdomes and Dominions;
 that is to say, as well within his Kingdomes of Scotland and Ireland as of England, in
 manner and forme as is capirulated, declared, and granted in the Articles concerning
 the Marriage.

NOTE.

His Majesty intendeth really and effectually to performe what he hath promised
 touching suspension of Lawes against his Roman Catholique Subjects, but with this
 protestation: That if they shall insolently abuse this his Majesties high grace and fa-
 vour to the danger of imbroyling his State and government, the safety of the Com-
 mon-wealth is in this case *suprema Lex*, and his Majesty must notwithstanding his said
 oath, proceed against the offenders, yet so, as that before he doe it, the King of Spaine
 and all the world shall see he hath just cause.

And whereas also his Majesty obligeth himselfe by the like oath, that he will use his
 power and authority, and procure as much as in him lyes, that the Parliament shall ap-
 prove, confirme, and ratifie all and singular the Articles agreed upon betwixt the two
 Kings in favour of the Roman Catholiques, by reason of this Match, and that the
 said Parliament shall revoke and abrogate all particular lawes made against the said
 Catho.

NOTE.

Catholiques, wheremto the rest of his Majesties Subjects are not liable. As also all other generall lawes, as to the said Roman Catholiques, which concerne them, together with the rest of his Majesties Subjects, and be repugnant to the Roman Catholique Religion: and that hereafter his Majesty shall not give his royall assent at any time unto any new lawes that shall be made against the said Roman Catholiques. His Majesty hath ever protested and doth protest, that it is an impossibility which is required at his hands, and that he may safely and well sweare it, for he is sure that he is never able to doe it.

And last of all, his Majesty protesteth, that this which he now undertakes to doe and is sworne, is meerly in respect and favour of the Marriage intended betwixt his Sonne and the Infanta, and unlesse the same doe proceed, he doth hold himselfe, and so declareth by this Protestation, acquitted and discharged in conscience of every part of his Oath now taken, and that he is at full liberty to deale with his Roman Catholique Subjects, according to his owne naturall lenity and clemency, and as their dutifull loyalty and behaviour towards his Majesty shall deserve.

(e) Mercure

François, An.

1624. pag. 29,

30.

These Articles being thus sealed and sworne (e) Don Carlos Coloma the Spanish Ambassadour laid the first stone for a Chappell which was to be built for the Infanta at the Princes Pallace at Saint James, which building was advanced with all expedition, to the great regret of many Protestants, and to the contentment of most Roman Catholiques, to see a Catholique Church built in the Metropolitall City of the Realme by publike authority, after one hundred yeeres space, during which, they did nothing else but destroy such Churches. All Catholiques that were Prisoners throughout England, Ireland and Scotland were released, all Pursuivants and Informers established to search for, apprehend, and prosecute the Catholiques, were prohibited to attempt any thing against them: They had all free ingresse into, and egress out of the Realme without taking the Oath of Supremacy, having onely a passe-port: They resorted freely to heare Masse at the Spanish Ambassadors Chappell in so great number, and so publiquely, that they were sometimes two or three thousand persons, so the French Mercury truly records. Besides, the Papists grew so insolent, that they had open Masses and Sermons in divers private houses about London and elsewhere. Among others, their (f) meeting at Black-friers in a large chamber at a Sermon on the fifth of their November is most remarkable, where Drury the Priest that preached, and neere an hundred Roman Catholiques were slaine and smothered with the fall of the floore of the chamber (which they over-burthened with the multitude of people) and many sore hurt and bruised, to their great astonishment.

(f) See M. Gee
his foot out of
the Snare.

(g) Mercure

François, ibid.

p. 30, 31.

(g) The Marriage was now thought to be compleated; the greatest enemies of this alliance submitted themselves to the Kings will. you could see nothing but the picture of the Infanta within mens houses and in the streets. A Fleet was prepared to goe to attend the Prince and Infanta at the Port of Saint Andrew in Biscay: His Majesty had also assigned the Dower of his faire future Daughter, and had sent to the Marquesse of Buckingham the title of Duke of Buckingham; and to the Duke of Lenox, the title of the Duke of Richmont. In fine, all seemed to be done in England, but things went as slow as Lead at Rome and in Spaine.

(h) Pag. 43, 44

But here comes in the new (h) anti-dated Loyall Vindication of the King, and demands this silly question by way of objection; If King James and the Prince had really condescended and sworne both to the generall Articles of the Marriage (being such as the Pope with his Cardinals of the Conclave had approved) and likewise to those private Articles (being so infinitely advantageous and for the weale of the Roman Catholique Religion) how could the match (being fully concluded on all parts) be broken off?

Had this Objector well remembered that of the Poet;

Multa cadunt inter calicem Supremacie labra:

he would never have demanded so frivolous a question, to evade such a palpable matter of fact, as the sealing and swearing of these Articles, so publiquely knowne in the Courts of England and Spaine. But to give him a full answer, as the Spaniard never really intended this match; but to worke his owne mischievous designs by confirming and

and protracting the treaty about it, so he took this occasion to interrupt it.

* Pope Gregory the 15. loone after the dispensation granted, departed this life, which the Spaniards promised should be no remora to the match, as is evident by this letter of the Earle of Bristol to Mr. Francis Cottington, then Secretary to the Prince.

* Mercure
Francois, p.
539.

GOOD Mr. Secretary, yesterday Master Clerke went from hence, but I wrote not by him, neither have I now much to tell you: Especially for that I am in doubt whether these letters will finde you in England or not. Yesterday we had the newes of the Popes death, but this King out of his owne mouth, and the Conde de Olivares, and the Nuntio do assure the Prince, that this accident will neither make alteration, nor delay in his busines, they being all of Opinion that it will be dispatched by the Dean of the Cardinalls & the Conclave. The Infanta is now by all the Court, and by this Kings approbation called la Princesa de Inglaterra, and she makes not nice to take it upon her. She now commeth Publickly to the Commody, and sitteth by the Queene, and I am told, that as soone as two papers, which are already drawne, are signed by the King and Prince, they will give her the right hand of the Queene, com a Knefeda, which I conceive the Prince will not be displeased withall, for by that meanes it will fall out that the Prince and his Mstresse will ever sit together. This day Don Fernando de Giron invited my Lord Duke, my selfe and Sir Walter Aughton to dinner, where we were accompanied by Don Augustin Mexa, the Marquesse of Montes Claros, and the Conde de Gundemar, and conceive we shall againe fall to good fellowship. You have heard that the Marquesse of Montescarlos, is made President de Hacienda, the other in the Junta began to speake in effectively, and against the match, thereupon the King the same night discharged him of that place, and bestowed it upon Montescarlos.

For mine owne particular, I protest unto you the rate that I am forced to live at is such, and the necessity of those preparations, that I must make at the disposorios, for that our Nation beginneth to loose much reputation for the manner they live in without Liveries or Coaches, or horses, so that I am forced to bolner por la honra, de la nation, and will make the best Livery in Spaine, and if his Majesty take not consideration of me I am undone. I leave all to the negociation, and if you settle not somewhat for me, I will dispaire of any good.

I hope we shall shortly see you, for I never longed more for any thing. God blisse you and send you as much happinesse as I wish unto you, and so I rest.

Mst. Saint James his day,
Sillo Novo 1623.

Your faithfull freind to serve you
BRISTOLL.

Yet notwithstanding the *Spanish Machiavils to puzzle the busines, pretended that the dispensation, which the Pops Nuntio had in his hands at Madrid was suspended by the Popes death; and that there was a necessity to attend the election of a new Pope, who ought to ratify it. Moreover the Spanish Divins firmly insisted, that the espousals & consummation of the mariage ought to be deferred till the following yeare, proposing so many difficulties, that it was impossible for his Highnesse to condescend unto them. Besides the King of Spaine demanded certaine Ports and Fortresses in England for further security of performing those Articles, then what was formerly given, which seemed very unreasonable. Further; the extraordinary Embassadors of the Emperour and of the King of Poland proffered a marriage with the Infanta for the sonnes of their Masters, which gave some retarding to this affaire. The Conde of Olivares (the grand favorite of Spaine) and the Duke of Buckingham (I need not mention the occasion so well knowne, embracing *Nubem pro Iuno*) entered into ill intelligence one with another: The Protestant party and Parliament in England, disliking the match, opposed it all they could here; and some of the Princes followers, who were Zealous Protestants; did the like in Spaine: Sir Edmond Verney struck an English Sorbon Doctor, called Maillard, a blow under the eare, for visiting one of the Princes Pages, sicke of a mortall feaver whereof he died, and labouring to pervert him: which gave great offence, insomuch that they had much ado to keepe him out of the Spanish Inquisition: Other of the English derided and mocked the Catholique Ceremonies and fashions of the Spaniards; which much retarded the businesse, and helped forward to dissolve the match; Besides, the Secretary of the Prince Palatine arriving at Madrid under pretence of praying the Duke to be Godfather to one of his Highnesse Children, laboured to ingage the Duke (disgusted formerly by Olivares) against the mariage, to promote the Palatines affaires. In fine, the Prince himselfe discovers that the Spaniard really intended nothing else but to abuse and tire him out with delays, without hopes of any successe at last; whereupon he contrived how to get himselfe fairely off and returne for England with convenient speed. The Spaniards pressed the Prince to espouse the Infanta presently, but to delay the consummation of the mariage and the carying of her over into England till some further time the ensuing yeare. The Prince on the contrary was advised, not to espouse her at all unlesse the mariage were presently consummated, and he might instantly transport her into England: which the Spaniards not yeelding unto, King James dispatched two Posts one after another to the Prince to hasten his returne into England, upon just and necessary reasons: which the King of Spaine and his Councell being acquainted, after some debates, condescended that the

The vocall
Forest p. 126.
127. Mercure
Francois An.
1623. p. 539.
An. 1624. p. 84
9.30.31.32
to 39.

* Mercure
Francois
An. 1623.
p. 524 to 564.

Prince should depart thence the nineteenth of September following upon oath first given, as well by his Catholique Majesty as by the Prince, to accomplish the mariage, and to make the espousals ten dayes after the receipt of the dispensation from his holiness (Urban the 8.) elected Pope, after many divisions then new among the Cardinalls about his election, to which end the Prince made a Procuration to the King of Spaine, and *Donne Carlos* his brother to make the espousals accordingly, which we left in the Earle of *Bristol*'s hands, the Copy whereof I shall here insert.

IN nomine Patris, & Filii, & Spiritus Sancti &c. Relatione & notitia hujus Instrumenti, omnibus cujuscunque gradus, et dignitatis Personis notum sit et manifestum, quod Regali Cenobio, *Dino Laurentio* sacro, sito apud *Escuriale*, Serenissimus Dominus *Carolus Wallie* Princeps, Majestatis *Jacobi* hujus nominis primi *Mag: Britannia Regis*, Serenissimi filius unicus notum fecit. Quod cum ad gloriam et honorem Dei, quo magis, consanguinitatis et affinitatis vincula, quae illum et *Jacobum M: Brit: Regem*, Patrem suum colendissimum, cum *Serm: Principe Philippo 4. Hispanie Rege Catholico* conjungunt, constringantur arctius et confirmentur, in ipsisque successoribus suis amoris pignora, & mutua inter utramque coronam benevolentia ad commune, majusque utriusque bonum & felicitatem, concilientur, stabiliantur, & permaneant; Actum, conventum, & conclusum est inter praefatos *Sereniss. Philippum Regem Catho. & Carolum Wallie Principem*, accedentibus consensu & voluntate expressis *Mag: Jacobi Mag: Brit: Regis*, prout latius constat ex Scripturis acceptationis, ratificationis, & confirmationis ejusdem in eam causam habitis (quae penes me infra scriptum Notarium extant) (quod attestor) de celebrando jucundoque Matrimonio, inter memoratum *Seren: Carolum Wallie Principem*, & *Sereniss: Dominam Mariam, Hispaniarum Infantem, Regis Catholici Sororem*, juxta id quod in praedicto Tractatu Matrimoniali praescriptum & capitulatum est, & in ejus executionem, & effectum; quoniamque aliqua magni ponderis & momenti se obtulerunt Negotia Regiam Majestatem *Britannia Patrem suum* spectantia, & in ejus commodum & Subditorum suorum utilitatem cessura, quae se praesentia sua non foveret, magnum posset prejudicium irrogari, nec amplius ob id immorari permittant. Quamobrem per semetipsum praedictas Nuptias & Matrimonium celebrare non poterit; Sed legitimo Commissario & Procuratore interveniente; propria personali, ex post facto ratihabitione subsequuta approbans, laudans, & ratum habens, prout se laudare, approbare, ratum, gratumque habere professus est omnia & singula in praedicto Tractatu Matrimoniali inter Ipsum & Majestatem Catholicam 4. die Augusti habito & celebrato, contenta illumque denuo in omnibus ex certa scientia, grata & spontanea voluntate acceptans & confirmans, satis superque certior & securus utilitatis inde provenientis & rationum hujus Matrimonii convenientia & commoda cerè sudent & ostendunt, item vim ac substantiam Matrimonii agnoscens, perpetuamque ejus naturam, & indissolubile vinculum, Personam nominaturus magnitudine rei, ita praexcellere, parem, & qua nomine suo, seque ipsum representando, quae par est dignitate & auctoritate aeterni adeo solenni, honorifico & summo possit satisfacere, & praedictum Matrimonium celebrare & ad exitum perducere; Serenissimi Regis Catholici *Philippi 4. Majestatem* eligit, item & *Carolus Hispaniarum Infantem* ejus fratrem, unicuique eorum in solidum vices suas committendo prout de facto & cum effectus, & melioribus via & forma commisit & dedit, & utrumque quae eorum facit & constituit suum verum & legitimum & indubitabilem Procuratorem, concedens unicuique plenam, tenore praesentium, potestatem, auctoritatem & mandatum, cum plenissima generali & speciali facultate, & ea omni qua jure necessaria esse possit & debeat, ut pro dicto Serenissimo *Carolo Wallie Principe*, & ejus nomine, propriamque illius Personam referendo, representando, Nuptias & Matrimonium contrahat, per verba formalia & expressa quae verum & legitimum Matrimonium de presenti faciant & constituent cum praedicta Serenissima Domina *Maria Hispaniarum Infante*, & praedictorum verborum virtute ac potestate eam in propriam & legitimam praedicti Serenissimi *Caroli Wallie Principis uxorem* accipiet, & eum Serenissimae *Infantis Mariae* verum & legitimum Sponsum & Maritum constituat prout ex nunc prout tunc Serenissimus Princeps talem se dat & constituit, & ut illum possit obligare & obliget; Quod Dominam Serenissimam Infantem uti suam talem Sponsam & uxorem legitimam accipiet, & quod ratum habebit, & denuo per semetipsum approbabit & confirmabit praedictas Nuptias & Matrimonium hujus Mandati & facultatis vigore, nomine suo per dictos Serenissimum *Philippum 4. Regem Catholicum* vel per Serenissimum *Carolus, Hispaniarum Infantem fratrem suum*, celebratum & contractum; & quod in eo perpetuo & indigne durabit & permanebit, & si necessarium fuerit, illud denuo per semetipsum contrahet, & celebrare, juxta formam in praedicto Tractatu Matrimoniali inter ipsum, & Majestatem

statem Catholicam habito prescriptam, verboque & fide principalibus promisit se approbaturum, confirmaturum & ratificaturum, gratum ratumque habiturum, & inviolabiliter, firmiterque bene & fideliter observaturum cum effectu & bona fide, omni exceptione & contradictione & causa cessante, quicquid hujus facultatis virtute modo & forma expressis, factum fuerit, non obstantibus quibuscunque rationibus, causis, legibus, & opinionibus in contrarium; & quod hujusmodi mandatum nec in toto aut in parte nusquam revocabit, neque in aliquo detrahet aut derogabit, sed in omnibus firmiter & inviolabiliter observabit, & tandem declarabit sua esse voluntatis, ut predictus Serenissimus Rex Catholicus, vel Carolus ejus frater hoc mandato uti possint usque in diem Nativitatis Dominicæ proximè venturum, nec in longius tempus protrahi, aut extendi permittet. Quod totum actum fuit presentibus Testibus ad id vocatis Georgio Villerio Buckinghamia Duce, Maris Anglicani Prasectio, Garterii Ordinis Equite, Magne Britannia Regi a Consiliis Secretioribus & Equitis sui Prasectio; juncto Johanne Digbeio Bristolensi Comite, & de Secretioribus Regis Magna Britannia Consiliis, & in Aula Catholica Majestatis Legato extraordinario; Gualtero Aston Equite Baronetto Balni, Regis Magna Britannia Cubiculario intimo, & ejusdem in Aula Majestatis Catholica Oratore ordinario, Emmanuele de Fonseca y Azuedo, Comite de Monterey & de Fuentes, Supremi Italiae Senatus Praside, & Majestati Catholica a consiliis; Didaco Sarmiento de Acunia Comite de Gondomar, a secretioribus ejusdem Majestatis Consiliis, & Aula Prasectio; Didaco Capato Comite de Barajas, Commendatarie de Montecalegre, Ordinis Divi Jacobi Prasectura insignito, & Aula Prasectio; Et manu propria subscripsit predictus Serenissimus Princeps, & suo sigillo munivit.

Carolus P.

Et ego Joannes de Cirica publicus Majestatis Catholica Notarius in omnibus suis Regnis & Dominiis supradictis omnibus interfui, una cum Serenissimo Carolo Wallia Principe, quem me cognoscere testor, & testibus supramemoratis, & omnium fidei facio in eorum testimonium subscripsi & signavi.

Joannes de Cirica.

The King of Spain likewise promised to the Prince to consummate the Marriage at Christmas, if the Prince would stay so long, as this Instrument manifests.

PHILIPPUS DEI GRATIA Hispaniarum, utriusque Sicilia, Hierusalem, Indiarum Orientalium & Occidentalium, Insularum & continentis Maris Oceani, &c. Rex Catholicus, Archi-Dux Austriae, Dux Burgundiae, Mediolani, &c. Comes Absburgi, Flandriae, Tirolis, &c.

Postquam Instrumento nuper transacto & concordato super futuro Matrimonio inter Serenissimum Carolum eadem Divina Providentia Magna Britannia, Francia, Scotia, & Hibernia Principem, & Serenissimam Mariam Infantem Hispaniarum Sororem meam charissimam conventum & stipulatum fuisset, ut eandem Sororem meam prasato Principi, vel ejus Procuratori seu Procuratoribus ad id delegandis in manus tradere teneret tempore primi veris Anni proximè sequentis Millesimi Sexcentissimi Vigésimi quatuor. Idem Serenissimus Carolus Wallia Princeps a me instanter petiit, ut propter quasdam rationes & considerationes, Termini seu Temporis pramemorati compendium facerem: Itaque desiderio Ipsius quantum in me est satisfacere exoptans, indulsi & consensi, ut si Ipse proximis Festis Natalitiis hic Madriti fuerit, tum Matrimonium per verba de prasenti prius contractum, consummare & ad desideratum finem possit perducere. Quae autem de traditione Serenissima Sororis meae prasato Instrumento capitulata sunt, immutata & firma, uti concordata sunt, remanent, quemadmodum cetera omnia. In quorum fidem, hoc prasens Scriptum manu mea subscripsi, & Sigillo meo communiri feci. Datum Madriti Anno Domini Millesimo Sexcentesimo Vigésimo tertio, Mensis Augusti, die 8.

Philippus.

Joannes de Cirica

This being done, the Prince prepares for his return into England, what the solemnities and manner of his departure were, and what presents were given on both sides, you may read at large in the (*) French Mercury. What jewels the Prince there gave away, appears by these two Warrants, extracted out of the originals in parchment under the Princes own hand and Seal. found among the Lord Cottingtons writings.

Charles P.

WE will and Command you to present in our name these our Jewells and precious stones herein mentioned, unto such severall persons as are in this our warrant, nominated and particularly appointed, (that is to say) To the Kings Majetty of *Spaine* the rich Sword that was lately our deare Brother Prince, *Henries* garnished with Diamonds of severall bignesse. To the Queene of *Spaine*, the Eye Diamond with a faire peare Pearle at it. To Don *Carlos*, A Ring made of a great pointed Diamond that was in the Coller of Roses and Cyphers, weighing fourteene Carrats, To the *Infanta Cardinall*, A Crosse of six Table Diamonds, the middle stone being the greatest in our round Jewell, which was broken to supply many others herein mentioned: the other five stones were taken out of the Jewell of twelve stones bought of Sir *Peter Van Lore*, and broken for the same use, and one of the round Pearles of the head attire hanging to it; To the *Infanta Donna Maria* the Chaîne of great round Pearls, to the number of two hundred threescore and sixteene weighing nine ounces, the two Pendant Diamonds being the two lesser of the three, were taken from a Necklace, A paire of pendant Pearles of the fairest, The great Table Diamond set open without soile with a pendant Jewell in forme of an Ancor, made of two long fancet Diamonds without soile, with a faire Diamond pendant. To the *Conde de Olivares* a great table Diamond weighing eighteene Carrats which was the Duke of Buckingham, set in a Coller with one of the fairest pendant Pearles. To the Countesse of *Olivares*, the Jewell in forme of the letter I, set with two large table Diamonds, and a Diamond cut in faucets, with a small table Diamond and a faire peare Pearle pendant. To the *Conde de Olivares* his Daughter, A Ring with a faire pointed Diamond taken out of the Rose Coller. To the *Dutches of Gandia*, a Crosse of seven table Diamonds, the middle stone belonged to the Dukes Jewels; the rest were taken out of the said Jewell of twelve stones, and one of the round Pearles of the head attire hanging at it, To *Don Maria De Lende*, a Crosse of ten thick table Diamonds bought of our servant Sir *Edmond Varney*. To the Ladies of the *Infanta's* side these sixteen Jewells following: viz. the picture case wherein the Pictures of our deare Parents the King and Queene were, and a little Pendelock of six small Diamonds, and two great furnisht by our Jeweller. A paire of Pearle Bracelets, to which is added one small Rubie furnisht by our Jeweller. The Jewell of Diamonds in forme of a Pellican, with a pendant Diamond (furnisht by our Jeweller) added to it, The Jewell of Diamonds in forme of a Phoenix with a Peare pendant Diamond, fellow to that on the Pellican, and one other lesser pendant Diamond, both furnisht by our Jeweller. A paire of Diamond bracelets made of the eighteene peeces of Rose Diamonds heretofore in the Dukes Hatband, A watch furnisht by our Jeweller garnisht with Diamonds, to which hangs one of the round Pearles, taken from the head attire. A Jewell furnisht by our Jeweller, in forme of a burning heart, with a large table Diamond in the midt, three faucet Diamonds on the toppe, and garnisht about with small Diamonds, with one of our pendant Pearles hanging at it. A Jewell furnisht by our Jeweller, in forme of a blew Lilly, all Garnisht with Diamonds of severall sizes. A Jewell of a branch of Roses set all with Diamonds (furnisht by our Jeweller) to which is added a large faucet Diamond taken out of our round Jewell, which was broken as a foresaid. A paire of Diamond Bracelets furnisht by our Jeweller with two table Diamonds, taken out of the Rose coller, A Crosse of thicke Table Diamonds, bought here, with a round Pearle taken from the head attire. A Ring with foure great faucet Diamonds and sundry smaller table Diamonds set after the Spanish fashion and bought here. A Jewell in forme of a Crosse with sixteene large table Diamonds and divers small ones bought here, A head-Lace of Diamonds with a large Rose of Diamonds in the midt bought here, A nother head-lace or a *Preradoz* of Diamonds with a large Rose of Diamonds in the midt, bought here, A paire of pendants for the Eares, all set with Diamonds, bought here.

To the Duke of *Jesantado* a Ring with a thicke Table Diamond, that was in the Duke of *Buckingham*s Jewell. To the Marquesse of *Montescaro*, a Ring of three large table Diamonds that were the Dukes: To the Marquesse of *Mondejar* a Ring of two table Diamonds taken out of our round Jewell, and two square Table Diamonds furnished by our Jeweller. To the Admirall of *Castile*, a Ring with a largethin Table Diamond, that was the Dukes. To the Marquesse of *Castile Rodrigo*, a Ring with a large Diamond, and two Diamonds of a lesser sizetaken out of our round Jewell. To *Don Jaime de Cardenas*, a Ring of a large faucet Diamond taken out of our round Jewell and two table Diamonds furnished by our Jeweller. To the Duke of *Ijara* a Ring with a large thick table Diamond that was the Dukes and two Diamonds furnished by our Jeweller. To the Duke of *Zea*, a Ring with a square Table Diamond, taken out of our round Jewell, and two Diamonds furnished by our Jeweller; To the Marquesse of *Curpio* a Ring with a large table Diamond, and two lesser, taken from our round Jewell. To the Marquesse of *Itona*, a Ring with a long table Diamond that was the Dukes. To Secretary *Corica*, a Ring with three faucet table Diamonds, whereof one was the Dukes, the other two were taken from the Rose Coller. To the Conde de *St. Espephen*, a Ring with a long table Diamond, and two lesser taken out of our round Jewell. To *Don Lewis de Haro* a Ring with a Square Table Diamond, and two lesser taken out of our round Jewell. To the Conde de *Portalegre*, a Ring with a large Table Diamond that was the Dukes, and two lesser Diamonds furnished by our Jeweller. To the Marquesse of *Vilada*, a Ring with two long thick table Diamonds that were the Dukes, and two lesser square Diamonds taken from our round Jewell. To the two Secretaries *Alvis* and *Antonio de Aloca*, two Rings, one with a great faucet hart Diamond, taken out of the Hatband of great Diamonds, the other with a large thicke Table Diamond furnished by our Jeweller. To the Conde de *Buena ventura*, a Ring with a great pointed Diamond taken out of the Rose Coller. To the Conde de *Monterrey* the great Diamond Ring that was the Earle of *Brisfells*. To the Conde de *Gondomar*, the Ring with a large pointed Diamond cut in faucets without soile brought out of *England*. To the Conde de *Barajas*, A Ring with two long table Diamonds, that were the Dukes, and two other Diamonds taken out of our round Jewel. To the Bishop of *Palencia*, a Ring in forme of a Crownd heart, with large faucet Diamond, and set round with Diamonds, all furnished by our Jeweller. To the Conde de *Chinchone*, a Ring with many Diamonds, set after the Spanish fashion, bought of our servant *Thomas Washington*.

To the Cardinall *Zapata* the Crosse of Gold having foure large Diamonds cut in fance s, and twelve small triangle Diamonds and a table Diamonds for the middle stone, supplied out of the broken Coller. To the Kings Confessor the old Crosse with foure Diamonds cut in faucets, and three Pearles pendant. To *Don Fernando Giron*, A Crosse with seaven large table Diamonds, two of them were taken out of our round Jewell, and five of them were the Dukes, with a Pendelock of a faucet Diamond furnished by our Jeweller. To the Bishop of *Segovia*, the Crosse of five large Diamonds cut in faucets, with a pendant Pearle newly added to it. To *Don Augustin Mexia*, a faire Brooche of Gould, set full of Diamonds of severall siezes, and bought of *Sir Peter Van Lore*, in the midst whereof is a large table Diamond that was the Dukes. To the Marquesse *De Flores*, A great thin table Diamond set in a Collet, heretofore belonging to the Duke. To the Conde de *la Puebla*, the chaine of Gold of eight and fortie peeces, whereof foure and twenty are great and foure and twenty are small, Garnished with Diamonds, and a picture Case furnished by our Jeweller, garnisht with Diamonds, having our picture and a Cypher of our name. And these our letters shall be your sufficient Warrant for the same. Signed with our owne hand, and given under our Signet at *Madrid*, the six and twentieth day of *August*. In the one and twentieth yeare of the Raigne of our deare Lord and Father, *James* by the grace of God King of *England, France* and *Ireland*, Defendor of the Faith &c. And of *Scotland* the seaven and fiftieth, 1623.

To Our Right trustie and welbeloved Spencer Lord
Compton, Mr. of our Wardrobe and Robes,

Charles P.

WEE will and Command you; That you deliver to our use and service unto the hands and Custody of the Right honourable *John Earle of Bristol*, Lord Ambassador extraordinarie for his Majesty of great Brittain our deare Father to the King of *Spaine*, such Jewells and precious stones as are mentioned in this our Warrant, (That is to say) A Coller of Gold containing thirteene great Ballaces, and thirteene peeces of Gold, with thirteene Cinque of Pearle betwixt them, A long Chaîne of two large Ropes of faire round Pearles weighing ten ounces and an halfe, and two penny weight, containing in number seaven hundred threescore and five. A looking Glasse set in Gold, the backside richly garnisht with faire Diamonds and six peeces of Chaîne to hang at, garnisht with Diamonds on both sides. One and twenty Buttons of gold, each one having a faire Table Diamond; The Remainder of a neck-lace of *Queene Annes*, having in the midst thereof a large Triangle Diamond, with a small Diamond pendant at the same, also thirteene small pendent Diamonds, and seaventeene great round Pearles. A Coller of Gold containing thirtie peeces, whereof fifteene are Roles, in each was a great pointed Diamond, and fifteene Crownes. Ciphers of the King and *Queenes* names, having in each a Table Diamond heretofore, out of which was taken for our use foure of the pointed, and six of the Table Diamonds. So there are to be delivered to the said Earle of *Bristol* eleaven pointed and nine Table Diamonds with the Coller, five great *Emeraldes*, and five round Pearles that were taken out of a head attire. And this our letters shall be your sufficient warrant for the same. Signed with our hand, and given under our Signet at *Madrid* the eight and twentieth day of *August*; In the one and twentieth yeare of the Raigne of our Deare Lord and Father *James* by the Grace of God King of *England*, *France*, and *Ireland*, defender of the Faith, &c. And of *Scotland* the seaven and fiftieth. 1623.

To our right Trusty and welbeloved
Spencer Lord Compton Mr. of our
Wardrobe and Robes.

(*) *Mercur*
Franc. p. 560.
to 572.

THe (*) 12. of *September*, 1623. After dinner the Prince tooke his solempne leave of the King, and Court of *Spaine*, and departed from *Madrid* towards *Saint Andrews*, where the 24. of *September* he feasted all the Spanish *Dons* who accompanied him aboard his ship, and then set sail for *England*; where he arrived at *Portsmouth*, *Octo.* 5. and came thence into *London*, *Octo.* 6. to the great rejoycing of all sorts of people, signified by their bonfires, ringing of bells, with other externall expressions of joy. Vpon his return thence Doctor *Andrewes* made these Latin verses.

Anglus connubium, connubia tractat Iberus,
Sic Mora producit, quod properavit Amor.
Pro nupta, nebula est, sponsam responsa retardant,
Pro tadis Carolus tadia longa tulit.
Rumpe Moras Princeps, nebulam dispelle serenus,
Sitque serena tuis, te redeunte, dies.
Vel quoniam Angligenis nupsit Caterina duobus,
Tu Carole Austriacas (dum mora) sume duas.

Austriacam Carolus desistat amare puellam
Vt qui operam terrâ luserit atque mari.
Causa est quod tantos serus tentaverit ignes
Debuit Infantem sollicitasse Puer.

*Sunt in amore more, longum est percurrere gentis
Conjugii, meritis, religionis opus
At Carole exultes, peperit Regina Madriti,
Iam nova felicitis concipe vota proci.
I, propera, fides defer mandata ministris,
Expeditas naves, ingere calcar equis
Infante iunx cunis agita, ut potiaris adalidâ
Maturam si vis pascere, nubet anus.*

The Prince upon his departure commanded the Earle of *Bristol* not to deliver the Procuration left in his custody, untill he received further order from him: And upon his arrivall in *England* the Duke of *Buckingham*, and Lords of the Councell, testifying their dislike of the match, endeavoured to engage King *James* to breake it off by degrees; to which end they perswaded him to demand restitution of the *Palatinate* and Electorship to the Palgrave from the King of *Spain*, to write to this purpose to the Earle of *Bristol*, to that end and likewise to delay the *Disposorios* till Christmas, To which Leetters the Earl returned this answer to Mr. Secretary *Calvert*.

GOOD Mr. Secretary *Calvert*, I have not presumed in my present letter unto his Majesty, to write any thing in answer to his letters of the thirtieth of *December*, but only in that point which toucheth my obedience to his Commandement for my present returne, for the rest I intreat you to present unto his Majesty this my humble Answer; Whereas his Majesty is pleased to say, that having seene the Answer to our third Memoriall, he doth not a little wonder, that I then rooke his affaires to have been in so good a condition that I would have proceeded to the disposorios of the Prince contrary to his order given; It is true his Majesty hath just cause to wonder, if he looke upon that Memoriall without the letter that accompanied it, or if he consider the estate of the affaires as they stood when the letter bore Date, which was the sixt of *December*; for then they stood by the infringing of the capitulation, as they heere do understand it, all disordered and imbroyled, in such sort as I had foreseene and advertized his Majesty. But the estate of affaires ten or fiveteene dayes before, when I intended to have passed to the disposorios, I confesse I supposed to be such, that I wish I had suffered much that they were againe upon the same tearme, if his Majesty have a desire to proceed with this Alliance and to settle the businesse of the *Palatinate*, by this Kings helpe and mediation:

First for the businesse of the March, against which it hath beene the maine objection that it was never really meant, but only held in Treaty to abuse and entertaine the King, it was now certainly to have taken effect within three dayes, viz. on the twentieth of *November*, had not the restrainer arryved here on the 26th: and all things would have beene most exactly and punctually performed according to the capitulation, and here was no thought of any thing but of providing Presents for the King and Prince, and settling of the Princesses Family, and preparations for the journey the first day of *March*, and the Princess had begun to draw the letters which she intended to have written the day of the disposorios to the Prince her Husband, and the King her Father in law.

For the businesse of the *Palatinate*, as it will appeare by the joynt dispatch which Sir *Walter Aston*, and my selfe wrote of the 23. of *November*, that we were assured not by the Conde of *Olivares* only in this Kings name, but severally by all the Councillors, that a settled resolution was taken in Councell on the 16. of *November* That this King should procure his Majesties entire satisfaction, and hereof the Cardinal *Capara* and divers other Councillors that professed themselves particularly affected to the King and Princes service, came to give Sir *Walter Aston* and my selfe the Paraben.

The Conde of *Olivares* intreated us both in this Kings name, to assure his Majesty thereof upon our honours, and upon our lives if need were, and thus much was

to have beene delivered unto us in writing before we would have passed to the Disposorios as will plainly appeare by this above mentioned dispatch of the 23. of November.

Besides the Princes had now made this businesse her owne, and had therein most earnestly moved the King her Brother, and written unto the Conde of Olivares, and had set her heart upon the making of her selfe gratefull and welcome to the King and Kingdome by overcoming this businesse: further, I conceive it hath beene and is the general opinion of wise men, that his Majesty could have no such assurance of this Kings reall intention of giving his Majesty satisfaction in the businesse of the Palatinate as that he proceeded really to the performance of the Match, and that this was the opinion of his Majesty, and all my Lords, and the ground whereupon I was to frame all my Negotiation in this particular; I shall procure very authentickall proofe, and if I had but halfe so cleare a warrant for the hazarding of the Match by the deferring of the Disposorios, as I have for the making of the concluding of the match, the rule for my proceeding in the businesse of the Palatinate, I should not have replied for a further explanation of his Majesties pleasure, nor have beene questionable for an intention of going against my Order.

For the point of the Portion, it was agreed that I should have had three hundred thousand Crownes paid at Twelfe-tide, the other 30000. which were formerly spoken of to have beene carryed in Jewells with the Infanta, they were content that the Princes should have carried 20000. Crownes in ready money, and only 10000. in Jewells: for the rest, if the maner of payment that was propounded had not liked his Majesty, they were resolved to have given his Majesty other satisfaction at reasonable dayes, as should be agreed of, although I must here crave leave to let his Majesty know, that having two Months before advertized this offer, I never understood of his Majesties dislike or rejection of it by his letters of the thirteenth of November, which likewise commanded the putting off of the disposorios.

And this was the true estate of his Majesties affaires, as it appeared unto me and those with whom I was to communicate his Majesties businesse, when I intended to have proceeded to the disposorios if in the interim I should not receive his Majesties directions to the contrary, which I was most assured of in case his Majesty should not like of that intention.

As for the other point, that I should have intended to have passed the disposorios contrary to the order given me, certainly I erred not with any malice or intention of having stolne a Mariage upon my Master against his will, for if I had, supposing I wanted sufficient warrant to have stayed the Disposorios, I would have concealed it, and so passed on, and not have sent with so much diligence to have a cleare understanding of his Majesties pleasure, neither would I with so great industry and great displeasure have prolonged the twentie foure to thirte dayes, and then so exactly and readily obeyed, when I had a cleare understanding of my Masters will: for the first thing I did, was instantly within few houres to send backe Peter Killigrew to let his Majesty know, that his orders should be most punctually obeyed, and soe they should have been before, if I had not understood that the nomination of a holy day in Christmas (whereof I wonder how his Majesty could want due information of the expiring of the the Powers) had not overthrowne all his Majesties intentions and desires in his very letter expressed, and hereof by due obedience unto the Prince his order formerly, upon the scruple of the Infantes entring into Religion, may be a sufficient argument.

I will not trouble you with any further Apologie, only I shall humbly offer unto his Majesty and my Lords consideration: First, that I understood the Infanta to be my young Masters Wife, or spouse at least, for such was now her stile, and as such was I enjoyned to serve her, and as such my Lord Duke and my selfe, and all the English kissed her hands, as her servants and Vassalls.

Secondly the Powers were drawne by the intervention of both parties, The King of Spaine accepting the substitution, and the Prince delivering of them legally to the King of Spaine and his Brothers use. These

These powers were deposited in my hands upon trust, as Embassador of the King of great Brittain, with publique Declaration, how and when I was to deliver them, and this drawne into an Instrument by *Iuan de Cirica* as publique Notarie, and this point is here much pressed, and I conceive many Pens will be imployed about the case.

Thirldly I ever understood, that my Master infinitely desired the Match, and the Prince in his letters at the very same time expresseth, that he much desireth it: besides the ingagements that have here passed recypocally, are publicke to the world.

I shall willingly now submit my selfe to any censure, which, whether were the honestest, dutifuller, or more prudent way upon inference and collections to have put a disgrace and disrespect upon so great and worthy a Princessse that was to be his Masters wife, to have no way insifted for the makeing good of the publicke trust reposed in him, by two so great Monarchs, when the powers were deposited in his hands, but to have put a great scorne upon the King of Spaine by nominating a day for the Mariage when the powers should be expired, to have hazzarded the overthrowing of so great and important a businesse (for to that issue it was brought, and I required to take or leave, either to proceed according to their capitulations, or that this King would hould himselfe freed of them, and the issue now sheweth the truth thereof) or on the other side to have represented unto his Majesty with truth and syncerity the true estate of all things, with his humble opinion the wrong and disgrace that the putting off the Mariage will be esteemed to the person of the *Infanta*, the scorne that would be judged to be put upon the King of Spaine, by the nominating of a day when the powers were expired. The hard construction that would be made upon the detention of the powers without some new and imminent cause. The danger that the Mariage would be in if hereby it should be disordered; The likelihood that the Match would be the greatest security for the restitution of the Palatinate, and in case these reasons should not be able to perswade his Majesty to proceed, then there was intimated, that there wanted sufficient warrant for the detaining of the powers, which was desired might be clearly sent unto him. In this interim all the above. said inconveniences were deferred, & that busines held up upon faire tearmes, that his Majesty might have his way and choyce unfolded before him, untill his Majesty was pleased clearely and positively to declare his pleasure in the point, whereunto there was ready and exact obedience given: soe that I shall willingly submit my selfe to the censure of the world, whether an intention so well and honestly grounded, seconded with so exact and ready an obedience shall make me blame worthy, I must confesse that if with out cleare and sufficient warrant, I had so much disordered the affaires of his Majesty as I now conceive them to be, I should have had a heavy and sad heart, which I thanke God I now have not; but confident of mine owne innocency, I can be no wayes diffident of my Matters accustomed Grace and favour. And so earnestly intreating you to present this my humble Answer to his Majesty and my Lords the Commissioners. I remember my service affectionatly unto you, and leave you to Gods holy protection.

Mad. the 28. Octb. 1623.

Your affectionat freind
to doe you service,

To this Letter the King returned this ensuing Answer.

BRISTOLL.

WE have read your Letters of the 28. of October and the copie of that power which was left by Our deere Sonne, We have examined and approved your reasons, and we doe assure you, that if we had seene the power left by our son before our last Letters, we had not written to you in the forme we did in ours of October the ninth, touching the time of Christmas. For we are so farre from having affection to deferre the *Desposorios*, or make them fruitlesse, as we desire to hasten them to a speedy good conclusion, being of the like affection with our deere brother of Spaine,

H

with

with one act to make a match, and an entire friendship according to the Count. of Olivares his ground formerly delivered to our Sonne and Buckingham, and mentioned in your owne letter, for the reall effecting of which we have thought good to command our deere Sonne to deferre the present execution of the powers left, and to renew the power by another herewith sent, that there may bee no fault in us nor in our Son, if that King cannot give us satisfaction in the just things we desire, (which will containe the maine ground of our friendship) in so short a time in which the first power should become inualid.

And yet we must tell you, we have almost with astonishment observed one action of so great Checque and contradiction of our hope of the restitution of the Palatinate, as we know not what construction to make of it. The *Berkshires* in the Palatinate (the prime flower of our sonne in Lawes Revenue which is the maine motive that causeth us thus carefully and speedily to seeke satisfaction, and urge to earnestly till wee may receive it) and which was taken by the Armes and assistance of Spaine, and as wee are informed in the possession of the Spanish Garrison, or under their command, the Country or the revenue thereof (which is a fortifying of their ancient claime) freshly delivered into the hands of the Bishop of Mentz. contrary to the last contract between his Majestie and the Infanta at Bruxelles, and that without forme of justice, upon an old pretence which must imbroyle it the more, especially being to another person then any of these to whom interest or mediation hath beene formerly thought of; These being only the Emperor, Spaine, and the Duke of Bavaria. The consideration of which new difficulties done in the presence, or without the contradiction either of Verdugo, or any other Officer or Minister of the Infanta's, or knowledge given to us, gives us infinitely to thinke, and to finde it requisite to deale clearly and plainly with you, and to charge and require you to deale as plainly with our deare Brother, that we are so much bound in honour, naturall affection, and interest to see our Sonne-in-Law have restitution of his estate and honour; without which effect, wee cannot rest satisfied as you have often heard the Declaration of our minde in that point: the rather, because it would bee a great discouragement to our Son-in-Law (without whom we can doe nothing) and a great disproportion to receive one daughter in joy and contentment, and leave another in teares and sighes. And to the end we may bee assured of the effects, we require you (before you deliver our deere Sonnes power, or move to any contracting of him) that you procure from that King by act, or answer to you under his hand, or by Letters to us, that he will helpe us to the restitution of the Palatinate and dignity by meditation, or other wise assist us, if mediation faile, and within what time the mediation shall determine, and the assistance of armes begin.

The honourable conditions of restitution (we hope) remaine with you. And to shew you how we desire to comply with our deere Brother of Spaine: We shall bee ready to propound good wayes to satisfie the D. of Bavaria, in point of title and honour, and to continue our negotiation for the match of Our Grand-Child (the eldest sonne of our Sonne-in-Law) with the Daughter of the Emperor.

Our Sonne-in-Laws Letters we send you herewith, and because we know his avernesse to our Grand-Childs breeding with the Emperor, as we doe the other parts disaffection to have him bred at the Hagh, (which we cannot wonder at) our own care considered for his breeding in Religion, which cannot well bee provided for there, we shall be ready to proceed to the conclusion of that Treaty: And so soone as the Infanta shall be arrived in our Court, to bring our Grand-child to be bred with our Sonne and her, and in her presence.

NOTE.

And for the temporall articles which are so meanelly presented in those heads you sent us, we forbear to tell you what we thinke of the offers.

And concerning the portion, we absolutely reject both Jewells or yearely revenue (as contrary to the first agreement) and expect the totall summe in Specie, according to such reasonable times as shall be agreed upon. So as we likewise require you punctually to conclude the Temporall Articles before you deliver the power.

At Westminster 13. Novem. 1623. Edm. Conwey.

To this Letter the Earle of Bristol returns this answer.

May

comming into *England*; And his Highnesse will well remember that the *Conde de Olivares* often protested the necessity of having this businesse compounded and settled before the Marriage, saying; otherwise, they might give a Daughter and have a War within three moneths after, if this ground and subject of Quarrell should be still left on foot, The same language he hath ever since held with Sir *Walter Aston* and my selfe, and that it was a firm peace and amity, as much as an allyance which they fought with his Majesty, so that it is not to be doubted, but that this King concluding the Match, resolveth to employ his utmost power for the satisfaction in the restitution of the Prince *Palatine*.

The question now will be, whether the Prince *Palatine*, having Relation to many great Princes that are interested therein (living at a great distance) and being indeed for the condition and nature of the businesse it selfe impossible to be ended, but by a formall Treaty (which of necessity will require great length) whether the conclusion of the Match shall any way depend upon the issue of this businesse, which I conceive to be far from your Majesties Intention, for so the Prince might be long kept unbetrothed, by any avernesse of those that might have particular Interest in the Princes remaining unmarried, or dislike of his Matching with *Spaine*: But that which I understand to be your Majesties ayme, is only to have the conclusion of this Match accompanied with as strong engagements as can be procured from this King, for the joyning with your Majesty, not only in all good offices for the entire Restitution of the Prince *Palatine*, but otherwise if need require of his Majesties assistance. Herein I have these dayes past laboured with all earnestnesse, and procured this Kings publike answer, which I am told is resolved of, and I shall within few dayes have it to send unto Your Majesty, as likewise a private proposition which will bee put into your hand, and shall not faile further to pursue Your Majesties present directions of procuring this Kings declaration in what sort your Majesty may rely upon this Kings assistance in case the Emperour or the Duke of *Bavaria* shall oppose the entire restitution of the Prince *Palatine*; But I conceive it to bee Your Majesties intention, that I should procure here first this Kings peremptory answer, in the whole businesse, and how he will be assistant unto your Majesty, in case of the Emperours, or Duke of *Bavaria*'s avernesse, and that I should send it unto your Majestie and receive againe your answer, before I deliver the powers for the *Desposorios*, the match would thereby if not be hazarded, yet I conceive the *Infanta*'s going at Spring would be rendered altogether impossible; for if upon the arrivall of the Popes approbation, which is hourly expected, the Powers be demanded of me, according to the Princes publike Declaration, and the agreement in the Temporall Articles by which the *Desposorios*, are to be within 10. dayes after the comming of the said approbation, I cannot refuse them but upon some ground. If I allege you Majesties desire of having the *Desposorios* deferred untill Christmas, they know as well as my selfe, that his Highnesse Proxie is then out of date (besides the infringing of the Capitulations) and they will judge it as a great scorne put upon this King, (who ever since the Princes granting of his Powers, hath called himselfe the *Infanta*'s *Desposado*, and to that effect the Prince hath written unto him in some of his Letters:) besides it will be here held a point of great dishonour unto the *Infanta*, if the powers called for by her friends they should be deteyned by the Princes part, and whosoever else may have deserved ill, she certainly hath deserved neither disrespect nor discomforts: Further, upon my refusall to deliver the powers, all preparations which now goe on cheerefully and apace, will be stayed, and there will enter in so much distrust and so many jealousies, that if the maine businesse runne not hazard by them, at least much time will be to cleere them.

I must therefore in discharge of my dutie, tell Your Majestie, that all your businesses here are in a faire way. The match and all that is capitulated therein, they professe punctually to performe: in the businesse of the *Palatinate*, they protest that they infinitely desire and will to the utmost of their powers, endeavour to procure His Majesties satisfaction. The Prince is like to have a most worthy and vertuous La-

die, and who much loveth him, and all things else depending on this match are in a good and a hopefull way.

This is now the present estate of your Majesties affaires as it appeareth unto me and to Sir Walter Aston, with whom I have communicated this dispatch, as I doe all things else concerning your Majesties service: And I must cleerely let your Majesty understand, that I conceive by reteyning of the powers when their King shall call for them, and offering to deferre the *Desponsorios* untill Christmas, that your Majesties buisnesses will runne a great hazard, what by the distastes and distrusts that will be raised here, and what by the art and industry of those which are enemies to the Match, whereof every Court of Christendome hath plenty; That therefore which I presume with all humility to offer unto your Majesty is, that you would be pleased to give mee order with all possible speed. That when the buisnesse shall come cleered from Rome, and that the powers for the Marriage shall bee demanded of mee on the behalfe of this King, that I may deliver them, and no wayes seeke to interrupt or suspend the *Desponsorios*, but assist and help to a perfect conclusion of the match. And that for the buisnesse of the *Palatinate*, I continue my earnest and faithfull endeavours to engage this King as farre as shall be possible, both for the doing of all good Offices for the Prince *Palatines* entire restitution, as likewise for this Kings Declaration of assistance in case the Emperor or Duke of *Bavaria* shall oppose the said restitution. Herein I will not faile to use all possible means, and I conceive the dispatch of the match will be a good pawn in the buisnesse, and the help and assistance which the Princes being once betroathed would be able to give in this Court to all Your Majesties buisnesses, would be of good consideration. So fearing I have already too far presumed upon Your Majesties patience, I humbly crave Your Majesties pardon, and recommend you to the holy protection of God, Resting

Your Majesties most humble Subject,
and, Servant,

Madrid: 24. Octo. 1623.

B.R.I.S.T.O.L.L.

About the beginning of December the Dispensation from the new Pope arrived at Madrid from Rome; whereupon the King of Spaine, to satisfie his Oath made to the Prince of Wales before his departure, (to make the espousalls within tenne dayes after the arrivall of the dispensation, caused Bonfires of joy to be made throughout all Spaine on the 9th of Decem. intending that on this day the affiances should be made at Madrid, with the magnificence of the Court there. All things seemed then disposed to a conclusion of this great buisnesse which had been in treaty eight or nine yeares. But the Princes forementioned suspension of the procuration, and the demand of those new conditions arriving in Spaine, the newes of them seemed very strange and unreasonable. To which the King of Spaine, promising to give a resolution in due time, signified to the Earle of Bristol, that he should in the meane time present no more Letters to the Infanta nor demand any more audience, and that from thenceforth, none should stile the Infanta, Princessse of England, or Wales. Vpon this there was a resolution taken by our Lords of the Councell to breake both the Match and Treaty with Spaine and to gaine the Palatinate and Electorship by force of Armes; to which end a Parliament was summoned at London to begin, Feb. 12. 1623. but put off till Febr. 16. On Febr. 24. The Lord Duke of Buckingham made a large Relation of the whole Negotiation with Spain about the Princes Marriage, to both Houses of Parliament, recorded in the Lords Journall & enrolled in the * Rolls; wherein most of the premises are related to the full, and some of them concealed: which the dissent Author of the Answer to the Royall Popish Favourite (who so much undervalues the French Mercury, and other histories who have written any thing of this Match,) may peruse at his leisure to satisfie his judgement, Conscience in the verity of the premises, and of this Mercury to.

* Mercur
Fran. Tom 9.
An. 1624. p.
34, 35, 36, 37.

* Prima pars
Pet: 21. lacc
n: 21.
* Page 34, 44.

The Parliament upon this relation advised the King to breake off the Spanish treaty, and to proclaime an open warre with Spaine for recovery of the Palatinate and defence of the protestant Religion: whereupon the King on the 23. of February, declared to a Committee of Parliament appointed for that purpose; *That he would send a Messenger presently into Spaine, to signifie to that King, that his Parliament advised him to breake off the Treaties of the March and the Palatinate, and to give his reasons of it, and so proceed to recover the Palatinate as he might.* Hereupon Bonfires were made in the City by the forwardnesse of the people, for joy that we should breake with Spaine.

* See 21. Jac.
c. 32. 33.

In this Parliament to maintaine the war in which they had engaged the King, * the Clergy granted him four intire Subsidies of foure shillings the pound: and the Temporality three intire Subsidies, and three fiftens and tenths; The end of granting them is expressed in the Prologue of the Temporalities Act of Grant.

* 21. Jac c. 33

MO S T * Gracious Sovereigne, we your Majesties most humble, faithfull and loving Subjects, by your Royall Authority now Assembled in your High Court of Parliament, having entred into serious and due consideration of the weighty and most important causes, which at this time more then at any other time heretofore, doe presse your Majesty to a much greater expence and charge then your owne Treasure alone can at this present support and maintaine, and likewise of the injuries and indignities, which have beene lately offered to your Majesty and your Children, under colour, and during the time of the *Treaties for the Marriage with Spaine, and the restitution of the Palatinate*, which in this Parliament have beene clearely discovered and layde open unto us; and withall what humble advice with one consent and voyce, we have given unto your Majesty to dissolve those Treaties, which your Majesty hath beene graciously pleased (to our exceeding joy and comfort) fully to yeeld unto, and accordingly have made your publique declaration for the reall and utter dissolution of them, by meanes whereof your Majesty may happily be engaged in a suddain Warre. Wee in all humbleness most ready and willing to give unto your Majesty and the whole world an ample testimony of our dutifull affections, and sincere intentions to assist You therein, for the maintenance of that Warre that may hereafter ensue, and more particularly for the defence of this your Realme of England, the securing of your Kingdome of Ireland, the assistance of your Neighbours, the States of the united Provinces, and other your Majesties Friends, and Allies, and for the setting forth of your Royall Navy, we have resolved to give for the present the greatest ayde which ever was granted in Parliament, to be levied in so short a time, &c.

NOTE.

In this Parliament the Commons presented a sharpe Petition to the Lords against Popish, Recusants, desiring the Lords to joyne with them in it to the King; of which King James having notice, writ with his owne hand this following letter to Secretary Conway, which I have truly extracted out of the very originall.

I doubt not but you have heard what a stinging Petition against the Papists, the lower House have sent to the higher House this day, that they might joyntly present it unto me: ye know my firme resolution, not to make this a Warre of Religion. And seeing I would be loath to be Connycarched by my people, I pray you stay the Post that is going to Spaine, till I meet with my Son, who will be here to morrow morning, do it upon pretext of some more letters ye are to send by him; and if he should be gone, hasten after him to stay him upon some such pretext, and let none living know of this, as ye love me: and before two in the afternoone to morrow you shall with out faile heare from me: Farwell.

James R.

* 3 April
1624.

This Petition was sent up to the Lords (as appears by their * Journall Booke) upon the 3. of April 1624. the Coppy whereof is therein recorded in forme following.

Die

Die Luna quinto Aprilis 1624.

The Petion against Popish Reculants which the Commons desire to be presented unto his Majesty, and that the Lords joyne with them therein.

May it please your most Excellent Majesty.

VVE your Majesties most humble and loyall Subjects the Lords & Commons in this present Parliament assembled, having to our singular comfort received your Princely resolution upon our humble Petition to dissolve the two treaties of the March and of the Pallatinate, and having on our parts with all alacrity and readinesse humbly offered our assistance to your Majesty to maintaine the Warre, which may insue there upon, yet with all sencibly finding what seditious and Traiterous positions those Incendiaries of Rome, and professed Engines of Spaine, the Priests and Jesuits, insuse into your naturall borne Subjects, what numbers they have seduced, and doe dayly seduce to make their dependance on the Pope of Rome, and King of Spaine, contrary to their Allegiance to your Majesty their Leige Lord: what daily resort of Priests and Jesuites into your Kingdomes, what concourse of Popish Reculants much more then usuall is now in and about the City of London, what boldnesse, yea what insolency they have discovered, out of the opinion conceived of their forraigne patronage, what publique resort to Masses and other exercises of the Popish Religion in the Houses of forraigne Ambassadors, there is daily, to the great griefe and offence of your good Subjects; what great preparations are made in Spaine fit for an Invasion, the bent whereof is as probable to bee upon some part of Your Majesties Dominions, as upon any other place; what encouragement that may bee to your Enemies, and the Enemies of Your Crown to have a party, or but the opinion of a party within Your Kingdomes, who do daily increase and combine themselves together for that purpose; What dishartning of your good and loving Subjects, when they shall see more cause of feare from their false hearted Country-men at home, then from their professed adversaries abroad, what apparent dangers by Gods providence and Your Majesties wisdom and goodnesse they have very lately escaped, which the longer continuance of those treaties upon such unfitting conditions, fomented by your owne ill affected Subjects, would surely have drawne upon Your Majesty and Your State; doe in all humblenesse offer to your sacred Majestie these their humble petitions following.

1. That all Jesuites and Semminary Priests, and all others having taken Orders by any authority derived from the Sea of Rome, may by Your Majesties Proclamation be commanded forthwith to depart out of this Realme, and all other Your Highnesse Dominions, and neither they nor any other to returne or come hither againe upon perrill of the severest penaltie of the Lawes now in force against them; And that all your Majesties Subjects may hereby also be admonished, not to receive, entertaine comfort or conceale any of that viperous brood upon the penalties and forfeitures which by the Lawes may be imposed upon them.

2. That your Majesty would be pleased to give streight and speedy charge to the Justices of Peace in all parts of this Kingdome, that (according to the Lawes in that behalfe made, and the orders taken by Your Majesties Privie Councell heretofore for policie of State) they doe take from all Popish Reculants legally convicted, or justly suspected; All such Armor, Gunpowder and Munition of any kinde, as any of them have either in their owne hands, or in the hands of any other for them, and to see the same safely kept, and disposed according to the Law, leaving for the necessary defence of their House and persons, so much as by the Law is prescribed.

3. That Your Majestie will please to command all popish Reculants and all others, who by any Law or Statute are prohibited to come to the Kings Court, forthwith under paine of your heavey displeasure, and severe execution of your Lawes against them, to retire themselves, their wives and families from or about London, to their severall dwellings or places, by your Lawes appointed and there to remaine confine within five myles of their dwelling places, according to the Lawes of this your Realme And

NOTE.

NOTE.

for

for that purpose to discharge all by-past Lycences granted unto them for their repaire hither. And that they presume not any time hereafter to repaire to *London*, or within tenne myles of *London*, or to the Kings Court, or to the Princes Court wheresoever.

4. That Your Majesty would forbid and retrain the great resort and concourse of your owne Subjects for the hearing of Masse, or other exercise of the Romish Religion to the houies of Forreigne Ambassadors, or Agents residing here, for the service of their severall Princes or States.

5. That where of late in severall Countreies in this Realme, some have bin trusted in the places of Lord Leiutenants, deputies Leiutenants, Commissioners of Oyer and Terminer, Justices of Peace, and Captaines in their Countreies, which are either popish Recusants or non-Communicants by the space of a yeare now last past, or which do not usually resort to the Church to Divine service, and can bring no good certificat thereof, that your Majesty would be pleased to discharge them from those places of trust, by which they have that power in the Country where they live, as is not fit to be put into the hands of persons so affected.

6. That your Majesty would be pleased generally to put the Lawes in due execution which are made and stand in force against Popish Recusants, and that all your Judges, Justices and Miniisters of Justice to whose care these things are Committed may by your Majesties Proclamation be Commanded to doe their duty therein.

7. That seeing we are thus happily delivered from that danger which those Treaties now dissolved, and that use which your * ill affected Subjects made thereof, would certainly have drawne upon us, and cannot but foresee and feare, least the like may heereafter happen, which would inevitably, bring such perill to your Majesties Kingdomes. We are most humble suiters to your Gracious Majesty to secure the hearts of your good Subjects by the engagement of your Royall word unto them, that upon no occasion of Marriage, or Treaty, or other request in that behalfe from any foraign Prince or state whatsoever, you will take off, or slacken the execution of your Lawes against the Popish Recusants.

To which our humble Perions proceeding from our most Loyall and dutifull affections towards your Majesty, our care of our Countreies, good, and our confident perswasion; that this will much advance the Glory of Almighty God, the everlasting honour of your Majesty, the safety of your Kingdome, and the encouragment of all your good Subjects: We do most humbly beseech your Majesty to vouchsafe a gracious Answer.

This Petition of the Commons, after some debate and Conference between both Houses was reduced to this ensuing forme, and so presented to King *James*.

* *Die Sabbathi (viz.) decimo die Aprilis 1624.*

See the Lords
parchment
Journall on
this day.

May it please your most excellent Majesty
IT having pleased you, upon our humble suit and advise, to dissolve both the Treaties to our great joy and comfort.

We your Majesties most faithfull and Loyall Subjects the Lords and Commons Assembled in Parliament, doe in all humbleness offer unto your sacred Majesty these two Petitions following.

1. That for the more safety of your Realmes, and better keeping your Subjects in their due obedience, and other important reasons of state, your Majesty would be pleased by some such course as your Majesty shall thinke fit, to give present order, that all the Lawes be put in due execution, which have beene made, and do stand in force against Jesuits, Semenary Priests, and all others having taken orders by Authority derived from the Sea of *Rome*, and generally against all Popish Recusants. And as for disarming, that it may be according to the Lawes, and according to former Acts and directions of state in that Case, and yet that it may appeare to all the world, the favour and clemency your Majesty useth towards all your Subjects of what condition whatsoever. And to the intent the Jesuits and Priests now in the Realme may not pretend to be surpris'd; That a speedy and certaine day may be perfixed by your Majesties Proclamation, before which day they shall depart out of this

this Realme, and all other your highnesse Dominions, and neither they nor any other to returne or come hither againe, upon perill of the severest penalties of the lawes now in force against them. And that all your Majesties Subjects may thereby also be admonished, not to receive, entertaine, comfort, conceale any of them, upon the penalties and forfeitures which by the lawes may be imposed on them.

Secondly, seeing we are thus happily delivered from that danger which those Treaties now dissolved, and that use which your ill affected Subjects made thereof, would certainly have drawne upon us; and yet cannot but foresee and feare, least the like may hereafter happen, which would inevitably bring such perill upon your Majesties Kingdomes: We are most humble Sutors to your gracious Majesty, to secure the hearts of your good Subjects by the engagement of your royall word unto them; that upon no occasion of marriage or treaty, or other request in that behalfe from any forreigne Prince or State whatsoever, you will take away or slacken the execution of your lawes against Jesuits, Priests and popish Recusants.

To which our humble Petitions, proceeding from our most loyall and dutifull affections towards your Majesty, our care of our Countries good, and our owne confident perswasion, that these will much advance the glory of Almighty God, the everlasting honour of your Majesty, the safety of your Kingdomes, and the encouragement of all your good Subjects; we doe most humbly beseech your Majesty to vouchsafe a gracious answer.

This Petition being presented to the King by a Committee of both Houses; the King after some deliberation, gave this Answer to it; *That the lawes against Jesuits, and popish Recusants, should be put in due execution from thenceforth, &c.* Whereupon the Commons soone after sent another Petition to the Lords (desiring their concurrence with them in presenting it to his Majesty) for removing popish Recusants, and those whose Wives were Papists, from offices of trust which by law they were disabled to execute, which the Lords taking into consideration. It was after reported to the Lords, and entred in their Journall in this manner.

Die Jovis (viz) vicesimo die Maij, 1624.

The Lord Arch.bishop of Canterbury reported, that at the meeting this day with the Commons, they presented an humble Petition to the King, desiring this House to joyn with them (therein as heretofore.)

The which Petition was read in hæc verba, viz.

WE your Majesties loyall and faithfull Subjects, the Commons (by your royall Authority and commandement called to, and Assembled in this present Parliament, out of all the parts of your Kingdome of England and Dominion of Wales) doe in all humility give your Majesty most humble thanks, that you have so religiously and openly published, that your lawes and acts of State against popish Recusants shall be put in due execution; and now we hold it our bounden duty (amongst other important affaires of your Realme) to informe your Majesty of the growth of this dangerous sort of people in this your Kingdome, and of their insolency and boldnesse in all the parts thereof, insomuch as many of them (unknowne to your Majesty) have crept into offices and places of government and authority under you, to the disheartning of you good Subjects, and contrary to your Majesties lawes and acts of State, whose names (in discharge of our allegiance and duty without respect of persons) we in all humbleness present to your Majesty, &c.

Now in consideration of the great countenance hereby given unto popery, the great griefe and offence to all your best affected, and true and loving subjects. the apparant danger of the whole Kingdom, by putting the power of Arms into such mens hands, as by former acts of your Majesties counsell, are adjudged persons justly to be suspected, and fit themselves to be disarmed; your sayd royall and faithfull subjects doe most humbly

humbly beseech your Majesty, graciously to vouchsafe, that the sayd Lords and Gentlemen hereunder named for this important reason, and for the greater safety of your Majesty, and of this your Realme, and dominion, may be removed from all your Majesties commissions of great charge and trust, commissions of Lientenancy, Oyer and Terminer, and of the peace, and from all other offices and places of trust:



The names of all such persons as are certified to have places of charge or trust in their severall Counties, and are themselves Popish Recusants or Non-communicants, that have given overt suspicion of their ill affection in Religion, or that are reported or suspected so to be.

THe right Honourable *Francis Earle of Rutland*, is certified to be Lord Lieutenant in the County of *Lincolne*, and a Commissioner of the peace, and *Custos Rotulorum* in the County of *Northampton*, and a Commissioner of the peace, and of Oyer and Terminer in *Yorke-shire*, and in other counties, and that he and his wife are suspected to be popish recusants.

The right honourable, the *Earle of Castlehaven* is certified to be a Commissioner of the peace, and of Oyer and Terminer in *Wiltshire*, and to be suspected to be ill affected in religion, and that some of his family either are or lately were recusants.

Sir Thomas Compton Knight, is certified to be a Commissioner of the peace, and of Oyer and Terminer in *Warwickshire*, and he and the Countesse his wife are certified by fame, to be suspected to be popish recusants.

The right honourable *Henry Lord Herbert* is certified to be a Commissioner of the peace in *Monmouthshire*, and to favour the popish religion, and to forbear the Church.

The right honourable the *Lord Viscount Colchester* is certified to be a Commissioner of the peace in *Essex*, and (by report) that he commeth not to the Church, nor receiveth the communion.

The right honourable the *Lord Peter* is certified to be a commissioner of the peace in *Essex*, and (by report) that he commeth not to the church, nor receiveth the communion, and that his wife and family are generally suspected to be popish recusants.

The right honourable *Henry Lord Morley*, is certified to be a commissioner of the peace in *Lancashire*, and to be suspected to be a popish recusant.

The right honourable the *Lord Windsor* is certified to be a commissioner of the peace in *Buckinghamshire*, and (by common fame) to be a popish recusant.

The right honourable *William Lord Eyre* is certified to be a Justice of the peace in the county of *Durham*, and to be a popish recusant convicted.

The right honourable the *Lord Wooten* is certified to be in place of authority in *Kent*, and that he and his wife doe forbear the church, and are justly suspected to affect the Roman religion.

The right honourable the *Lord Teynham* is certified to be a commissioner of the peace in *Kent*, and (by common report) to be a popish recusant.

The right honourable the *Lord Scroope* is certified to be a Lord Lieutenant of the Counties of *Yorke*, of the City of *Yorke*, and of *Kingston upon Hall*, and to be a Commissioner of the peace, and of Oyer and Terminer in the said Counties, and in sundry other Counties, and that his Lordship hath not received the Communion once every yeere in the last three or foure yeeres, and that his Lordship hath given overt suspicion of his ill affection in Religion, by his departure from the Communion on sundry dayes, when his Majesties Counsell there resident, and others of the Congregation staid behind to receive the same, sometimes on Easter-day, and sometimes on the fifth day

day of November; and it is testified by witnesse, that the Lord Archbishops grace of *Yorke*, and others of his Majesties Counsell there resident were present. did receive the Communion once when his Lordship went away; and that his Lordship doth rarely repaire to the Church on Sundayes and Holy-dayes in the forenoon. and not above twice to the afternoone Sermons (whereunto former Lord Presidents with his Majesties Counsell there residing, have frequently repaired, and whereunto the Counsell now there resident doe ordinarily repaire) since he was made Lord President; whereof notice is taken by all his Majesties Subjects in those parts, to the great grieve of such as are truly affected in Religion.

Sir *William Courtney* Knight, is certified to be a Commissioner of the peace, and a Deputy Lieutenant in *Devonshire*, and is a Colonell of a thousand trained Souldiers of that County, and is Vice-Warden of the Stanneries, and that he is suspected to be a popish Recusant, and that he hath not received the Communion in many yeeres last past.

Sir *Thomas Brudenell* Knight, is certified to be a Commissioner of the peace, and a deputy Lieutenant in *Northamptonshire*, and that he is a suspected Recusant.

Sir *Thomas Somerset* is certified to be a Commissioner, of Oyer, and Terminet in *Glostershire*, and that he is reported to be a Popish Recusant.

Sir *Gilbert Ireland* Knight, and *Richard Sherborne* and *John Fleming* Esquires, are certified to be Commissioners of the peace in *Lancashire*, and that they are suspected to be Popish Recusants.

Sir *Francis Stoners* Knight, is certified to be a Justice of the peace, or a Deputy Lieutenant, or both, in *Oxfordshire*, and to be a Popish Recusant.

Sir *Anthony Browne* Knight, is certified to be a Commissioner of the peace in the County of *Norfolke*, and that he is reported to be a popish Recusant.

Sir *Francis Howard* Knight, is certified to be a Justice of the peace, and *Custos Rotulorum* in *Surrey*, and is suspected to be ill affected in Religion.

Sir *William Powell* Knight, is certified to be a Justice of the peace in *Staffordshire*, and to be a Non-communicant, and that his Wife commeth not to Church.

Sir *Francis Lacon* Knight, is certified to be a Justice of the peace in *Shropshire*, and that he is suspected to be a popish Recusant.

Sir *Lewis Lewkner* Knight, is certified to be a Commissioner of the peace in *Middlesex*, and that he and his Wife are justly suspected to be popish Recusants.

Sir *William Ambercy* Knight, is certified to be a Commissioner of the peace in *Brecknockeshire*, and that he is reported to be a popish Recusant.

William Iennison Esquire, is certified to be a Commissioner of the peace in *Newcastle upon Tyne*, and that he is suspected to be popish and backwasd in Religion.

Sir *John Gage* and Sir *John Shelley* Baronets, and *John Thecher* Esquire, are certified to be Commissioners of the Sewers in the County of *Sussex*, and to be knowne Papists.

Sir *Henry Carvell* is certified to be a Captaine of a Foot-band in the Connty of *Norfolke*, and to be a Commissioner of Sewers, and that he is reported to be a popish Recusant.

Sir *Thomas Wiseman* Knight, sonne of Sir *Thomas Wiseman* Knight, that is a Justice of peace, is certified to be a Captaine of a Foot-band in *Essex*, and to be a professed Papist.

Sir *Thomas Gerard* Knight, is certified to be a Captaine of a Company of the Freehold-band in *Lancashire*, and that he is suspected to be a popish Recusant.

Sir *John Philpot* Knight, is certified to be a Captaine of a foot Company in *Hampshire*, and that he, and his wife, and his Children are Papists.

Sir *Thomas Russell* Knight, is one of the Deputy Lieutenants, and a Justice of the peace within the County of *Worcester*, and is justly suspected to be a Papist.

The names of all such Persons as are certified to be in places of charge or trust in their severall Counties, and that have Wives, Children or Servants that are popish Recusants or Non-communicants, or that are suspected so to be.

Sir Henry Beddingfield Knight, is certified to be a Commissioner of the peace, and Deputy Lieutenant in *Norfolke*, and Captaine of the Lances there, and that his Wife and children are reported to be popish Recusants.

Sir William VVrey Knight, is certified to be a Deputy Lieutenant in *Cornwall*, and that his wife is a Recusant.

Sir John Conway Knight, is certified to be a Commissioner of the peace, and one of the Deputy Lieutenants in *Flintshire*, and that his wife is held to be a popish Recusant.

Sir Charles Jones Knight, and *William Jones* Esquire, are certified to be Commissioners of the peace, and two Deputy Lieutenants in *Monmouthshire*, and that their wives are popish recusants.

Sir Ralph Conyers Knight, is certified to be a Commissioner of the peace, and a Deputy Lieutenant in the Bishoprick of *Durham*, and that his wife is generally reported to be a popish recusant.

Sir Thomas Lamplough Knight, is certified to be a Commissioner of the peace in *Cumberland*, and that his wife is a recusant.

Sir Thomas Savage Knight and Baronet, is certified to be a Commissioner of the peace in *Cheshire*, and that his wife is suspected to be a recusant; and by common fame is reported that the said *Sir Thomas Savage* is a Deputy Lieutenant there, and that he is suspected to be a Non-communicant, and his children are suspected to be recusants.

Sir William Moseley Knight is certified to be a Commissioner of the peace in *Cheshire*, and that his wife is a recusant.

Sir Hugh Biston Knight, is certified to be a Commissioner of the peace in *Cheshire*, and that his daughter and heire apparant is a recusant.

Sir Thomas Riddall Knight, is certified to be a Commissioner of the peace in the Bishoprick of *Durham*, and that his wife is a popish recusant.

Master Thomas Petre Esq. brother of the Lord *Petre*, is certified to be a Commissioner of the peace in *Essex*, and that his wife and family are suspected to be recusants.

Sir Marmaduke Wyvell Knight and Baronet, is certified to be a Commissioner of Oyer and Terminer, and lately made one of his Majesties Counsell in the North, and that his wife is a popish recusant convicted.

Sir John Tomshend Knight, is certified to be a Commissioner of the peace in the County of *Hereford*, and that his wife is reported to be a Papist.

Sir William Norris Knight, is certified to be a Justice of the peace in *Lancashire*, and that he hath a daughter that is a recusant, and that he hath two sonnes that doe serve under the Arch-dutcheffe.

James Anderson Esquire, is certified to be a Justice of the peace in *Lancashire*, and that his wife and his eldest sonne and Heire apparent are recusants.

Edward Morgan and *George Wilbourne* Esquires, are certified to be Commissioners of the peace in *Monmouthshire*, and that their wives are recusants.

Sir Phillip Knevit Baronet, is certified to be a Justice of the peace in *Norfolke*, and that his wife is a recusant.

Sir John Tasbrough Knight, and *Anthony Hubbard* Esquire, are certified to be Commissioners of the peace in *Norfolke*, and that their wives are reported to be recusants, and *Master Hubbards* children are popishly educated.

Sir William Selby Knight, and *Cutbert Heron* Esquire, are certified to be commissioners of the peace in *Northumberland*, and that their wives are recusants.

Sir Richard Tichborne Knight, is certified to be a commissioner of the peace in *Hampshire*, and that his wife is of the popish religion.

Sir

Sir John Hall Knight, is certified to be a commissioner of the peace in *Hampshire*, and that his wife and her daughter are Papists.

Sir George Perkins Knight, Robert Pearpoint, and Fulke Cartwright Esquires, are certified to be commissioners of the peace in the county of *Nottingham*, and that their wives are thought to be recusants.

Thomas Oarly Esquire, is certified to be a commissioner of the peace in *Shropshire*, and Richard Gibbins Gent. to be crowner there, and that their wives be recusants.

Rice Williams esquire, is certified to be a commissioner of the peace in *Cardiganshire*, and that his wife is a popish recusant convicted.

Sir Thomas Penrodduck Knight, is certified to be a commissioner of the peace in *Middlesex*, and that his wife is a recusant.

Valentine Sanders esquire, is certified to be a commissioner of the peace in *Middlesex* and that his eldest sonne is a recusant.

Thomas Rookell esquire, is certified to be a commissioner of the peace in *Saint Edmunds Berry* in *Suffolke*, and that his eldest sonne is reported to be a popish recusant.

Anthony Thorold Esquire, is certified to be a commissioner of the peace in *Lincolnshire*, and that he hath a sonne that is suspected to be a popish recusant.

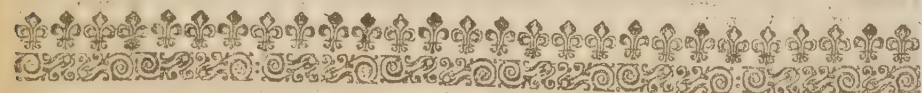
Sir Nicholas Sanders Knight, is certified to be a commissioner of the peace in *Surrey* and his wife is suspected to be a popish recusant.

Which Petition being read, the House did defere the debate thereof at this time; for that the day was farre spent.

And answer was given to the commons (who attended for the same in the paynted chamber) that the Lords will send them an answer of this Petition hereafter, when they are resolved thereof.

Whether any of these were displaced upon this Petition, I find not in any Memorials, it being certain some of them were not, but continued still in these offices of trust.

And thus I have given the World a full account of the unhappy, tedious *Spanish Treaty*, of the advantages the Pope and Papists made thereof, and its finall rupture in and by the Parliament. I shall now proceed to the *French* which was short and more succesfull.



THe *Spanish match* being thus at last dissolved (after so long a treaty) in discontent and warre, the popish party here and beyond the seas, endeavouring to make good the ground, liberty and immunities they had gotten by the former treaty of Marriage, and to carry on their forementioned designe, by the same prevailing meanes, engaged the King and Prince in a new marriage-parley with France, to the Lady *Henrietta Maria* Sister to the French King, a Princessse of the Roman Religion. To what end this Marriage was propounded by the Roman party, is evident by this observable passage of *le Maistre*, (a French Author & Sorbon Priest) in his *Instauratio antiquæ Episcoporum Principatus*, printed at Paris, Cum Privilegio, Anno 1633. & dedicated to Cardinal *Richelieu*. l. 2. c. 15. p. 273, 274. where thus he writes with reference to the English Roman affaires, anno 1624. What then forbids the same things, and others which are of greater pompe in England, especially where the heat of persecutions hath ceased, through the dignity of a *Unanimous King*, and most invincible Prince, by the *Borbonian Starre* which hangs over these countries in a most deare Wife: by which Starres, as by the *Dioscory*, peradventure the tempest of persecution will in time be appeased, and the generous Prince may acknowledge the same Christ, under whom his Ancestors have so gloriously triumphed, &c.

This Match was soone concluded in the life of King James, the Articles concerning Religion being the same almost verbatim with those formerly agreed on in the *Spanish treaty*, and so easily condescended to without much debate; I shall give you the

NOTE

Rot. Tractationis & Ratificationis Matrimonii inter Dom. Carolum Regem & Dom. Henr. Mariam Sororem Regis Franc. 1. Car. 1. in the Rois.

(b) In the
Rolls.
(c) Tom. 10.
An. 1625. p.
480, Sec. &
Tom. 11. p.
353. where
the whole so-
lemnity of the
Marriage is
related.

principle of them relating onely to Religion, out of the (b) *Record it selfe*, the printed (c) *French Mercury*, and Manuscript Copies as they were subscribed and signed by the Earles of Carlile and Holland, extraordinary Ambassadors and Commissioners for the King and Prince on the one side, and by the French Commissioners on the other side; and after that signed, sealed, and iworne to by King James, Prince Charles, and the French King, the 10. of Novemb. 1624. and upon King James his death re-signed, revealed, and re-iworne to by King Charles and the French King, the 8. of May 1625. after the French account.

(d) In the
enjoyment of
Roman Reli-
gion. See
the Edition, p.
479.

NOTE.

‘ I **T**hat the above named the Lords Ambassadors have promised, and doe promise for and on the behalf of his Majesty of great Brittain, now reigning, that he shall take to Marriage, for his deare Consort and Wife, the Lady Henrietta Maria Daugh-ter of France, and sister to his foresaid most Excellent Majesty, in person, or otherwise by Proxy, so soone as conveniently the same may be done, and that also the foresaid Lady at the good pleasure and consent of his foresaid Christian Majesty, and of the Queene her Mother, after his FORESAID MAJESTY HATH OBTAINED A (d) DISPENSATION FROM THE POPE, doth promise to take for her deare Consort and Husband, Charles the first, King of great Brittain, and according to the foresaid reciprocal promise, he shall be affianced and contracted after the manner accustomed in the CATHOLIKE AND ROMISH CHURCH.

‘ 7. It is likewise agreed upon, that the said Lady and all her Followers, as also the Children which shall be borne to her Officers, shall have free exercise of the Catholike Apostolical and Roman Religion; and to that end the foresaid Lady shall have a Chappell in each of the Kings Palaces or Houses, or in any other place of his Majesty of great Brittain, where he shall chance to come and continue; and that the foresaid Chappell shall be adorned and decked as it is fitting; and that the keeping thereof shall be committed to whom it shall please the said Lady to appoint, in which the preaching of Gods Word, and the Administration of the Sacraments, the MASSE and all other Offices shall be freely and solemnly done, according to the use of the Romish Church; yea, all Indulgences and Jubilees which the said Lady shall obtaine or get from THE POPE, may be done and executed there. There shall be also one Church-yard in the City of London, given and appointed to interre and bury such of her said Ladyships followers, as shall chance to depart this life, according to the manner and form of the Church of Rome; and that shall be modestly done: the which Church-yard shall be in such sort inclosed or walled about, that no person shall come therein to profane the same.

‘ 8. It is also agreed upon, that the sayd LADY SHALL HAVE A BISHOP FOR HER GREAT ALMONER, who shall have all Jurisdiction and necessary authority for all matters and causes concerning Religion, and who shall proceed against the Ecclesiasticall persons which shall be under his charge, according to the Canons constituted and appointed.

‘ 9. And if it shall at any time happen, that any secular Court shall take any of the foresaid Priests into their power, by reason of any crime or offence against the State by him committed or done, and doe find him to be guilty thereof, yet shall the said Court send him back to the said Bishop, with the Informations which they find by him, because the said Priest is privileged from their power; and the said Bishop when he shall understand and know so much, shall degrade the said Priest, and afterwards send him back unto the foresaid secular Court to do justice upon him. And for all kind of other faults, the foresaid Priests shall be sent to the Bishop, to the end that he may proceed against them according to the Canons in that case provided, and in the absence or sicknesse of the said Bishop, the Priest which is by him appointed to be his great Vicar, shall have the same power and authority.

‘ 10. It is likewise agreed upon, that the said Lady shall have 28 PRIESTS, or Ecclesiasticall persons in her house, comprehending therein her Almoner and Chaplaines,

NOTE.

to serve and keep the foresaid Chappell according as they are appointed: and if any of them be a regular or canonical person, living under more prescript rules then the rest, yet he may hold and keep his habit.

Also the KING OF GREAT BRITTAINE is by OATH BOUND NOT TO ENDEAVOUR BY ANY MEANS AT ALL TO HAVE HIS SAID QUEEN TO RENOUNCE THE CATHOLIKE APOSTOLIKE AND ROMISH RELIGION, NOR COMPELL HER TO DOE ANY THING WHATSOEVER THAT IS CONTRARY TO THE SAME RELIGION.

II. The said Queens house shall be maintained with so much Dignity, and with so great a number of Officers as ever any had that was Queen of England; all the household servants which the said Lady shall carry into England, shall be Priests, catholikes, and French by birth, and chosen and appointed by his most christian Majesty; And if it happen that any of them dye, or that the foresaid Lady shall be willing to charge her said servants, then Shee will take in their steads other Papists catholikes, French or English; alwayes provided that his Majesty of great Brittain consent thereunto.

16. The children which shall by reason of the said inter-marriage, be born and live, shall be nursed and brought up neere unto the said Lady and Queene, from the time of their birth, untill they come to the age of fourteen yeers.

Besides these generall Articles of the Match, the (a) French Mercury informes us of these particular ones concluded and agreed on in favour of the Roman Catholikes; the same in substance with those of Spaine, forementioned (as Master James Howell himselfe confesseth) the heads whereof were three.

1. The first touching the Catholikes, as well Ecclesiasticks as secular, imprisoned since the last Proclamation (upon the Parliaments forementioned Petition and breach with Spaine) that they should all be set at liberty.

2. The second to this effect, That the English Catholikes should be no more searched after (or molested) for their Religion.

3. The third, that the goods of the Catholikes as well Ecclesiasticks as secular, that were seized on since the last Proclamation published against them, should be restored to them.

Upon the 1. of May 1623. after our English computation, the marriage between the King and Queen was celebrated at Paris. The 4. of May (but three dayes after the marriage, and scarce six weeks after the descent of the Crowne to his Majesty) the King in pursuance of these Articles, granted this speciall pardon to no lesse then twenty severall Priests and Jesuits therein named, of all offences by them committed against any lawes and statutes then in force against any Priests, Jesuits, or popish recusants; on which I desire the namelesse, incredulous (b) Author of the Answer to the Royall Popish Favourite (who will neither credit the French Mercury, nor the Records themselves, that there were any such Articles as are fore mentioned, but rejects them as Forgeries, without any colour or ground of reason: but a pretended royall prosecution against Papists, at the Parliaments importunity onely, which was never reall or cordiall) to chew the cuddeupon; which, because he shall not deny, he may peruse and view at his leisure in the Records at the Rolls, Patent. 4. pars. 10. Caroli Regis Numero 12.

Ergo, there is little hopes of her conversion to our Religion; Shee taking no such oath on the contrary part, not to endeavour to seduce the King.

(a) Proclamation of Parliaments, Tom. 10. p. 487.

(b) Pag. 46, 47.

REX omnibus ad quos, &c. Salutem. Sciatis quod Nos pietate moti, de Gracia Nostra speciali ac ex certa scientia & mero motu Nostris, pardonavimus, remissimus & Relaxavimus, ac per presentes pro Nobis, heredibus & Successoribus Nostris pardonamus, remittimus & Relaxamus Joanni Piercy Clerico. Henrico Hopkins Rico. Bapthorpe Clerico. Benjam. Medcalfe Clerico. Thomæ Mushe, Thomæ Cudworth, Christophero Ibotson, Willielmo Brooksby Clerico, Christophero Clough, Tebie Clay, Rico. Robinson Clerico. Edwardo Ditchfield Clerico. Joanni Melling, Willielmo Nayler, Jacobo Eckerfall, Richardo Whaley, Laurentio Lanthaw, Rico. Sharrocke, Rico. Gill & Willielmo Berrey, quocun-

NOTE

que nomine vel cognomine aut additione nominis vel cognominis, dignitatis, Artis professionis, misterij, Loci vel Locorum idem Joannes Piercy, Henricus Hopkins Ricus. Bapthorpe, Brianus, Medcalfe, Thomas Mush, Thomas Cudworth, Christopherus Ibotson, Willielmus Brooksby, Christopherus Clough, Tobias Clay, Richardus Robinson. Edwardus Ditchfield, Joannes Melling, Willielmus Nayler, Jacobus Eckerfall, Richardus Whaley, Laurentius Lanshaw, Richardus Sharrocke, Richardus Gill & Willielmus Berry sciantur, cenceantur aut nuncupantur, aut nuper sciebantur, censebantur aut nuncupabantur, aut eorum aliquis, Sciatur, censeatur aut nuncupatur, aut nuper sciebatur, censebatur aut nuncupabitur, ac eorum cuilibet omnes & singulas prodictiones, proditorias offensiones misprisiones prodictionum, felonias & offensiones & Malefacta Felonica quacunque per ipsos aut eorum aliquem sive aliquos per se solum, sive cum aliqua alia persona, sive aliquibus alijs personis quibuscunque, contra formam Statuti in Parlamento Dominae Elizabethae nuper Reginae Angliae anno Regni sui viceffimo tertio fact. & edit; intitulat, An act to retaine the Queenes Majesties Subjects in their due obedience; seu contra formam Statuti Parliamenti Dominae nuper Reginae Anno regni sui viceffimo septimo fact. & edit; intitulat, An Act against Jesuits, Seminary-priests and such otherlike disobedient persons; seu contra formam Statuti in Parlamento precharissimi nuper patris Nostri Jacobi nuper. Regis Angliae anno regni sui tertio fact. & edit; intitulati: An Act for the better discovering and repressing of popish Recusants, seu contra formam alicujus alterius legis sive Statuti ante hac fact. concernen. Iesuitas, Sacerdotes, Presbiter, Seminar. seu allos Presbiteros, Sacerdotes Diaconos, aut personas religiosas seu ecclesiastic. fact. & ordinat. seu provis. per aliquam autoritatem sive jurisdictionem derivat. calumniat: aut pretens. a sede Romana, aut concernen. reconciliationem alicujus subditi sive aliquorum subditorum hujus regni Angliae, Episcopo, Sedi aut Ecclesiae Romanae adhuc fact. Commiss. sive perpetrat. ac omnia & singula offens. & Malefacta de Premunire seu cognit. per nomen de Premunire contra formam Statuti predicti anno regni prefat. nuper Patris Nostri precharissimi tertio edit; aut alicujus alteri act. sive Statuti Commiss. in recusando vel non recipiendo Sacrament. devisat & provis. in Statuto predicto anno Regni Domini nuper Patris Nostri precharissimi Angliae tertio edit. ac omnia & singula alia offens. & delict. quacunque in recusando vel non recipiendo Sacrament. predict. ac omnia imprisonamenta ratione premissorum seu eorum alicujus, aut ratione recusantiae in non accedendo ad aliquam Ecclesiam, Capellam seu usual. loc. com. Precationis juxta leges et Statuta in ea parte stabilita, aut ratione alicujus offens. contra formam alicujus Statuti sive aliquorum Statutorum contra papales Recusantes stabilit. ac fugam & fugas superinde fact. licet idem Joannes Piercy, Henricus Hopkins, Richardus Bapthorpe, Brian Medcalfe, Thomas Mush, Thomas Cudworth, Christopherus Ibotson, Gulielmus Brooksby, Christopherus Clough, Tobias Clay, Richardus Robinson, Edwardus Ditchfield, Joannes Melling, Willielmus Nayler, Jacobus Eckerfall, Richardus Whaley, Laurentius Lanshaw, Richardus Sharrock, Richerdus Gill et Willielmus Berry, de eisdem prodictione, misprisione prodictionum, feloniorum, offens. et malefact. sive de eorum aliquibus vel aliquo indictat. imperit. appellat. rectat. ut lagat. condemnat. convinct. attingt. sive adjudicat existunt vel non existunt, vel eorum aliquis existit, vel non existit, aut inde indictari, impetiri, appellari, rectari utlagari condemnari, convinciri attingi sive adjudicari contigerint vel eorum aliquis vel aliqui contiger. in futur. Ac omnes & singulos si qua utlagar. versus ipsos vel eorum aliquem vel aliquos ratione premissorum, seu eorum alicujus promulgat. fuerunt sive imposterum erint promulgand. ac etiam judicium et iudicia pro premiss. seu aliquo premissorum versus ipsos seu eorum aliquem vel aliquos habet. fact. reddit sive adjudicat, aut imposterum habend. fiend. reddend. sive adjudicand. ac executionem et executiones hujusmodi iudicii et iudiciorum versus ipsos vel eorum aliquem vel aliquos pro premiss. vel aliquo premissorum habend. fiend. vel exequend. nec non omnes et singulas penas mortis, penas corporales, forisfacturas, Fines

et executiones quascunque quæ Nos versus prefat. Joannem Piercy, Henricum Hopkins, Richardum Bapthorpe, Brianum Medcalfe, Thomam Mush, Thomam Cudworth, Christopherum Ibotson, Willielmum Brooksby, Christopherum Clough, Tobiam Clay, Richardum Robinson, Edwardum Ditchfield, Joannem Melling, Willielmum Naylor, Jacobum Eckerfall, Richardum Whaley, Laurencium Langshaw, Richardum Sharrocke, Richardum Gill & Willielmum Berry, seu verius eorum aliquem vel aliquos ratione vel occasione premissorum, aut eorum alicujus habuimus, habeamus seu in futur. habere poterimus, aut hered. vel successor Nostri habere poterint in futur. sectamque pacis Nostre quæ ad Nos hered. & successores nostros verius ipsos vel eorum aliquem vel aliquos pertinere poterit. Et firmam pacem Nostram & hanc perdonacionem Nostram eis & eorum Cuilibet inde damus & concedimus per presentes. Mandamus etiam ac pro Nobis, heredibus & successoribus Nostreis fimiter injungendo precipimus omnibus & singulis Commissionarijs pro causis ecclesiasticis; Justiciarijs Vice-comitibus, Escaetoribus Ballivis, Custod. prison. & alijs officarijs et Ministris Nostreis heredum et Successorum Nostre quibuscunque. Quod si prefat. Joannes Piercy, Henricus Hopkins, Richardus Bapthorpe, Brianus Medcalfe, Thomas Mush, Thomas Cudworth, Christopherus Ibotson, Willielmus Brooksby, Christopherus Clough, Tobias Clay, Richardus Robinson, Edwardus Ditchfield, Joannes Melling, Willielmus Naylor, Jacobus Eckerfall, Richardus Whaley, Laurencius Langshaw, Richardus Sharrocke, Richardus Gill et Willielmus Berry, vel eorum aliquis vel aliqui ratione premissorum per presentes pardonati seu mentionati fore perdonari, incarcerati vel imprisonati existunt vel existit; Quod ipse, et eorum quilibet super solam demonstrationem præsentium inde deliberentur, et eorum aliquis deliberetur absque ulteriori warranto, proinde Nobis, heredibus et successoribus Nostreis obtinendo seu prosequendo. Nolentes quod ipsi per Justiciar. Vice-com. Escaetores, Ballivas seu aliquos alios Ministros Nostros heredum vel successorum Nostrorum occasionibus prædict. seu eorum aliquis molestantur, perturbentur, seu in aliquo graventur, licet ipse bonam et sufficientem securitatem non inveniat, aut eorum aliquis inveniat secundum formam & effectum Statuti Domini Edwardi nuper Regis Angliæ tertii. progenitoris Nostri, Anno regni sui decimo apud Westmonasterium. tenet. edit. de Se bene gerend. extunc. erga Nos, hered. et Successor. nostros et cunctum populum nostrum. Et ulterius de uberiori gratia Nostra, certa scientia et merito motu nostris concessimus, ac per presentes pro Nobis Hæredibus et Successoribus Nostreis concedimus prefat. Joanni Piercy, Henrico Hopkins, Richardo Bapthorpe Briano Medcalfe, Thomæ Mush, Thomæ Cudworth, Christophero Ibotson, Willielmo Brooksby, Christophero Clough, Tobia Clay, Richardo Robinson, Edwardo Ditchfield, Joanne Melling, Willielmo Naylor, Jacobo Eckerfall, Richardo Whaley, Laurentio Langshaw, Richardo Sharrocke, Richardo Gill et Willielmo Berry, quod hæc literæ Nostre Patentes favourabiliter, et in maximum ipsorum et eorum cujuslibet, commodum et beneficium, construuntur, capientur et acceptabuntur, et stabunt et existent firmæ, validæ et effectuales lege, erga, versus et contra Nos, Hæredes et Successores Nostros secundum veram intentionem earundem; statutis prædictis aut eorum aliquo, aut aliquo alio statuto, Actu, Proclamatione, provisione, vel restrictione, aut aliqua alia re, causa vel materia quacunque in contrarium, inde in aliquo non obstante. In cujus rei testimonium, &c. teste Rege apud Westmonasterium, quarto die Maii anno primo Caroli regis.

Per ipsum Regem.

Convenit cum recordo et examinatur
per me Joannem Claydon.

After this, *May 11.* the Duke of Buckingham was sent into France to meet the Queen, and conduct her into England: The now Archbishop of Canterbury to shew his good affection to promote this match, sent letters after him the selfelame day. The 19. of *May* he writ second letters to the Duke, then staying at *Paris*: and *May 29.* he sent other letters to him by the hands of the Bishop of *Durham.* to be delivered to him at his first arrivall in England: *June 5.* this Bishop received letters from the

Duke out of *France* being Whitlunday, as he was going to divine service, to which he returned an answer the next morning early. *June 12.* the Queen arrived in *England*; and *June 16.* the King and Queene came both to *London*, where a new Chappell was soone after built for her and her Family at *Somerset-house* to say Masse in: with a Monastery thereto adjoyning for *Capuchin Fryers*, who were therein placed, and walked abroad in their *Fryars. habits*, seducing his Majesties Subjects.

Hereupon the Papists (though formerly much daunted by the dissolution of the Spanish Match) began to lift up their heads, elevated their hopes, and resorted openly to Masse in great multitudes; Seminary Priests and Jesuits repaired into the Realme from all forreigne parts without restraint, and grew very numerous and bold: which the Parliament then sitting, taking into their pious and serious consideration, in the beginning of *August 1625.* both Houses presented the King at *Oxford* (whither the Parliament was then adjourned by reason of the plague) with this ensuing Petition against Recusants, Priests and Jesuits; whereunto I have annexed his Majesties Answer to each branch thereof, which was very plausible (to ingratiate himselfe with his people in the beginning of his reigne) had it been really performed.

To the KINGS most excellent Majesty.

Most gracious Sovereigne:

IT being infallibly true, that nothing can more establish the Throne and assure the peace and prosperity of your people, then the unity and sincerity of Religion; We your most humble and loyall Subjects, the Lords spirituall and temporall, and Commons of this present Parliament assembled, hold our selves bound in conscience and duty to represent the same to your sacred Majesty, together with the dangerous consequences, and what we conceive to be the principall causes thereof, and what may be the remedies.

The dangers appeare in these Particulars.

1. First, in their desperate ends, being both the subversion of Church and State, and the restlesnesse of their spirits to attaine these ends; the doctrine of their Teachers and Leaders perswading them, that therein they doe God good service.
2. Secondly, their evident and strict dependency upon such forreigne Princes, as no way affect the good of your Majesty and this State.
3. Thirdly, the opening a way of popularity to the ambition of any, who shall adventure to make himselfe head of so great a party.

The principall cause of the increase of Papists.

1. First, the want of due execution of lawes against Jesuits, Seminary-priests and Papist Recusants, occasioned partly by the connivency of the State, partly by defects in the lawes themselves, and partly by the manifold abuse of Officers.
2. Secondly, the interposing of forreigne Princes by their Ambassadors and Agents, in favour of them.
3. Thirdly, their great concourse to the City, and frequent conferences and Conventicles there.
4. Fourthly, the open and usuall resort to the houses and Chappels of Forreigne Ambassadors.
5. Fifthly, the education of their children in Seminaries, and houses of their Religion in forreigne parts, which of late have been greatly multiplied and enlarged for entertaining of the English.
6. Sixtly, that in some places of your Realme, your people be not sufficiently instructed in the knowledge of true Religion.
7. Seventhly, the licentious printing and dispersing of popish and seditious books.
8. Eightly, the employment of men, ill affected in Religion, in places of government, who doe, shall, or may countenance the popish party.

The

The Remedies against this outragious and dangerous disease are conceived to be these ensuing.

1. That the youth of this Realm be carefully educated by able and religious School-masters, and they to be enjoyned to catechize and instruct their Schollers in the grounds and principles of true Religion; and whereas by many complaints from divers parts of the Kingdome, it doth plainly appeare that sundry popish Schollers dissembling their Religion, have craftily crept in, and obtained the places of teaching in divers Countries, and therby infected and perverted their Schollers and so fitted them to be transported to the popish Seminaries beyond the seas: that therefore there be great care in choyce and admitting Schoole-masters, and that the ordinaries make diligent inquiries of their demeanours, and proceed to the removing of such as shall be faulty, or justly suspected.

His Majesties Answer. This is well allowed of, and for the better performance of what is desired, letters shall be written to the two Arch-bishops, and from them letters to goe to all the ordinaries of their severall Provinces to see this done; the severall ordinaries to give account of their doings herein to the Arch-bishops respectively, and they to give account to his Majesty of their proceedings herein.

2. That the ancienr discipline of the Universities be restored, being the famous Nurseries of literature and vertue.

Ans. This is approved by his Majesty, and the Chancelour of each University shall be required to cause due execution of it.

3. That speciall care be taken to enlarge the word of God through all the parts of your Majesties Dominions, as being the most powerfull meanes for planting of true Religion, and rooting out of the contrary; to which end among other things, let it please your Majesty to advise your Bishops by fatherly entreaty and tender usage, to reduce to the peaceable and orderly service of the Church, such able Ministers as have been formerly silenced, that there may be a profitable use of their ministry in these needfull and dangerous times; and that Non-residency, Pluralities and Commendams, may be moderated; where we cannot forbear most humbly to thanke your Majesty for deminishing the number of your owne Chaplaines, nothing doubting of the like princely care for the well bestowing of the rest of your Benefices, both to the comfort of the people, and the encouragement of the Universities, being full of grave and able Ministers unfurnisht of livings.

Ans. This his Majesty likes well, so as it be applyed to such Ministers as are peaceable, orderly and conformable to the Church-government; for pluralities and Non-residencies, those are now so moderated, that the Arch-bishops affirme, there be now no Dispensations for pluralities granted, nor no man now hath allowed above two Benefices, and those not above thirty miles distant: and for avoyding Non-residence, the Canon in that case provided shall be duely put in execution; for commendams they shall be sparingly granted, onely in such case where the exility and smalnesse of the Bishopricke requireth. Also his Majesty will cause that the Benefices belonging to him shall be well bestowed and for the better propagating of Religion, his Majesty recommendeth to the House of Parliament, that care may be taken and provision made, that every parish shall allow a competent maintenance for an able Minister, and that the owners of personages impropriate, would allow to the Vicars, Curates and Ministers in Villages and places belonging to their personage, sufficient stipend and allowance for preaching Ministers.

4. That there may be streight provision against transporting of English children to the Seminaries beyond the seas and for the recalling of them who are already there placed, and for the punishment of such your Subjects as are maintainers of those Seminaries, or of the Scollers, considering that besides the seducing of your people, great summes of mony are yearly expended upon them, to the impoverishing of this Kingdome.

Ans. The law in this case shall be put in execution, and further, there shall be letters

ters writen to the Lord Treasurer, and also to the Lord Admirall, that all the Ports of this Realme, and the creeks and members thereof be strictly kept, and streight searches made to this end: a Proclamation shall be to recall both the children of Noblemen, and the children of any other men, and they to returne by a day: also maintainers of Seminaries, or Schollers there, shall be punished according to the law.

5. That no popish Recusant be permitted to come within the Court, unlessse your Majesty be pleased to call him upon speciall occasion, agreeable to the Statute of 5. Jac. c. 5. And whereas your Majesty for the preventing of any apparant mischiefs, both to your Majesty and the State, have in your princely wisdom taken order that none of your naturall borne Subjects, not professing the true Religion, and by law established, be admitted into the service of your royall Consort the Queen, we give your Majesty most humble thanks, and desire that your order herein may be observed.

Why then
were Sir John
Trotter, Ma-
ster of the
Almoner,
Sir John de
Dunmow,
and other Pa-
pists admitted
into her ser-
vice?

Ans. If his Majesty shall find or be informed of any concourse of Recusants to the Court, the law shall be strictly followed; and his Majesty is pleased, that by proclamation the Brittish and the Irish Subjects shall be put in the same case: and as his Majesty hath provided in his treaty with France, so his purpose is to keep it, that none of his Subjects shall be admitted into his service, or into the service of his royall Consort the Queen, that are popish Recusants.

6. That all the lawes now standing in force against Jesuits, Seminary-priests and others, having taken orders by authority derived from the Sea of Rome, be put in due execution; and to the intent they may not pretend to be surprized, that a speedy and certaine day be prefixed by your Majesties Proclamation, for their departure out of this Realme, and all other your Dominions, and not to returne, upon the severest penalties of the law now in force against them, and that all his Majesties Subjects may be thereby admonished, not to receive, comfort, entertaine or conceale any of them, upon the penalties which may be lawfully inflicted, and that all such Papists, Jesuits and Recusants, who are and shall be imprisoned for recusancy or any other cause, may be so strictly restrained as that none shall have conference with them; thereby to avoyd the contagion of their corrupt Religion, and that no man who shall be suspected of popery be suffered to be keeper of any your Majesties prisons.

Ans. The law in this case shall be put in execution, and a Proclamation shall be to the effect desired, and such restraint shall be made as is desired, and no man that is justly suspected of popery shall be suffered to be keeper of any of his Majesties prisons.

7. That your Majesty be pleased to take such order as to your Princely wisdom shall be expedient, that no naturall borne Subject, or strange Bishops, nor any other by authority from the Sea of Rome, conferre any ecclesiasticall orders, or exercise any ecclesiasticall Function whatsoever, toward or upon your Majesties naturall Subjects, within your Dominions.

Ans. This is fit to be ordered, according as it is provided, and it shall be so published by Proclamation.

8. That your Majesties learned Counsell may receive order and commandement to consider of all former grants of Recusants lands, that such of them may be avoyded as are made to the Recusants use or interest, out of which the recusant receiveth any benefit, which are either voyd or voydable by the law.

Ans. The King will give order to his learned Counsell to consider of the grants, and will doe according as is desired.

9. That your Majesty will be likewise pleased strictly to command all your Judges and ministers of Justice ecclesiasticall and temporall, to see the lawes of this realme against Papist recusants to be duely executed; and namely, that the censure of excommunication be declared and certified against them, and that they be not absolved but upon publike satisfaction, by yeelding to conformity.

Ans. His Majesty leaves the lawes to their course, and will give order in the point of excommunication as is desired.

10. That your Majesty will be pleased to remove from all places of authority and go-
vern-

vernment, all such persons as are either popish Recusants, or according to direction of former acts of State, to be justly suspected.

Ans^r. This his Majesty thinks fit, and will give order for it.

11. That present order be taken for disarming all popish Recusants, legally convicted or justly suspected, according to the lawes in that behalfe, and the orders taken by his late Majesties privy Counsell, upon reason of State.

Ans^r. The lawes and acts in this case, shall be followed and put in due execution.

12. That your Majesty be also pleased, in respect of the great resort of Recusants to and about *London*, to command forthwith, upon paine of your indignation and severe execution of the lawes, th at they retire themselves to their severall Countries, there to remaine confined within five miles of their places.

Ans^r. For this, the lawes in force shall be forthwith executed.

13. And whereas your Majesty hath strictly commanded and taken order, that none of the naturall borne Subjects repaire to the hearing of Masses, or other superstitious service at the Chappels or houses of forraigne Ambassadors, or in any other places whatsoever; We give your Majesty most humble thanks, and desire that your Order and commandement therein may be continued and observed, and that the offenders herein may be punished according to the lawes.

Ans^r. The King gives assent thereto, and will see that observed which herein hath been commanded by him.

14. That all such insolencies as any popishly affected have lately committed, or shall hereafter commit, to the dishonour of our Religion, or to the wrong of the true professors thereof, be exemplarily punished.

Ans^r. This shall be done as is desired.

15. That the Statute of 1. *Eliz.* for the payment of 12. d. every Sunday, by such as shall be absent from divine service in the Church without a lawfull excuse, may be put in due execution, the rather for that the penalty by law is given to the poore, and therefore not to be dispensed withall.

Ans^r. It is fit that this Statute be executed, and the penalties shall not be dispensed withall.

16. Lastly, that your Majesty would be pleased to extend your Princely care also over the Kingdome of *Ireland*, that the like courses may be there taken for the restoring and establishing of true Religion.

Ans^r. His Majesties cares are and shall be extended over the Kingdome of *Ireland*, and will doe all that a religious King should doe for the restoring and establishing of true Religion there. NOTE:

And thus (most gracious Sovereigne) according to our duty and zeale to God and Religion, to your Majesty and your safety, to the Church and Common-wealth, and their peace and prosperity, we have made a faithfull declaration of the present estate, the causes and remedies of this encreasing disease of Popery, humbly offering the same to your Princely care and wisdom. The answer of your Majesties Father our late Sovereigne of famous memory, upon the like Petition did give us great comfort of Reformation, but your Majesties most gracious promises made in that kind, doe give us confidence and assurance of the continuall performance thereof; in which comfort and confidence reposing our selves, we most humbly pray for your Majesties long continuance in all Princely felicity.

This Petition (as I find by the *Commons Journall*) was ordered to be drawne up by a speciall Committee upon a complaint made in that House, of the liberty of Priests and Jesuits, 21. *Junij* 1. *Car.* On the 7. of *July* following it was voted in the House, answered by the King the 7. of *August*, and the Answer thereunto reported *Aug.* 8.

But this Parliament being unhappily dissolved in discontent, the twelfth of that *August*, these plausible answers vanished into smoake; and notwithstanding them, the execution of Priests and Jesuits apprehended during and after the Parliament, and the proceedings against Recusants by well affected Justices and people, were stayed in some places by warrants under the privy Signet, and other under-hand means.

Yet

Yet in *December* following, the King being necessitated to summon a new Parliament, to prevent clamours and complaints, in not making good his Answers to the foresaid Petition, caused a Commission to be awarded under the great Seale, for executing the lawes against Recusants which was read in all the Courts of Justice at *Redding*, and withall sent this Letter to the then Arch-bishop of *Canterbury*, *Abbot*, to be by him conveyed to all the Bishops of his Province, to present and excommunicate all Recusants within their Duresse; as will appear by this Letter of the said Arch-bishop to *Dorset* *Laud*, then Bishop of *Saint Davids*, and his Letters to his Officials in pursuance of it, the Originall whereof is in my custody.

After my hearty commendations, &c. It will appeare by the severall Copies under written, from his royall Majesty to the Lords Grace of *Canterbury*, and from my Lords Grace to me, what care his Majesty hath for the preservation of true Religion, settled and established in this Kingdome; the tenour of these Letters are as followeth.

Right Reverend Father in God, my very good Lord, I have received from the Kings Majesty a Letter, the Tenour whereof here followeth.

Most Reverend Father in God, Right trusty, and Right Well beloved Counsellour, We greet you well. Whereas upon sundry weighty considerations, Vs especially moving, We lately awarded Our Commission under Our great Seale of *England*, for the due and effectually putting in execution of the severall lawes, and statutes remaining in force against popish Recusants, and did cause Our said Commission to be publikey read in Our severall Courts, holden the last terme at *Redding*. That all Our loving Subjects might take notice of Our princely care and speciall charge for the advancement of true Religion, and suppression of Superstition and Popery. We have now thought fit out of the same care to adde a further charge to you, and all others having Ecclesiasticall jurisdiction under Us; that no good meanes be neglected on Our part, for discovering, finding out, and apprehending of Iesuits, Seminary-priests, and other Seducers of Our people to the Romish Religion; or for repressing popish Recusants and Delinquents of that sort: against whom you are to proceed by Excommunication and other censures of the Church, not omitting any other lawfull meanes to bring them forth to publike justice. And as Our pleasure is, that due and strict proceeding be used against such as are open and professed Papists, of whom Our temporall lawes will more easily take hold: So We doe recommend to the vigilant care of you, and the rest of Our Clergy, for the repressing of those, who being ill affected to the true Religion here established, doe keep more close and secret, their ill and dangerous affections that way, and as well by their example, as by secret and underhand slights and meanes, doe much encourage and encrease the growth of popery and Superstition in sundry parts of this Kingdome. And therefore We doe not onely require, that none of them may have any manner of cover protection, countenance or connivance from you, or any of the rest, as you tender Our royall commandement in that behalfe; but that all possible diligence be used, as well to unmaske the false shadows and pretences of those, who may possibly be wonne to conformity; letting all men know that We cannot think well of any that having place and authority in the Church, doe permit such persons to passe with impunity, much lesse if they give them any countenance to the emboldning of them or their Adherents: and because We understand that the number of Recusants is much more encreased in some Diocesses then in others, We shall impute the same to the negligence of those Bishops, who have the same meanes and power of restraint, unlesse they can shew Us some particular reason by which that contagion is become greater under them then others, and not by their defaults: and We doe hereby require you to send transcripts of these Our Letters to all the Bishops and Ordinaries within your province for the present execution of this Our generall direction: and also to transmit the same our Letters to the Lord Arch-
bishop

bishop of *Yorke*, that he may take the like course within his Charge and Jurisdiction.

Given under Our Signet at Our Castle of Windsor the fifteenth day of December, in the first yeere of Our Reigne.

By this you see the Royall and Christian care which his Majesty hath, for the advancement of true Religion within this Kingdome and the suppressing of the contrary; I doubt not but your Lordship will take it into serious consideration, and by your Officers and Ministers, give execution thereunto; so that presentments be duly made and excommunication against the obstinate be issued forth, as some few yeeres past was accustomed: and his Majesty doth expect, that to shew your diligence and zeale therein, your Lordship soone after Easter returne unto me the list and number of all Recusant Papists within your Diocesse, which without faile I doe expect: and so I leave you to the Almighty, and remaine

Your Lordships loving brother,

Creydon, the 21. of Decemb. 1625.

G. Cant.

These are therefore to will and require you and every of you, through the severall Arch-deaconries within my Diocesses, that there be all possible care taken of such as are any way backward in points of Religion, and more especially of known and professed Recusants: that they may be carefully presented, and proceedings had against them to excommunication, according to forme and order of Law; and that there be a true List and Catalogue after every Easter yearly sent unto me, that according to the order of these Letters I may be able to have it ready, and deliver it up to my Lord of *Canterbury*; and for the better effecting of this, I must and doe further require, that the Register doe write out severall Copies of these Letters, and issue them into the severall Arch-deaconries, that none may plead ignorance of their duty in this behalfe, as you must look to answer it further if fault be found to rest upon you: Thus not doubting of your religious care and duty to the Church and State, I leave you all to the grace of God, and rest

Your loving Friend and Diocesian,

Westmin. Jan. 14. 1625.

Gul. Menevensis.

To the right Worshipfull, my very loving Friends, Doctor Aubrey, Chancelour of the Diocesses of Saint Davids, and all his Surrogates and Deputies within the severall Arch-deaconries, these be delivered.

Upon this, the names of some few Recusants were certified to the Bishop, out of *Cardmarthen* and *Pembrakeshire* in June following, but what other proceedings were used against them, I am yet to seeke.

After this a new Parliament being assembled at *Westminster* in February 1625, they appointed a speciall Committee for Religion, to examine the forementioned abuse of stopping proceedings against popish Recusants, Priests and Jesuits, by Letters under the privy Signet; who issued out this ensuing Warrant to the Signet-Office, found among Secretary *Windebanks* papers.

Luna, 6. of March 1625. at the Committee for Religion.

M. Moore.

M. Lau. Whitaker.

M. Wil. Whitaker.

M. Nubery.

These Sub-committees are appointed to search at the Signet-Office what warrants have passed for the stay of the execution of Priests and Jesuits, or of any other legal proceedings against popish Recusants, since his Majesties gracious Answer to both Houses of Parliament, delivered at *Oxford* in August, and they are to bring Copies of

all such Warrants, or of the Dockets to that Committee at their sitting upon Thursday next.

John Pym.

This is a true Copy of the Order delivered at the Signet-Office by Master Moore, Master Lau. Whitaker and Master Newbery, examined with the Order it self the tenth of this instant March, 1625.

John Grymesdyche.

What the ground of this warrant was, appears by the report of Master Pym, in the Commons Journall of that Parliament.

Jouis 23. Martij, 1. Car. Regis.

(b) Since Secretary of State.

After Pym reporteth from the Committee for religion, a Letter written to the Major of Yorke, for repriving of some Jesuits, Priestis, and other Recusants; there being doubt made of the Letter, being under the Signet, a Sub-committee was appointed by the Committee of religion to examine this Letter, with the Originall at the Signet-Office, they going thither, an Answer was returned by (b) Mr. Windebanke, the then Clarke there, that he cannot shew them that they desire without order from the King.

After which this Order was made in the Commons House.

Sab. 29. Apr. 2. Car. Regis.

The Committee for Religion is to have power to make Sub-committees to goe and examine any that be sicke, or in prison or have other lawfull impediment, concerning saying of Masse, or printing of popish bookes, or other things in that nature.

In the moneth of May following, the House took divers Examinations concerning popish School. masters, and recusants that were in office, and particularly of a Jesuit that had a lodging, and was in Commons in Grays-Inne; and at last they agreed upon a Petition against recusants in office, and to present their names therewith to the King, to the end they might be removed.

Martij 6. Junij. 2. Car. Regis.

The Petition against Recusants in authority, was ingrossed, read and allowed to be presented to his Majesty, and this to be done by the Privy Counsell of the House, and Sir Iohn Fulleton, which was done accordingly: but with what reall successe, I can give no exact account.

In this Parliament these ensuing articles against Popish Recusants were consulted of in the Commons House, with an intent to draw them into an act.

Articles consulted upon in Parliament for a Law against Recusants.

1. That where by former Statutes the King was to have 20. li. a moneth from Recusants, hereafter his Majesty shall take two parts of the lands of every Recusant.
2. Church-wardens monethly to present the names, quality and ability of every person in their parish absenting from Church to Justices of peace.
3. A new Oath with more additions to be taken concerning the Supremacy.
4. The former Law to be explained and confirmed, that the Husband shall pay for the recusancy of his Wife.
5. That Recusants shall not keepe any weapons in their houses, but what shall be allowed by Justices of the peace, and shall nevertheless be assessed for provision of Armes.
6. All papistcally books to be prohibited from coming over from beyond the seas, or here received upon a great paine.
7. If any shall discover a Papist, or any other at Masse, whereby they may be apprehended, he shall have the third part of their Lands and Goods for his paines and intelligence.

Every

8. Every Recusant shall cause his child to be baptized in his parish Church, within a moneth after birth, upon great paine.

9. No Recusant to beare office of Iustice of peace or otherwise, or any man whose wife shall be a Recusant, or practise law common or civill, or phisicke, nor have command in warre; and no Recusant being Patron of any Benefice, shall have power to present unto it; but both Universtyes shall present unto it *alternis vicibus*.

10. All persons convicted of recusancy shall stand excommunicated (*ipso facto*) No Recusants shall hold any lands or Tenements by curtie; no woman recusant shall have dower or thirds of her Husbands lands or goods by any custome or usage of place.

11. That the children of Recusants above the age of five yeers shall be taken from their Parents, and placed for education by Iustices of peace in every parish, and to be maintained at their Parents charge, and they not to have power to dis-inherit them.

12. No Recusant shall be Guardian in Socage, Chivalry, or pour-nature to any person, &c.

13. That no person shall goe beyond the seas without taking the new Oath, unless by warrant from the King, or ix of the privy Counsell.

14. If any of the Kings Subjects shall be reconciled to the Pope in any part beyond the seas, and return to any of the Kings Dominions, it shall be treason, as if it had been done in England.

Pope Urban the eighth having intelligence of this Parliaments strict proceedings against popish Priests and Reculants in England, sent this ensuing consolatory Bull unto them (found among Secretary Wmdebankes papers) at the end whereof I find the forme of an Oath which the English Priests take, before they be admitted into any Ecclesiasticall Office in the Church of Rome; both which I shall here subjoyne.

Urbanus P P. Octavus.

DILECTI FILII Salutem & Apostolicam Benedictionem. Non semper terrena felicitas est beneficium caeli, & patrimonium pietatis, pacem enim cum pietate violens ecclesia, non raro experta est potentiam mortalium esse stipendium sceleris; quare Catenas martyrum antefereimus Coronis triumphantium, & Deus sempiternus principatus coelestes pollicetur, non is qui superbo pede iura procerunt, sed qui persecutionem patitur propter iustitiam. Veritatem hanc e thesauris divinitatis delatam in terris contemplantis Apostolus, non modo animam non despondebat, sed superabundabat gaudio in omni tribulatione fidelium. Qui enim digni habentur pro nomine Jesu contumeliam pati, ij tofferam divini amoris videntur possidere, & eo pretio abundare, quo sunt venalia diademata aeternitatis. Mallemus equidem humana similitudinis memores gloriam & divitias esse in Tabernaculis iustorum, ac enim cum Vestras miserius contemplantur Dilecti Filij, tantum Vestra virtus & Christo propugnantis fidemur in Vobis avaram gratulari segetem triumphorum. (a) Speravit quidem (a) NOTE: Ecclesia fore, ut potentissimi Regis animus, qui e Catholica Coniuge procreare optavit, heredes patrius Regnis imoeratuos, delinquit suspensis Uxoriam pietatis, pateretur Regalis connubii dotem, esse libertatem fidei. Nunc autem formidantur vota & consilia inimicorum Vestrorum: Et cum Religio Orthodoxa Regali diademate in optima Regni coronetur, istic tamen non desunt, qui Filius Noster audeant Carcerem & supplicia minitari. Credimus esse inter Vos qui mortificationem Jesu Christi proprio corpore circumferre cupiant, & blanditias voluptatis atque ambitionis titulos posthabcant laniena carnicum ac vinculorum contumeliis: si qui tamen istic sunt quos praesentis etiam prosperitatis desiderium teneat, eos certiores fieri cupimus de illorum salute misericordiam esse Pontificiam charitatem. (b) Nullum a Nobis relinquitur officium (b) NOTE: quod minacem ingruentis tempestatis caliginem possit in optatam consolationis auram convertere. Tamen si d laet Infernus os suum & Martyrum sanguinem sitiat impacata crudelitas, armari debetis scuto inexpugnabili bonae voluntatis, & coelum in carcere, coronam in equuleo, immortalitatem in morte cogitare. Inter Britannicos naufragantis

religionis scopulos erux Christi fuit tabula quæ Nos perduxit in portum bone voluntatis Vestre: Hanc opus est amplectari in presentia, cujus virtute dulcescet amari trespænarum, Cogitate dilecti filij in qua statione commoremur & quorum oculis facti sitis spectaculum. Vos Angelica legiones circumvolitant quæ phialis aureis desideria fidelium excipiunt, & ad sanctuarium ferunt misericordia omnipotentis. Perfæctis cæli foribus, Spectator Idem & munerator Christus, Vobis sacros civium Vestrorum triumphos ostendit, quos Anglia proprio sanguine intulit cælitum concilijs. Anxia preces suspirantis Ecclesia Vobis a Deo petunt spiritum charitatis & fortitudinis. Vestram salutem jurant concilia Sonatus Apostolici & vota Christianitatis. In tanto Cæli Terrarumque Theatro quem Vobis conscientia vitæ vigorem, quam animi triumphantis sublimitatem inesse decet? Fuerunt in consimili discrimine consilia majorum Vestrorum, lumina spiritus Sancti & arma lucis sint verba vestra oracula sapientiæ, sint actiones vestre exempla fortitudinis: quos si eo usque vis progrediatur, ut Vos ad Noxium illud & illicitum Anglicanae fidelitatis juramentum adigat, mementote nationem Vestram ab universo Angelorum spectantium conspectu andiri, & adherent lingua Vestra faucibus Vestris, priusquam auctoritatem Beati Petri, ea iurjurandi formula immutatam eat. Non enim ibi id solum agitur, uti fides Regi servetur, sed ut sacrum Univerſa ecclesia sceptum eripiat Vicarijs Dei omnipotentis; quod felicitis recordationis Paulus quintus predecessor Noster in tam gravi deliberatione decrevit, id omnino tanquam eandem veritatis servare debetis, dilecti filij. Tributum hoc Principi Apostolorum debitum nulla hominum omnia aut blanditia nunquam a Vobis extorquatur: qui vero suadent ij visionem mendacem & divinationem fraudulentam prophetant Vobis. Cuius enim viro Christiano debet potentium gladius vitam eripere quam fidem. Quod si Angelus etiam de Cælo descendens, Vos aliter quam veritas Apostolica doceat, anathema sit. Nos interea Patrem luminum orabimus, ne exacari patiatur cor Anglicanæ Regis, qui certo discere debetis, quanta in ijs qua politeri potestis fides habenda sit Catholicæ subditis, qui ne so perjurij alligent, malint spiritum emittere quam vocem. Ut autem virtus Vestra inveniat præstiosior auro, quod igne probatur, docete Regnum istud, tantum non inesse vim hostium sevitia, ut in cordibus Vestris possit æternum charitatis ignem extinguere.

NOTE.

NOTE.

Orate pro persequentibus Vos: humilitas, patientia, concordia, ieiunium, oratio anima sunt, quæ intam sacra dicatione debetis distingere, ut palma cælestium triumphorum floreat in manibus vestris. Cum enim ipse etiam Christi Carnifices vetus sic beatus Petrus gladio vulnerare, hortamur vos præsens ecclesia bonum præ oculis habentes, ut cogitatis interea cogitationes pacis, & Regi etiam dum mortalem vitam adimit, æternam vitam exoptetis. Ita belligare fas est milites Christi sub vexillo Crucis: Confundantur ora loquentium iniqua, cum odioso etiam noscatis, qui vos exornant, Cæterum Dominus qui potest tristitiam Vestram in gaudium convertere, erit a dextris Vestris ne commoveamini, & illius testamenti nunquam obliviscetur quo hereditatem Regni cælestis imitatoribus suis legavit. Complectimur Vos Apostolica charitatis brachijs, dilecti filij, quibus paternum patrociniū pollicemur, & benedictionem Nostram permanentem impartimur.

Datum Romæ apud Sanctum Petrum sub annulo Piscatoris die 5. Maij 1626. Pontificatus Nostri tertio.

A tergo; Dilectis Filijs Catholicis Anglicanis

Joannes Campholus.

Forma Juramenti quod præstant Sacerdotes Angli qui ad aliquod Officiū Ecclesiasticum assumuntur.

EGO A. B. Presbiter, in verbo sacerdotis Juro & promitto quod ab hac hora fidelis Ero & obediens Reverendissimo Domino R. Episcopo Chalcædonsi, Angliæ & Scotiæ Ordinario, cujus & Successorum ejus parebo mandatis. Clero em Anglicano seculari cujus

cujus sincerum membrum me esse profiteor, fidelis & devotus semper existam. Illiusque dignitatem tuebor, ac bonum ejus tam spirituale tam temporale pro posse meo & efficaciter procurabo: Nihil in ejusdem Cleri damnum aut prejudicium sciens & volens faciam, aut attentabo, vel ab alijs fieri aut attentari permittam, neque sciam quid non revelabo prefato Domino ordinario meo & ejus successoribus vel saltem per quem possit ad ejus & successorum ejus notitiam sine fraude & dolo aperto celeriter pervenire. Ita me Deus adjuvet.

Hæc forma Juramenti nemini ostendatur nisi illis ad quos spectat.

This Parliament dissolving in discontent, on the 15. of June 1626. not long after this Bull; the popish Reculants were so farre from being in danger of any open persecution against them within our Realms, needing such a Cordiall as this from Rome, that on the contrary, this very yeere, even when the Parliament was sitting, they were upon the point of gaining a publike Toleration of their Religion in Ireland, where they plotted first openly to erect the same (being furthest out of the Parliaments and peoples view) and then to set it up openly by degrees neerer home.

This Toleration there, by their powerfull Court-friends and purses, was so farre resolved on and proceeded in, that the Protestant Bishops of Ireland knew of no other means to prevent it, but by joyning in a publike Protestation against it; the Copy, occasion and manner whereof I shall here present you with, as I found them in the Arch-bishop of Canterburys Study, sent (as it seemes) to the then Arch-bishop out of Ireland.

The judgement of the Arch-bishops and Bishops of Ireland concerning a Toleration of the popish Religion, by publike Protestation.

THE Religion of Papists is superstitious and idolatrous, their faith and doctrine erroneous and hereticall, their Church (in respect of both) Apostolicall; to give them therefore a Toleration of Religion, or to consent that they may freely exercise their Religion, and professe their Faith and Doctrine is a grievous sinne, and that in two respects. First, it is to make our selves accessary not only to their superstitious Idolatries; Heresies, and in a word, to all the abominations of Popery; but also (which is a consequent of the former) to the perdition of the seduced people, which perish in the deluge of the Catholike Apostacy. Secondly, to grant them a Toleration in respect of any money to be given, or contribution to be made by them, is to set Religion to sale, and with it the soules of the people, whom Christ our Saviour hath redeemed with his blood. And as it is a great sinne, so it is a matter of most dangerous consequence, the consideration whereof we leave to the Wise and Judicious, beseeching the Zealous God of Truth, to make those who are in authority Zealous of Gods glory, and of the advancement of true Religion, zealous, resolute and courageous against all popery, superstition and idolatry.

There were likely to be granted unto the Papists in Ireland many priviledges, and withall a Toleration for their Religion, in the consideration of the payment of a great summe of money. This Easter-terme 1626. there was a great meeting of all the chieftest of the whole Kingdome, and the Arch-bishops and Bishops, &c. and it was likely to be concluded: Doctor Dowman Bishop of London. derrey Aprill 11. preached at Dublin before the Lord Deputy and the whole State; his Text was Luke 1. at the 79. In the midst of his Sermon he openly read this Protestation above written, subscribed by the Arch-bishops and Bishops of Ireland, and at the end he boldly said, and let all the people say, Amen. And suddenly all the whole Church almost shooke with the sound, that their Amen made, &c. the Lord Deputy called from the Bishop of Derry a copy both of his Sermon and Protestation to send to the King; the learned and courageous Bishop gave this answer, that there was nothing he either spake or read in the Pulpit but he would willingly justify it before his Majesty. And feared

not who read or saw it. So now by Gods mercy nothing may yet be done, or will be till the Lord Deputy heare from the King.

The Bishop hereupon was sent for into *England*, and after some attendance here, returned back into *Ireland*, where he dyed at his Bishoprick.

How bold the popish Titular Bishops were in *Ireland*, and how they there ordained Masse-Priests, by authority from the sea of *Rome* before this Protestation, will appeare by these ensuing Letters of Orders, conferred by *Thomas* Bishop of *Meath*; which I found in the Arch-bishop of *Canterburies* Study, thus indorced with his owne hand, *May 27. 1637.*

The forme of an Ordination by the Bishop of Meath in Ireland, according to the forme of the Sea of Rome.

THOMAS, Dei et Apostolica gratia Medensis Episcopus, Univerſis et ſingulis præſentes Noſtras literas viſuris ſalutem, in eo qui eſt vera ſalus. Notum facimus quod Nos Ordines in Cameris privatis Hereticæ perſecutionis metu celabantes. Dilectum Nobis Nelanum Feranan, Derenſis diœceſis Diaconum, idoneum repositum, ad Sacrum Preſbyteratus ordinem, promovendum duximus, eo promovemus, rite in Domino iura Miſſarum ſolemnia, virtute dimiſſorialium ſui Ordinarij. Datum in loco Mansionis Noſtræ die & Anno prædictis.

Signed *Thomas Medensis*,
and ſealed with his Epiſcopall Seale.

A Copy of the Certificate
for the order of Priesthood.

This is a true Copy of that Copy of the Certificate, which was this 27. of *May 1635.* ſent in unto the Counſell-board.

Sir E. Nicholas.

How popery and Papists have ſince increaſed in that Kingdome, notwithstanding this Protestation, and what open Toleration of popish Bishops, Priests, Masse, Monasteries, Nunneries, and a Colledge of Jesuits, &c. hath been in that Realme, you ſhall heare anon, in the continued ſeris of this Deſigne, which transports me into *France* for a time, from whence it had its ſecond birth.

Not long after the Kings Match with *France*, there was a deſigne in that Realme to extirpate the Protestants, and ſurprize all their fortified Townes in that Kingdome, whereof *Rockell* was the principall; which being a maritane Towne, furniſhed with a good Fleet of Ships, able to make good their Harbour, and furniſh themſelves with provisions and ſupplies from all their Protestant friends, maugre all the Sea-forces of the French King; thereupon the French Cardinall *Richelieu* and his confederates taking the advantage of their new intereſt in the King of *England*, by reaſon of this marriage; importuned him to lend his Brother of *France* the *Vaunt-guard*, one of the Vessels of his royall Navy, and ſeven Merchant-men of Warre, to be employed in his ſervice by ſea: which the King condeſcending to, ſent the ſaid Ships under the command of *Captaine Pennington* into *France*, to be employed as the French King and his Counſell ſhould preſcribe. Who deſigning them for ſervice againſt *Rockell*, to ſurprize their Ships, block up their Haven. and intercept their trade and reliefe, contrary to their expectation; the Captaines, Maſters and Marriners of the Ships were ſo much diſcontented, that they were deſigned againſt the *Rockellers*, who were not onely their friends, but the chiefe profeſſors and maintainers of the Protestant Religion in thoſe parts, and that they ſhould be made the instruments of their ruine, and draw the guilt of their innocent Protestant blood upon their ſoules, that they all unanimouſly reſolved, they would rather dye, ſinke, or be hanged up at the Maſts of their Ships, then ſtirre one jot, or weigh anchor for ſuch an unchriſtian deteſtable employment. *Captaine Pennington* their Admirall, and the French uſed all the rhetoricke and perſwaſions

sions they could to alter this their heroick and most Christian resolution; but they continued inflexible, and would neither by allurements, rewards, nor threats be drawne to such an unworthy action, resolving rather to sinke then stirre therein. Whereupon Captaine Pennington acquainted his Majesty and the Duke of Buckingham by Letters with this their peremptory resolution, and desires their direction herein; the King (I know not by whole ill advice) returns him this answer both by word of mouth and this ensuing Warrant (the copy whereof was found among Windebanks and the Lord Cottingtons Papers.)

CHARLES R.

Pennington:

These are to charge and require you, immediately upon sight hereof; that without all difficulty and delay, you put Our former commandement in execution, for the consigning of the Ship under your charge, called the *Vaunt-guard*, into the hands of the Marquesse de Effort, with all her Equipage, Artillery and Ammunition, assuring the Officers of the said Ship whom it may concerne, that we will provide for their indemnity: and We further charge and command you, that you also require the seven Merchants Ships in Our name, to put themselves into the service of Our deare Brother the French King, according to the promise made unto him: and in case of backwardnesse or refusal, We command you to use all forcible meanes in your power, to compell them therunto, even to their sinking: and in these severall charges, see you faile not, as you will answer the contrary at your utmost perill; and this shall be your sufficient Warrant.

NOTE.

Given at Our Court at Richmond the 28. of July 1625.

To Our Trusty and Welbeloved, John Pennington, Captaine of Our Ship called the *Vaunt-guard*.

Upon receipt of this Warrant Captaine Pennington (as I have been certainly informed from very credible persons of note, privy to the transactions of this businesse) threatned to shoot and sinke the Ships, and hang up the Mariners that refused to yeeld obedience, and serve against *Rochell*; but they all unanimously declined the service, bidding him doe his pleasure with them; for goe against the *Rochellers* they would never; but if they were commanded upon any other service not against the Protestants, they would obey: Whereupon those who refused to serve in this expedition, were commanded to quit the Ships and returne into *England*; which all did but two, (who soone after came to desperate ends, the one being blowne up with Gun-powder, the other drowned or slaine.) Upon this, the English Ships were according to this direction, delivered to the French, manned with French men and other Forreigners, and joyning with some more Vessels of the French King, destroyed the *Rochell* Fleet, blocked up their Haven & ruined that famous Protestant City, with most of the Protestants in it; which after a long and sharp siege by sea and land, was through famine surrendered into the Papist hands; the losse whereof was generally, if not justly imputed to our ill Counsellors; who after they had been instruments to destroy their Ships, the principall meanes of their safety, support, and preservation, by an unfortunate voyage of the Duke of Buckingham to the Isle of Ree (to what end but to ruine *Rochell* and the Protestant party in France, or to revenge the disappointment of his lust, as many muttered, is yet unknowne to the world) exhausted their Ammunition, Victuals, provisions, men, to supply our necessities at Ree, and after our departure thence, left our sick and maimed souldiers there to help devour the residue of their emptied stores, and then suffered them to be totally blocked up at sea: when we had thus engaged them on our behalfe, neglecting to send them timely supplies of Viſuall, Ammunition, shipping, men (which was strangely delaid from time to time contrary to promise) and when our ships went at last, they gave over the designe of relieving it as desperate, before ever they assayed whether it was feasible (as Master Henry now Lord

Lord *Jermin*, and some others in that unfortunate expedition informed me) and then making onely a *Bravado* towards the *Barracado*, as if they meant to force it with their fireships, and engines made with great stones (brought to *London* to repaire *Pauls*, & so unlikely to do any good service for *Rockell*) they discharged their Ordnance very valiantly above a league or two from the *Workes* they were to force, and without adventuring neerer or attempting to force the *Barre*, returned presently with infinite dishonour for *England*, leaving all their fireships and Engines in them to the French in a most unwarlike manner: but in their returne homewards many of these Ships were wrecked, drowned in a tempest, who would not adventure sinking in a fight, and the whole Navy shattered. Soon after which, poor *Rockell* (thus deserted and betraid) was surrendred into the French Kings & Cardinals possession, and all the Protestant Towns in *France* surprized, yeeded, pillaged, dismantled; so as they have since no Town or Fort of strength to retire unto, to preserve themselves from the force or massacres of their bloody Adversaries to whose merciless cruelties they are now wholly exposed upon all occasions by our meanes. I pray God this trechery against them, and the blood of those many thousand Protestants then shed in *France* by our occasion, be not one principall cause why God (by way of retaliation) hath permitted the Papists in *Ireland* and *England* to shed so much Protestant blood in these Reames as they have done of late, for our refusing or neglecting to avenge their blood upon those romanized Conspirators, who were the occasion of this their irreparable losse and bloodshed.

But to returne home againe from this deplorable action; the second Parliament in King *Charles* his Reigne being dissolved sodainly in disgusts, as you have heard, there was a desperate plot laid to blow up our Religion, Liberties, Properties, all at once, by the Jesuiticall, Arminian and Prelaticall Faction.

To effect this, they set on foot an enforced Loane or Benevolence to the King, to which every man must be summoned and compelled to lend mony according to his ability: to which end there were Commissions and Instructions, together with speciall Commissioners sent into every County, to summon all Free-holders and men of estate to lend what the Commissioners should assesse them: and to prepare the people the better to contribute, *Doctor Manwaring* preached two Sermons before the King and his Court at *White-hall*, and *Doctor Sibthorpe* another Sermon at the Assises at *Northampton* by the now Arch-bishop of *Canterbury* his instigation, who perused, and caused these Sermons to be printed, by the Kings speciall Command, with some additions and purgations of his owne) to preach the people out of their just rights in point of Conscience; and the Judges were likewise enjoyned in their charges and circuits, to declare the legality of them (and so intrall the Subjects to this and all other arbitrary taxes) in poynt of Law. And that this malevolent enforced Benevolence might passe more currently and plausibly among the people, the aiding of our Protestant Allies in *Germany*, *Denmarke*, *France* (and particularly the reliefe of *Rockell*, then besieged) against the Papists and their potent enemies, was made the principall end thereof, and a Parliament was promised to be summoned if this loan succeeded, otherwise not, though the issue proved, a Parliament was rather pretended, then really intended by the chief Advisers and Promoters of it, to wit, the Duke of Buckingham, Bishop *Land* and their Confederates.

The totall summe designed to be levyed proportionnably upon all Counties by this loane (as appeares by Secretary *Windebanks* memorials concerning it) was 173411. li. His Majesties Letter, to the severall Counties to draw on this Contribution (as Secretary *Windebanks* owne Copy manifests) were as followeth, being all dated in February 1627.

CHARLES REX.

IT is now knowne to all men, that Our deare Uncle the King of *Denmarke*, is brought into great distresse, that without present succour the Sound will be lost, Our Garrison in *Strand* broken by the Emperours Forces, which now streightly besiege it, Our *Eastland* Trade (which maintaines Our Shipping) and the Staple of

Han.

Hamborough (which vents Our Cloath) both gotten from Vs: Besides, it is knowne likewise, that two great Kings of *Spaine* and *France*, and the Pope with them are joy-
ned to root out Our Religion; that their Admirals the Duke of *Guise* and *Don Frederick de Toledo*, are at this present before *Rochell*, and endeavouring to block it up: that they have store of Land-men ready upon the coast of Britaine, with them and other forces ready to invade us. NOTE.

Of these imminent dangers to true Religion, to Our Allies, Our Countries, and the Trade of Our people, We assure Our Selves every well-affected Subject will be very sensible, as We are; and certainly there is a necessity come upon Vs, not so much of debating as acting Our defence; and unlesse there be a present meanes found to let a Fleet to Sea to disband them that lye before *Rochell*, that Towne and Our Religion in those parts are sure to be ruined.

We have (beyond the custome of Our royall Progenitors) spared neither Our Jewels, nor Plate, nor Our Lands, to supply publike occasions; We now expect speedy and proportionable supply for this service from the love and duty of Our people, whence that charge for their owne preservation should ever come.

We find further in the debate of this businesse with Our privy Counsell, that it is not possible this Fleet of Ours now to be set forth, can stay safely till a Parliament be assembled; and We think it neither wise nor safe for Our Selfe or you to be taken sitting in a Parliament, and so proclaime to the world that We consult too late; therefore though We are issuing out Our Writs for a present Parliament, yet because We find the businesse cannot stay so long (since that must have the ordinary course of Summons) VVe expect your present performance of this service, not doubting but that the Parliament when it comes will consider the urgency of the thing, and the hast of the time, and give Us thanks for this timely provision.

Now this VVe must let you know, that if you make this present supply, We will then goe on with Our Parliament, if not, then We must thinke of a more speedy way: and yet it is not VVe that put this condition upon you, but the meere necessity of the time and the service; which if you neglect, then it is not Our fault but your owne that ye have not a Parliament; for VVe must put you in mind, that it is not possible the affaires of Christendome should receive a turne to Our advantage, but onely by Gods blessing and Our speed; and we assure you that your making us and your selves by this present ayd to sit safe in Parliament, nothing shall then divert us from meeting you at our day prefixed. NOTE.

And since all men see that it is not safe to set downe now without this Fleet to back us, it will be lesse fit then when the yeere is further advanced, and though this may seem to you a great charge, yet we have been so carefull in ordering and proportioning the businesse, that we have laid a greater summe upon Our Selfe then upon You.

And we further recommend unto you, that Our former distractions (the onely causes of Our disadvantage abroad) may be laid downe, that so Gods blessing may come in to Our successe: that as Our last devissions did us more harme then the common enemy, so our present union testified in this foregoing signe of preparing this Fleet (which is of greater consequence and will adde more credit then the money in selfe) may be the happy forerunner of a future happinesse.

And last of all. since this great businesse of setting out Ships used to be charged upon the port Townes and neighbouring Ships, is too heavy for them to beare alone in this great proportion; therefore we have thought fit, with the advice of Our privy Counsell, and agreeable to the presidents of former times, to cause the whole charge of this Fleet to be cast up and distributed among all the Counties at a proportionable rate, according to which proportion the summe to be raised in.

And because we are confident of your forwardnesse and zeale to the service so deeply concerning the interest and safety of you all; we give you the power, but commit the trust for the manner of levying thereof to your care; yet in such sort, that you will not make the uneven rate of Subsidy your onely rule of proportion, but proceed

ceed according to the true worth of mens lands and estates within the County, that so the poorer may be eased, and yet the businesse be done.

The time assigned for Our said Fleet to be at sea, is the first of *March* next; and therefore you are presently upon receipt of these Our Letters to assemble your selves, and to apportion the severall summes to each division or hundred, and within three dayes after to repaire to the said severall places, and to take order for the setting of Collectors, which you are with all speed to certifie to Our Counsell, and to take order for the returne of the monies before the said first of *March*.

What further instructions shall be thought necessary, you shall receive from Our Counsell; but thus much We are pleased to signifie under Our owne hand, that you and all men may know, that the necessary preservation of the Church and Commonwealth preleth Vs to this hast, and that We for Our part will not be wanting to Our duty of protection; and We are confident our Subjects will not desert either Vs or themselves, the Church or Common wealth; neither doubt We but that Gods blessing will be upon our mutuall accord and endeavours, which We hope the present ensuing Parliament will (to our great comfort) manifest to the World.

How illegal this Loane was, and what an unlawfull Oath and instructions followed this Letter, you may read in the *Petition of Right*, 3. *Caroli*.

The Papists were very forwards to advance this loane, since it made much to promote their designes and would have been a meanes to keep off a Parliament, the only obstacle to their proceedings growth and intentions; inasmuch that Doctor *Atwater* in his Sermon, page 30 21 22. urgeth their example, to perswade submission to this loane; and Doctor *Sibthorpe* in his Sermon intituled (a) *Apostolicall Obedience*, hath this passage to induce Protestants to contribute cheerfully and largely to this Loane. The Papists lye at wait, if they could find a rent between our Sovereigne and his Subjects to reauce Superstition into England: I speake no more then I have heard from themselves; whiles I have observed their forwardnesse TO OFFER DOV-
(a) P. 20, 21. BLE, according to the current of a later law; yea to professe, that THEY WOULD DEPART WITH THE HALFE OF THEIR GOODS: And how or why can this FORWARDNESSE be in them, but in hope to cast the imputation of Frowardnesse upon us, and to seeme that (which the Jesuits will not suffer them to be) loving and loyall Subjects, &c. You may guesse at the end of this project by the Papists forwardnesse to advance it.

But notwithstanding this forwardnesse of the Papists and others to promote this Benevolence, the best affected Gentlemen to Religion, Parliament, and the common Liberty in all Counties, considering the danger therof strenuously resisted it; for which divers of them were enforced to daunce attendance on the Counsell & others imprisoned; by whose examples, this project was in a great measure frustrated and a new Parliament resolved to be summoned by the Major Vote of the Counsell Table. *Jan. 29. 1627.* though the now Arch-bishop with some others opposed it, and accordingly a Parliament was summoned and assembled in *March* following.

A little before the beginning of this Parliament, a Colledge of Jesuits who kept together in Commons, and had their officers and books of account duly kept, was discovered in *Cerken-well*, neere the Church; their Books, Vestments, Reliques, were seized on, and some of their persons (hid in private corners of their Colledge) apprehended by *Justice Long*, and sent to *Newgate*. But when they were to be arraigned, they were by their powerfull friends at Court (I know not by what Warrants and speciall commands) released upon baile, and conveyed out of harmes way, to the great offence and discontent both of the people and Parliament, which examined this grand abuse, but could not apprehend the Jesuits to doe exemplary justice on them, so potent were their Patrons. Among their papers, there was found the copy of a Letter newly directed by them to their Father Rector at *Bruxels*; the extract whereof I met with in the now Arch-bishops Study, thus indorsed with his owne hand.

March

March 1628. A Jesuits Letter sent to the Rector at Bruxels, about the
ensuing Parliament.

Wherein there are these memorable passages, not fit to be concealed.

FATHER RECTOR, let not the damp of astonishment seize upon your Ardent and Zealous Soule in apprehending the sodaine and unexpected calling of a Parliament: We have not opposed, but rather furthered it, so that we hope as much in this Parliament, as ever we feared any in Queen Elizabeths dayes. You must know, the Counsell is engaged to assist the King by way of Prerogative, in case the Parliamentary way should faile; you shall see this Parliament will resemble the *Pellican*, which takes a pleasure to digge out with her beake her owne bowels.

NOTE.

The election of the Knights and Burgeses hath been in such confusion of apparant faction, as that which we were wont to procure heretofore with much art and industry (when the Spanish match was in treaty) now breaks out naturally as a botch or boyle, and spets, and spues out its owne rankor and venome.

You remember how that most famous and immortall States-man, the Count of Gondamare, fed King James his fancy, and rocked him asleep with the soft and sweet sound of peace, to keep up the Spanish treaty. Likewise we were much bound to some States-men of our owne Country, to gaine time in procuring these most advantageous cessations of Armes in the *Palatinate*, and advancing the honour and integrity of the Spanish Nation, and villifying the Hollanders, remonstrating to King James, that that State was most ungratefull both to his predecessors (Queen Elizabeth) and his sacred Majesty; that the States were more obnoxious then the Turke, and perpetually injured his Majesties loving Subjects in the East Indies; and likewise they have usurped from his Majesty, the regality and unvaluable profit of the narrow Seas, in fishing upon the English coast, &c.

This great States-man had but one principall meanes to further their great and good designes, which was to set on King James, that none but the *Puritan Faction* which plotted nothing but Anarchy and his confusion, were averse to this most happy Union. We steered on the same course, and have made great use of this anarchicall election, and have prejudicated and anticipated the great one, that none but the Kings enemies and his are chosen of this Parliament, &c.

NOTE.

We have now many strings to our Bow, and have strongly fortified our faction and have added two Bulwarks more; for when King James lived (you know) he was very violent against *Arminianisme*, and interrupted (with his pestilent wit and deep learning) our strong designes in *Holland*, and was a great friend to that old Rebell and Heretick the Prince of Orange.

Now we have planted that soveraigne Drugg *Arminianisme*, which we hope will purge the Protestants from their Heresie, and it flourisheth and beares fruit in due season.

NOTE.

The materials which build up our other Bulwarke, are the projectors and beggers of all ranks and qualities whatsoever. Both these Factions cooperate to destroy the Parliament, and introduce a new species and forme of government, which is Oligarchy.

These serve as direct mediums and instruments to our end, which is the universall Catholike Monarchy: Our foundation must be mutation, this mutation will cause a relaxation, which will serve as so many violent diseases, as the Stone, Gout, &c. to the speedy destruction of our perpetuall and insufferable anguish of the body, which is worse then death it selfe.

We proceed now by counsell and mature deliberation, how and when to worke upon the Dukes jealousy and revenge, and in this we give the honour to those which merit it, which are the Church Catholikes.

There is another matter of consequence which we take much into our consideration and tender care, which is to stave off the *Puritans*, that they hang not in the Dukes cares, they are impudent subtile people.

And it is to be feared lest they should negotiate a reconciliation between the Duke

M

and

and the Parliament; 'tis certaine the Duke would gladly have reconciled himself to the Parliament at *Oxford* and *Westminster*; but now we assure our selves, we have so handled the matter, that both Duke and Parliament are irreconcilable.

NOTE. *For the better prevention of the Puritanes, the Arminians have already locked up the Dukes eares, and we have those of our owne Religion which stand continually at the Dukes chamber, to see who goes in and out; we cannot be too circumspect and carefull in this regard. I cannot chuse but laugh to see how some of our owne coat have re-countred themselves, you would scarce know them if you saw them; and 'tis admirable how in speech and gesture they act the Puritanes. The Cambridge Schollers to their wofull experience shall see, we can act the Puritanes a little better then they have done the Jesuits; they have abused our sacred patron Saint Ignatius in jest, but we will make them smart for it in earnest. I hope you will excuse my merry digression, for I confesse unto you, I am at this time transported with joy, to see how hap-*

NOTE. *pily all Instruments and meanes, as well great as lesser, cooperate unto our purposes: But to returne unto the maine fabrick: our foundation is Arminianisme, the Arminians and Projectors, as it appears in the Premises, affect mutation; this we second and enforce by probable arguments. In the first place, we take into consideration the Kings honour and present necessity, and we shew how the King may free himselfe of his ward, as Lewis the XI. did, and for his great splendor and lustre, he may raise a vast revenue, and not be beholding to his Subjects, which is by way of imposition of Excise: Then our Church Catholikes proceed to shew the meanes how to settle this excise, which must be by a mercenary army of Horse and Foot: for the Horse, we have made that sure, they shall be Forreigners and Germanes, who will eat up the Kings Revenues, and spoile the Country whensoever they come, though they should be well paid; what havocke will they make there when they get no pay, or are not duly paid? they will doe more mischief then we hope the army will doe.*

Note, this was before the commissions for the Excise and bringing over the Germane Horse were discovered to the Parliament.

We are provident and carefull that this Mercenary army of 2000. Horse and 20000. Foot shall be taken on and in pay before the excise be settled: in forming the excise, the Country is most likely to rise; if the mercenary army subjugate the Country, then the Souldiers and projectors shall be paid out of the confiscations; if the Country be too hard for the Souldiers, then they must consequently mutiny, which is equally advantagious unto us. Our superlative designe is to worke the Protestants as well as the Catholikes to welcome in a Conquerour, and that is by this meanes. We hope instantly to dissolve trades, and hinder the building of Shipping, in devising probable designes, and putting out the State upon Expeditions, as that of *Cales*, in taking away the Merchants Ships, that so they might not easily catch and light upon the *West-India Fleet*, &c.

By this Letter we see how Jesuits were the first planters of *Arminianisme* among us, how they haunted the Dukes lodgings, and projected the bringing in of the Germane Horse and Excise, the Commissions for both which were realities, not fancies afterwards discovered, read and cancelled in Parliament.

In this Parliament the now Archbishop *Doctor Laud* was questioned for licencing *Doctor Manwaring*s and *Sibthorps* Sermons, concerning the Loane, for maintaining, favouring Arminians and persons disaffected to our Religion; and this ensuing Complaint and Remonstrance drawn and presented by the House of Commons to the King, concerning the excessive growth of Popery and Arminianisme in England and Ireland, and the suppression of the Protestant Religion, preaching, godly Ministers, Books &c. notwithstanding all former Royall promises, answers and Protestations to the contrary, made the last Parliament, which proved in event but pious frauds or policies to delude the impoliticke vulgar.

The Remonstrance delivered by the House of Commons to the King June 11. 1628.

Most dread Sovereigne:

AS with all humble thankfulness we (your dutifull Commons now in Parliament assembled) doe acknowledge the great comfort which we have in the assurance

rance of your Majesties pious disposition; so we think it a most necessary duty (being called by your Majesty to consult and advise of the great and urgent affaires of this Church and Common-wealth, finding them at this time in apparant danger of destruction) faithfully and dutifully to informe your Majesty thereof, (and with bleeding heart and bended knee) to crave such speedy redresse therein, as to your owne wisdom (unto which we humbly submit our selves and our desires) shall seeme most meet and convenient.

What a multitude and potency of your Majesties enemies are abroad; what be their ambitious and malicious ends, and how vigilant and constantly industrious they are in pursuing the same, it is well knowne to your Majesty, together with the dangers threatned thereby to your sacred person and your Kingdomes, and the calamities which have already fallen, and hath daily increased upon your Friends and Allies; of all which we are well assured your Majesty is most sensible, and will accordingly (in your great wisdom, and with the gravest and most mature Counsels according to the exegency of the times and occasions) provide (by all good means) to prevent and help the same. To which end, we most humbly entreat your Majesty, first especially to cast your eyes upon the miserable condition of this your owne Kingdome, of late so strangely weakned, impoverished, dishonoured and dejected, that unlesse (through your Majesties most gracious wisdom, goodnesse and justice) it be speedily raised to a better condition, it is in no little danger to become a sodaine pray to the enemies thereof; and of the most happy and flourishing, to be the most miserable and contemptible Nation in the world. NOTE.

In the discovery of which dangerous mischiefs and inconveniences lying upon us, we doe freely protest, that it is farre from our thoughts to lay the least imputation upon your Majesties sacred person, or the least scandall on your government: For we doe in all sincerity, and with joyfulness of our hearts (not onely for our selves, but in the name of all the Commons in your Realme, whom we represent) ascribe as much honour to your Majesty and acknowledgement of duty, as a most loyall and affectionate people can give unto the best King, for so you are, and so you have been pleased abundantly to expresse your selfe this present Parliament, by your Majesties cleere and satisfactory answer to our Petition of Right; for which both our selves and our Posterities shall blesse God, and ever preserve a thankfull memory of your great goodnesse and justice therein; and we doe verily beleeve, that all, or most of all those things, which we shall now present unto your Majesty, are either altogether unknowne to you, or else by some of your Majesties Ministers offered under such specious pretences, as may hide their owne bad intentions and ill consequence of them from your Majesty: But we assure our selves that according to the good example of your noble Predecessors, nothing can make your Majesty (being a wise and Judicious Prince, and above all things desirous of the welfare of your people) more in love with Parliaments then this (which is one of the principall ends of calling them) that therein you may be truly informed of the State of all the severall parts of your Kingdome, and how your Officers and Ministers doe behave themselves in the charge and trust reposed in them by your Majesty, which is scarce possible to be made knowne to you but in Parliament, as was declared by your blessed Father, when he was pleased to put the Commons in mind, that it would be the greatest unfaithfulness and breach of duty to his Majesty, and of the trust committed to them by their Country that could be; if in setting forth the grievances of the people and the condition of all the parts of this Kingdome from whence they came, they did not deale cleerly with him (without sparing any how deare or neere soever they were unto him) if they were hurtfull unto all the Common-wealth.

In confidence therefore of your Majesties most ready and gracious acception in a matter of so high importance; in faithfull discharge of our duties, we doe (first of all) most humbly beseech your Majesty to take notice, that howsoever we know your Majesty doth from your soul abhor that any such should be imagined or attempted; yet there is a generall feare conceived in your people of some seeret working and combi-

NOTE.

nation to introduce into this Kingdome Innovation and change of holy Religion (more precious to us then our lives, and whatever the world can afford.) Our feares and jealousies herein are not meerly conjecturall, but arising out of such certaine and visible effects, as may demonstrate a true and reall cause; for notwithstanding the many good & wholsome lawes made to prevent the encrease of Popery within this Kingdome, and notwithstanding your Majesties most gracious and satisfactory answer to the Petition of both Houses on that behalfe, presented to your Majesty at *Oxford*, we find there hath followed no good execution or effect; but on the contrary (at which your Majesty out of the quick sense of your owne Religious heart, cannot but be in the highest measure displeased) those of that Religion doe find extraordinary favours and respects in Court from persons of great quality and power there, unto whom they continually resort; and in particular to the Countesse of *Buckingham's*, who her selfe openly professing that Religion, is a knowne favourer and supporter of them that doe the same; which we well hoped (upon your Majesties Answer to the aforesaid Petition of *Oxford*) should not have been permitted, nor that any of your Majesties Subjects of that Religion, or justly to be suspected, should be entertained in the service of your Majesty, or of your Royall Consort the Queen: Some likewise of that Religion have had Honours, Offices, and places of command and authority lately conferred upon them.

NOTE.

NOTE.

But that which striketh the greatest terror into the hearts of your loyall Subjects concerning this point is that letters for stay of legall proceedings against them have been procured from your Majesty (by what indirect meanes we know not) and Commissions under the great Seale granted and executed for composition to be made with popish Reculants: inhibitions also and restraints both to the Ecclesiasticall and Temporall Courts, and Officers to intermeddle with them; which is conceived to amount to no lesse then a Toleration, odious to God, full of dishonour and extreame disprofit to your Majesty, of great scandall and grieve to your good people, and of apparant dangers of the present estate of your Majesty and this Kingdome; and in speciall about *London* and the Suburbs thereof, where exceeding many Families of them doe make their abode, frequent Masse at *Denmark-house* and other places; and by their often meetings and conferences, have unhappy opportunities of combining their counsells and strengths together, to the hazard of your Majesties safety, and the State; and most especially in these doubtfull and calamitous times. As our feare concerning change or subversion of Religion is grounded upon the daily encrease of Papists the onely and professed enemies thereof, for the reasons formerly mentioned; so are the hearts of your Subjects no lesse perplexed, when with sorrow they behold a daily growth and spreading of the Faction of the *Arminians*; that being (as your Majesty well knowes) but a cunning way to bring in Popery, and the professors of those opinions the common disturbers of the Protestant Churches and incendiaries of those States, wherein they have gotten any head, being Protestants in shew, but Jesuits in opinion and practice; which caused your royall Father (with so much pious wisdom and ardent zeale) to endeavour the suppressing of them, as well at home as in the neighbour Countries: and your gracious Majesty imitating his most worthy example, have openly and by your Proclamations declared your dislike of those persons and of their opinions; who (notwithstanding) are much favoured and advanced, not wanting friends even of the Clergy, neere to your Majesty; namely, Doctor *Nonte* Bishop of *Winchester*, and Doctor *Laud* Bishop of *Bath and Wells*, who are justly suspected to be unsound in their opinions that way; And it being now generally the way to preferment and promotion in the Church, many Schollers doe bend their Studies to maintaine those Errours: their Books and opinions are suffered to be printed and published; and on the other side, the impressions of such as are written against them, and in defence of the Orthodox Religion, are hindered and prohibited; and (which is a boldesse most incredible) this restraint of Orthodox Books is made under colour of your Majesties (formerly mentioned) Proclamation: The intent and meaning whereof, we know was quite contrary. And further to encrease

NOTE.

our feares (concerning innovation in Religion) we find that there hath been no small labouring to remove that, which is the most powerfull meanes to strengthen and increase our own Religion, and to oppose the contrary, which is the diligent teaching and instructing the people in the true knowlegde and worship of Almighty God; and therefore meanes hath been sought out to disparage and discountenance pious, painfull, and Orthodox Preachers; and how conformable soever, and peaceable in their dispositions and carriage they be; yet the preferment of such is opposed, and instead of being encouraged, they are molested by vexatious courses and pursuits, and hardly permitted to Lecture, even in those places where are no constant preaching Ministers: whereby many of your good people (whose soules in this case we desire your Majesty to commiserate) are kept in ignorance, and are apt to be easily seduced into errors and superstition. It doth not a little also encrease our dangers and feares this way, to understand the miserable condition of your Kingdome of *Ireland*, where without controule the popish Religion is openly professed and practised in every part thereof, Popish jurisdiction being generally exercised and avowed; Monasteries, Nonneries and other superstitious houses newly erected, re-edified, replenished with men and women of severall orders, and in a plentifull manner maintained in *Dublin*, and most of the great Townes and divers other places of that Kingdome, which of (a) what ill consequence it may prove, if not seasonably repressed, we leave to your Majesties wilddome to judge: But most humbly beseech you (as we assure our selves you doe) to lay the serious consideration thereof to your Royall and pious heart, and that some timely course may be taken for redresse therein.

NOTE:

(a) Note this.

And now if to all these your Majesty will be pleased to adde, the consideration of the circumstance of time, wherein these courses tending to the destruction of true Religion, within these your Kingdomes have been taken; even at such times, when the same is with open force and violence persecuted in other Countries, and all the reformed Churches of Christendome either depressed or miserably distressed; we doe humbly appeale to your Majesties Princely judgement, whether there be not a just ground of feare, that there is some secret and strange cooperating here with the enemies of our Religion abroad, for the utter extirpation thereof; and whither if these courses be not speedily redrest, and the profession of true Religion encouraged, we can expect any other but misery and ruine speedily to fall upon us; especially, if besides the visible and apparant dangers, whereby we are encompassed round about, you would be pleased piously to remember the displeasure of Almighty God alwayes bent against the neglect of his holy Religion; the strokes of whose divine justice we have already felt, and doe still feele (with smart and sorrow) in great measure, &c.

NOTE:

This memorable Petition and Remonstrance predicting (and if then cordially embraced, pursued, preventing) all those bloody warres and miseries which since have justly befallen us by the growing Popish party both in *England* and *Ireland*, being presented to his Majesty by the Commons House, was not onely slighted, disregarded, and taken very ill by his Majesty and his Privy Counsellours, but likewise called in and suppressed, and Bishop *Land* in the Kings name (by his speciall command as he pretends) returned this peremptory answer to it in writing (the originall whereof was found in his Study, under his owne hand) contrary both to his knowledge and conscience.

A Preface first, and then as followes.

AND although We are not bound to give an account of Our Actions but to God onely, out of the honour and integrity of Our Grace, the love and care of Our people, the great and hearty desire We have to take off all feares and jealousies from Our loyal and loving Subjects; We have thought fit to declare those reasons following, why We

have called in this Remonstrance, which yet We presume and constantly beleeve was framed and delivered up unto Us with good-intentions, though by a disguised Zeale.

For first that Remonstrance begins at Religion, and feares innovation of it, innovation by Popery: But We would have Our Subjects of all sorts to call to mind what difficulties and dangers We endured not many yeers since for Religions sake; that We are the same still, and our holy Religion is as pretious to Vs, as it is or can be to any of them; and we will no more admit innovation therein, then they that think they have done well in fearing it so much.

'Tis true that all effects expected have not followed upon the Petition delivered at Oxford; but We are in least fault for that: for supply being not afforded Vs, disabled Us to execute all that was desired, and caused the stay of those legall proceedings which have helped to swell up this Remonstrance: Yet let all the Countiees of England be examined, and London and the Suburbs with them, neither is there such a noted encrease of Papists, nor such cause of feare as is made, nor hath any amounted to such an odious Tolerating as is charged upon it, nor neere any such.

For that Commission so much complained of, both the Matter and Intent of it are utterly mistaken; for it doth not dispense with any Penalty or any course to be taken with any Papist for the exercise of their Religion; no nor with the *Pecuniary Mult,* or not conformity to Ours; It was advised for the encrease of Our profit, and the returning of that into Our purse, which abuse or connivency of inferiour Ministers might perhaps divert another way: If that or any other shall be abused in the execution, We will be ready to punish upon any just complaint.

The next feare is the daily growth and spreading of the Arminian Faction, called a cunning way to bring in Popery: But We hold this charge as great a wrong to Our Selfe and Our Government, as the former; for Our People must not be taught by a Parliament Remonstrance or any other way, that We are so ignorant of Truth, or so carelesse of the profession of it, that any Opinion, or Faction, or whatever it be called, should thrust it selfe so farre and so fast into Our Kingdomes without Our knowledge of it; this is a meere dreame of them that wake, and would make Our loyall and loving People think, We sleepe the while.

In this charge there is great wrong done to two eminent Prelates that attend Our Person, for they are accused without producing any the least shew or shadow or proof against them; and should they, or any other attempt innovation of Religion, either by that open or any cunning way, We should quickly take other order with them, and not stay for your Remonstrance.

To help on this, Our people are made beleeve there is a restraint of Books Orthodoxall: But We are sure since the late Parliament began, some whom the Remonstrance calls Orthodox, have assumed to themselves an unsufferable liberty in printing. Our Proclamation commanded a restraint on both sides till the passions of men might subside and calme; and had this been obeyed as it ought, We had not now been tossed in this tempest: and for any distressing or discountenancing of good Preachers, We know there is none, if they be, as they are called, *Good*: But Our good people shall never want that spirituall comfort which is due unto them. And for the preferments which We bestow, We have ever made it Our great Care to give them as rewards of desert and paines; but as the preferments are Ours, so will We be Judge of the desert Our Selfe, and not be taught by a Remonstrance.

For Ireland We thinke in Case of Religion, 'tis not worse then *Queen Elizabeth* left it; and for other affaires 'tis as good as We found it, nay, perhaps better: and We take it for a great disparagement of Our Government that it should be voyced, that new Monasteries, Nunneries, and other Superstitious Houses are erected and replenished in *Dublin* and other great Townes of that Our Kingdome: for We assure Our Selfe, Our Deputy and Counsell there will not suffer God and Our Government so to be dishonoured, but We should have had some account of it from them; and We may not endure to have Our good people thus misled (a) with shewes.

There

NOTE.

NOTE.

(a) They are now turned into bloody realities.

There is likewise somewhat considerable in the time, when these practises to undermine true Religion in Our Kingdomes are set on foot. The Remonstrance tells Vs, it is now when Religion is opposed by open force in all other parts. But We must tell Our people, there is no undermining Practises at home against it, if they practise not against it, that seeme most to labour for it; for while Religion seems to be contended for in such a factious way which cannot be Gods way, the heat of that doth often melt away that, which it labours earnestly but perhaps not wisely, to preserve; And for Gods judgements which We and Our people have felt, and have cause to feare, VVe shall prevent them best by a true and religious Remonstrance of the amendment of Our lives, &c.

This Answer to the Parliaments Remonstrance, and the publike calling of it in, gave great offence to the House, & all true Protestants; but infinitely imboldned, augmented the Popish and Arminian Faction; and so much disgusted the common people, (being seconded with a sodaine prorogation of the Parliament, to prevent the Remonstrance of the House of Commons, against the illegality of taking Tonnage and Poundage without grant in Parliament; as appears by the Kings owne Speech at the adjournment on this occasion, printed after his royall Answer to the Petition of Right) that the King to give the people some seeming satisfaction (who were then speedily to pay in the greatest Subsidy ever granted and collected in so short a time) published a Proclamation bearing date the 7. of July 1628. intituled, *A Proclamation, declaring his Majesties pleasure concerning the proceedings had and to be had against Popish Recusants according to the Lawes, and for directions to his Majesties Commissioners for that service both in the Southerne and Northerne parts, for making compositions with Recusants.* Which Proclamation though it appeared in shew to be against the Papists, yet really, it was in favour of them, to compound at great undervalues for the Kings two parts of their Lands; which Compositions came to little or nothing in the Southerne parts, as I have manifested in my (a) *Royall Popish Favourite*; and not to much in the North; as appears by this note of *Compositors made with Recusants in the North, with an Estimate of their estates, found among Windebankes papers.*

June 26. 1628

a P. 15. to 19.

Compositions made by the Viscount Wentworth with Recusants.

Staffordshire.

	li.	s.	d.		li.	s.	d.
Francis Harecourt of Ranton Esq. per an.	25	0	0	worth per an.	200	0	0.
Philip Gifford of Hyon Widow, per an.	20	0	0	worth per an.	200	0	9.
Walter Brooke of Lapley Esq. per an.	30	0	0	worth per an.	400	0	0.
Dorothy Fowler of St. Thomas Widow, per an.	13	6	8	worth per an.	200	0	0.

Lancashire.

Richard Massey of Rixton Esq. per an.	40	0	0	worth per an.	400	0	0.
Abraham Laughton of Lowe Esq. per an.	10	0	0	worth per an.	150	0	0.
Anne Sherburne of Lathgryme Wid. per an.	24	0	0	worth per an.	200	0	0.
Sir Cuthbert Clifton Kt.)							
Thomas Clifton Esq. and) of Lytham, per an.	100	0	0	worth per an.	1500	0	0.
Mistris Jane Stanley)							
Isabell Anderton and) of Euxton, per an.	8	0	0	worth per an.	150	0	0.
Hugh Anderton her Son,)							
Sir William Norres of Speake Knight, per an.	60	0	0	worth per an.	500	0	0.
Thomas Hesketh of Poulton Esq. per an.	15	0	0	worth per an.	200	0	0.
William Anderton of Anderton Esq. per an.	20	0	0	worth per an.	250	0	0.
Roger Anderton of Birchley Esq. per an.	21	12	3	worth per an.	300	0	0.
Thomas Dolton of Thurnham Esq. per an.	15	0	0	worth per an.	200	0	0.
Sir William Gerrard of Bryn Baronet, per an.	66	13	4	worth per an.	800	0	0.
James Anderton of Clayton Esq. per an.	40	0	0	worth per an.	500	0	0.
John Preston of Mannour Esq. per an.	80	0	0	worth per an.	1500	0	0.

Derbyshire.

Derbyshire.

Sir Henry Merrie of Barton Kt. per an. 66 13 8 worth per an. 600 0 0.
 George Boole of Sprinkehill Esq. per an. 20 0 0 worth per an. 250 0 0.

Nottinghamshire.

George Markham and
 Mary Markham his Mother } of Ollerton, per an. 15 0 0 worth per an. 800 0 0

Lincolnshire.

Sir John Thymbleby of Irnham Kt. per an. 160 0 0 worth per an. 1500 0 0.
 Anthony Munson of Lincolne Esq. per an. 25 0 0 worth per an. 400 0 0.
 Richard Townley of Norton Esq. per an. 150 0 0 worth per an. 1500 0 0.
 there aid in Lancashire.

Northumberland.

Roger Widdrington of Cartington Esq. per an. 60 0 0 worth per an. 500 0 0.
 Marke Errington of Pont-Island Esq. per an. 45 0 0 worth per an. 400 0 0.
 Thomas Haggerston of Haggerston Esq. per an. 20 0 0 worth per an. 250 0 0.
 there aid in Lancashire.

Yorkshire.

George Wain of Laberne Gent. per an. 10 0 0 worth per an. 150 0 0.
 Marmaduke Holtlie of Scackleton Esq. per an. 20 0 0 worth per an. 150 0 0.
 Allen Aiscongh of Greenhobottom Esq. per an. 22 0 0 worth per an. 600 0 0.
 Sir Ralph Ellerker of Riesby Knight, per an. 50 0 0 worth per an. 600 0 0.

1 Jac. c. 4.
 3 Jac. c. 4.

By the Lawes of this Realme, the King was to have two parts of Recusants Lands and Estates divided into three, and 40. l. out of 60. l. per annum 200. l. out of 300. l. per annum : But after the rate of these Compositions at undervalues (one part of the Commons grievance in their forced Remonstrance and Petition) the King instead of his two parts of three, had not above one part of 10. or 15. in the North, where Compositions were highest, and for ought I find, not really and duly paid when made. Now because the Fees in passing these Compositions were somewhat high, the Recusants preferred this Petition to the King to mitigate them, indorsed with Secretary Windebanks owne hand in this manner; Poore Recusants for moderation of Fees.

To the KINGS most excellent Majesty.

The humble PETITION of the poore Recusants of the Southerne and Northerne parts of this your Highnesse Realme of England

Humbly sheweth :

That whereas your sacred Majesty hath been pleased to accept such of your Petitioners into Grace, as should submit themselves by way of Composition to your Majesty, which your Petitioners most willingly imbraced, and with all thankfulness have submitted themselves thereunto.

But so it is, may it please your most excellent Majesty, that the great and excessive rate and charge of passing their grants and other discharges, is such, that without your Majesty be further pleased to extend your mercy towards them, your poore Petitioners (although they have used the uttermost of their mean endeavours) can reape no benefit of your Majesties gracious favour vouchsafed unto them.

They therefore most humbly beseech your Majesty to be pleased to referre the settlement and establishing of the said Fees to the Lord Treasurer and the Lord Cottingham, who calling unto them your Majesties Vice-Presidents of the North, may direct such moderate fees and meanes to passe the said grants and other discharges, as your Petitioners meane ability may be able to undergoe.

And your Petitioners (as in duty bound) shall ever pray for your Majesties long and prosperous reigne over us.

But this Proclamation rather displeasing then satisfying, it was thus seconded with the ensuingt ogive more content.

By

By the KING.

*A Proclamation declaring His Majesties Royall Pleasure and Command,
for putting the Lawes and Statutes made against Jesuits, Priests and Po-
pish Recusants in due execution.*

WHEREAS We have found by experience, that notwithstanding the strict and severe Lawes made and standing in force against *Jesuits, Priests*, and others having taken Orders by authority derived, or pretended to be derived from the Sea of *Rome*; and notwithstanding Our former restraints and prohibition, by Proclamation and otherwise many of them have presumed to resort and remaine within this Our Realme, and other parts of Our Dominions, and there doe daily endeavour to withdraw and reduce Our Subjects from the true Religion of Almighty God, and from their due Allegiance and Obedience towards Us their Liege Lord, and that many of Our Subjects misled by them, have adventured to receive, harbour and maintaine them, and thereby have incurred the danger of Our Lawes.

And therefore not finding that good effect which We did, and might justly expect of any former course taken in that behalfe, We have thought fit, and doe hereby publish Our royall pleasure and Command, that carefull and diligent search be made by all Our Officers and Ministers, and by all others to whom it may appertaine, for all *Jesuits, Priests*, and others having taken Orders by authority, derived or pretended to be derived from the Sea of *Rome*, and that wheresoever, and whensoever they shall be found, they be apprehended, and committed to the common Goale of that County where they shall be found, there to remaine without Baile or Mainprize, untill by due course of Law they be tryed, and proceeded with according to Law; which We will shall be done with all convenient expedition: And if upon their tryall and Conviction there shall be cause to respite the execution of any of them, yet We are resolved not to let them lye in those common Goales, much lesse to wander about at large but according to the example of former times, to send them to the Castle of *Westbich*, or some other safe Prison, where they shall remaine under strait and close custody, and be wholly restrained from exercising their Functions, or ipreading their superstitious and dangerous Doctrine.

And We are also resolved, whereof We doe hereby give notice to all, whom it may concerne at their utmost perils, That the Harbourers, Receivers and Maintainers of *Jesuits, Priests* and all such others as have received or shall receive Orders as aforesaid, shall be left to the due and ordinary course of Law

And We doe further will and command, that all Our Judges, Justices and Ministers of Justice in their severall places, not onely doe observe Our will and pleasure before expressed, in all and every the premises, but also doe put all other Our Lawes in due execution against *Popish Recusants*, and that Our Judges of Assise at their returne out of their Circuits doe from time to time hereafter give a strict accompt of their proceedings therein unto Our Lord Keeper of the great Seale, and Our Lord Keeper doe present the same unto Vs.

And whereas We heretofore granted severall Commissions, for Leasing and demising of the Lands of *Recusants* liable to their forfeitures, with Instructions for the direction of Our Commissioners in that service, We, minding a due reformation of the manifold neglects and abuses of our inferiour officers and others, whereby that part of our Revenue hath been extreemly lessened, and those who were backward in Religion have been encouraged to persist in their obstinacy and blindnesse have caused those Commissions and Instructions to be revived, and many parts altered, for our better service and profit; And We doe hereby declare the same, to the intent that such as shall be willing to contract with Us or to further our service, or advance our profit in that behalfe, may attend our said Commissioners.

And whereas We are informed, that divers have contracted for Leases of Recusants

N

Lands

NOTE.

Quere, whether it were so done?

NOTE.

Lands, who doe not sue out their Leases, to our great hinderance, our will and pleasure is, That all such as have already contracted with our Commissioners for Leases of Recusants Lands shall passe them under our Seales before the end of Michaelmas Terme next; and such as shall hereafter contract for any such Leases, shall passe them under our Seales, before the end of the Terme then next following after such contracts made, or else their Contracts to be utterly voyd.

And We doe straitly charge all our said Commissioners, that they be carefull to advance our profit herein, according to the true intent of our Commissions and Instructions; and that they use all diligence to discover and avoid all abuses which may tend to the diminution of our profit, or to the encrease of Popery, and back-sliding from the true Religion established in the Church of England.

Given at Our Court at Southwicke, the third day of August in the fourth yeere of Our reigne of Great Britaine, France and Ireland.

A little before the next Session of Parliament, and during the Session it selfe, the King likewise issued out these successive Proclamations following, against Doctor Smith Bishop of Calcedon.

By the KING.

A Proclamation for the apprehension of Richard Smith a Popish Priest, styled, and calling himselfe the Bishop of Calcedon.

FOrasmuch as We certainly understand, that Richard Smith, an English man borne, by profession a Popish Priest, now is, and for some yeeres past hath been in this Realme, and here not onely perverteth our Subjects in their Religion, but doth also both by his writings in print and otherwise, and by his continuall practise, perswade those our Subjects to whom he hath access, from their Allegiance to Us their Liege Lord, and usurpeth to himselfe Episcopall Jurisdiction from the Sea of Rome, and exerciseth the same within this Kingdome, and holdeth continuall Intelligence with our Enemies whereby, according to the just Lawes of this Realme, he hath committed the offence of high treason: And yet nevertheless, divers of our Subjects seduced by him, doe receive, harbour and entertaine him, contrary to our Lawes, and have thereby incurred, and doe incur the penalty of those Lawes which are capitall to the offenders. We therefore being justly provoked by the boldnesse of the said Smith doe hereby straitly command all our loving Subjects, of whatsoever condition, quality or degree, that none of them directly or indirectly doe permit or suffer him to be concealed or harboured, but that forthwith they arrest and apprehend his body, and bring him before the next Justice of Peace, to the place where he shall be apprehended, whom We straitly command to commit him to prison without baile or main-prize, and presently thereupon informe Vs, or our Privy Counsell of his apprehension.

And We doe further declare hereby, that if any person shall hereafter directly or indirectly harbour or conceale the said Smith, or use, or connive at any meanes, whereby the said Smith may escape from being apprehended or arrested, that then We shall extend the uttermost severity of our Lawes against every such offender. And We further charge and command all and singular, our Judges, Justices of Peace, Majors, Sheriffs, Constables and all other our Officers, Ministers and loving Subjects, that if they shall find any person offending herein hereafter, that then they and every of them proceed with all diligence and roundnesse, not onely against the said Smith, but also against all such as shall harbour, conceale or connive at his concealment, or shall not use their best endeavours for his discovery and apprehension, according to the uttermost extent of our Lawes.

Given at Our Court at White-hall the 11. day of December, in the fourth yeere of Our reigne of Great Britaine, France and Ireland.

By

By the KING.

*A second Proclamation for the apprehension of Richard Smith a Popish Priest,
stiled, and calling himselfe, the Bishop of Calcedon*

WHereas by our Proclamation, bearing date the eleventh day of December last past, (for the reasons in that our Proclamation expressed) VVe did straitly command, that none of our Subjects should harbour or conceale the said *Smith*, but that forthwith they should arrest and apprehend his body, and bring him before the next Justice of Peace, to the place where he should be apprehended, whom VVe thereby commanded to commit him to prison without baile or mainprize. and presently to informe Us or our privy Counsell of his apprehension: And VVe did thereby declare, That if any person should then after, directly or indirectly, harbour or conceale the said *Smith*, or use, or connive at any meanes, whereby the said *Smith* might escape from being apprehended or arrested, that VVe should extend the uttermost severity of our Lawes against every such offender, as by our Proclamation at large appeareth; which our Proclamation hath not yet wrought that good effect which VVe expected, the said *Smith* being still hidden and harboured by those, who being infected and blinded with popish Superstition, preferre their respects to him, before their duty to Us, and the feare of Our high displeasure, and the consequence thereof; VVe therefore by the advice of our privy Counsell, have thought fit by this our second Proclamation to renew our former command in that behalfe.

And to the end that none of our Subjects may hereafter excuse themselves by a pretended ignorance of the danger they shall fall into, if they shall harbour or conceal him; VVe doe hereby publish and declare, that the said *Smith* is not onely a popish Priest, and with a high presumption taketh upon him to exercise Ecclesiasticall Jurisdiction, pretended to be derived from the Sea of *Rome*, within this our Realme, and endeavourerth to seduce our Subjects from the true Religion established in the Church of *England* (which by Gods assistance VVe shall ever constantly maintaine) but doth also seditiously and traiterously hold correspondence with our enemies, tending to the destruction of our State.

And therefore VVe doe now againe renew our former command for his apprehension and doe hereby further signifie, That whosoever shall lodge, harbour or relieve the said *Smith* or any other Priest, Jesuit, or other, having taken orders by authority pretended to be derived from the Sea of *Rome*, shall incur the danger of our Lawes made against the harbourers, lodgers and relievers of Priests, to the full extent thereof, which by the Statutes of this our Realme is Felony.

*Quere, what
Priests or
Harbours
of them hath
since suffered
in this kind?*

And VVe doe further hereby declare, (which VVe shall really performe) That whosoever shall discover the said *Smith*, and cause him to be apprehended, as aforesaid, shall have a reward of one hundred pounds in money to be presently paid unto him by Us, and shall also have the benefit of all such penalties and forfeitures, which shall or may accrue unto Us, and be forfeited by that person, in whose house the said *Smith* shall be found to have been harbored or concealed.

And VVe further charge and command hereby (as by our former Proclamation VVe did) all and singular our Judges, Justices of Peace, Majors, Sherieffs, Constables, and all other our Officers, Ministers and loving Subjects, that if they shall find any person offending herein, that then they, and every of them proceed with all diligence and readinesse, not onely against the said *Smith*, but also against all such as shall harbour, conceale or connive at his concealment, or shall not use their best endeavours for his discovery and apprehension, according to the uttermost extent of our Lawes.

*Given at Our Court at White-hall, the 24. day of March, in the fourth yeere of
Our reigne of Great Britaine, France and Ireland.*

(b) March 17
1630.

(c) See my
Catalogue of
Authors in all
Ages, of the
Party and I-
dentity of Bi-
shops and
Presbiters by
divine Right,
the 3. Squa-
dron.
See *Censura
Papistica*
Parisiis, 1630.

These Proclamations against the Bishop of *Calcedon*, at the first view, seem to carry and expresse abundance of royall zeale against Popery, and to proceed onely from some zealous Protestants of the Kings Councell, out of a conscientious care of the preservation of our established Religion, and detestation of *Smiths* audaciousnesse to conferre orders and exercise Episcopall Jurisdiction within his Majesties Dominions, by a Forreigne authority from the Sea of *Rome*, which is no lesse then *high Treason*, by the Statutes of 23. *Eliz. c. 1.* But if our English popish Priests, Monks and parties themselves (who are able to give us best and truest information in this particular) or this Bishops best friends in for aigne parts may be credited; or the Primate of *Armagh* himselfe (Doctor *Usher*) in one of his (b) *Letters to the now Arch-bishop of Canterbury*; these Proclamations against the Bishop of *Calcedon* were not procured at the motion of any Protestants, or out of any love to our Religion, or opposition to popery; but at the earnest solicitation of the regular Priests and Monks in *England* and *Ireland*; who violently opposed Doctor *Smiths* election and Episcopall Jurisdiction, to which they would by no meanes submit; pretending themselves exempted from it by their orders, and writing bitterly against the having of any Bishop in *England* which would eclipse the Regulars power, and extenuate their gaires. (c) *Daniel a Jesu, Hornum, Lomelius* (Lonly) *Nicholas Smith*, and others, writing expresse books against his Episcopacy, which were by *Smiths* and his Partisans meanes, censured by the Faculty of *Paris*, Anno 1630. Vpon their opposition onely, and by their means and power alone (being then the stronger party, and over-mastering the Bishops faction) this Bishop of *Calcedon* was by these Proclamations, and their popish Instruments, forced to desert the Realme, and flee for succour into *France* to Cardinall *Richelieu*, who curteously entertained him; as you may read at large in *N. le Maître* (a Sorbon Priest) his, *Insauratio antiquis Episcoporum Principatus*, printed at *Paris* 1639. *Cens privilegio Regis & approbatione Doctorum*; and dedicated to the Cardinall himselfe lib. 3. c. 15. intituled *Corollarium libri secundi; ubi nonnulla de persecutione Episcoporum, & de illustrissimo ANTISTITE CALCEDONENSI*; where he largely justifies the Bishop of *Calcedon*, against the regular Priests in *England* his opposers and persecuters, who had expelled and banished him thence; severely censuring them for this their persecution against him, and perswading his restitution and reception againe among them in this Realme. Which mystery and devision of theirs occasioning these two Proclamations. I thought fit to discover to prevent mistakes.

You have formerly heard the Complaint of the Commons in Parliament in their Remonstrance and Petition to the King, of the great liberty and increase of popish Prelats, Priests, Monks, Monasteries within the Kingdome of *Ireland*, and the open profession of their Romish Religion there, together with Bishop *Lauds* peremptory deniall of it, in his answer to that Remonstrance in the Kings owne name: but no sooner was that Parliament dissolved in discontent, but the verity of the Commons Complaint was sufficiently justified, by this ensuing Proclamation of the Lord Deputy and Councell of that Realme, found among the Bishops owne papers, who could not be ignorant of it, being thus indorsed with his owne hand, *A Proclamation concerning the growth of Popery in Ireland.*

By the Lord DEPUTY and COUNSELL.

Henry Falkland:

FORasmuch as We cannot but take notice that the late intermission of legall proceedings against popish pretended or Titulary Arch-bishops, Bishops, Abbots; Deanes, Vicars generall, Jesuits, Fryars, and others of that sort, that derive their pretended authority and orders from the Sea of *Rome*, hath bred such an extraordinary insolence and presumption in them, as that they have dared here of late not onely to assemble themselves in publike places to celebrate their superstitious Services in all parts of this Kingdome, but also have created houses and buildings called publike Oratories,

NOTE.

ratories, Colledges-Masse houses, and Convents of Fryers, Munks and Nunnnes in the eye and open view of the State and elsewhere, and doe frequently exercise jurisdiction against his Majesties Subjects by authority derived from the Sea of Rome, and (by colour of teaching and keeping Schools in their pretended Monasteries and Colledges) doe traine up the youth of this Kingdome in their superstitious Religion, to the great derogation and contempt of his Majesties regall power and authority. and great offence of many of his Majesties good Subjects, contrary to the Lawes and Ecclesiasticall government of this Kingdome, and the impoverishment of his Majesties Subjects in the same.

These are therefore to will and require, and in his Majesties name, straitly to charge and command all, and all manner such pretended or Titulary Archbishops, Bishops, Deanes, Vicars-generall, Arch-deacons and others, deriving any pretended authority, power or jurisdiction from the Sea of Rome, that they and every of them, forbear from henceforth to exercise any such power, jurisdiction or authority within this Kingdome, and that all such Abbots, Pryors, Jesuits, Fryars, Munks, Nunnnes and others of that sort as aforesaid, doe forthwith breake up their Convents and Assemblies in all houses of Fryars Colledges, Monasteries and other places wheresoever they are or shall be Conventually or Collegiatly assembled together within this Kingdome, and to relinquish the same, and to disperse and seperate themselves.

And that all and every of the orders before named, and other Priests whatsoever do from henceforth forbear to preach, teach or celebrate their Service in any Church Chappell or other publike Oratory, or place, or to teach any Schoole in any place or places whatsoever within this Kingdome.

And We doe further charge and command all and singular the owners of such houses of Fryars, Colledges, Monasteries, Schools, Oratories, Masse-houses and Nunneries, that they and every of them respectively in default of the persons before named their voluntary relinquishing of the said houses of Fryars, Colledges, monasteries, Schooles, oratories, masse-houses and Nunneries doe forthwith expell, and thrust forth all and singular such Fryars, Jesuits, and other Monasticall persons out of the same, and to convert the same to other more lawfull uses, upon paine to have their said houses seized to his Majesties use, and both the one and the other to be proceeded against for their unlawfull assemblies, and maintainance of such unlawfull Conventicles and corrupt nurture of Children, in the severest manner that by the Lawes and Statutes of this Kingdome and Ecclesiasticall Government of the same may be had or extended, whereof they and every of them are to take notice, and to yeeld due obedience thereunto, as they and every of them will avoid his Majesties high indignation, and the consequence thereof.

Given at his Majesties Castle of Dublin the 1. day of April, 1629.

Adam Loftus Canc.	Ja. Armachanus.	Hen. Valentia.	Moore.
T. Baltinglasse.	R. Dillon.	Anth. Midenfis.	Hen. Doerwa.
Wil. Parsons.	Rich. Bolton.	Dud. Norton.	Ad. Loftus.

By this Proclamation the whole passage in the Commons Remonstrance touching the encrease of Popery in Ireland is confessed to be true, and farre more then is therein expressed.

How little effect this Proclamation produced in Ireland, will appeare by this ensuing Letter of Doctor William Bedley Bishop of Kilmore and Ardmagh about the state of the Church in his Dioceffe, and the Papists in Ireland, to Bishop Land, thus subscribed,

To the right reverend Father in God, William, Lord Bishop of London, my honourable good Lord, deliver these.

Right reverend Father, my honourable good Lord:

Since my coming to this place, which was a little before Michaelmas (till which time the settling the State of the Colledge, and my Lord Primates visitation deferred,

NOTE.

NOTE.

NOTE.

red my Consecration) I have not been unmindfull of your Lordships commands, to
 advertise you, as my experience should informe, of the estate of this Church; which
 I shall now the better doe, because I have been about my Dioeces, and can set down
 out of my knowledg and view, what I shall relate; and shortly, to speake much ill
 matter in a few words, it is very miserable every way: The Cathedrall Church of
 Ardagh one of the most ancient in Ireland, and said to be built by Saint Patrick,
 together with the Bishops house there, downe to the ground; the Church here built,
 but without Bell or Steeple, Font or Chalice: The parish Churches all in a manner
 ruined or unraged and unrepaired; the people, saving a few British Planters here and
 there (which are not the tenth part of the remnant) obstinate Recusants; a popish Cler-
 gy more numerous by farre then we, and in the full exercise of all Jurisdiction Eccle-
 siasticall, by their Vicars-generall and Officials, who are so confident, as they excom-
 muncate those that come to our Courts, even in Matrimoniall causes, which affront
 hath been offered my selfe by the popish Primates Vicar-generall, for which I have be-
 gun a proceesse against him: The Primate himselfe lives in my Parish within two mile
 of my house, the Bishop in another part of my Dioecesse farther off: every parish hath his
 Priest, and some two or three apeece, and so their Masse-houses also; in some place
 Masse is said in the Churches. Frieries there are in divers places, who goe about, though
 not in their habits, and by their importunate begging impoverish the people: Who
 indeed are generally very poore, as from that cause, so from their paying doub-
 Tythes to their owne Clergy and ours from the dearth of Corne, and death of their
 Cattell these late yeers, with the contributions to their Souldiers and their Agents
 and which they forget not to reckon among other causes, the oppressions of the Court,
 Ecclesiasticall; which in very truth my Lord I cannot excuse, and doe seeke to re-
 forme.

For our own, there are some seven or eight Ministers in each Dioecesse of good suf-
 ficiency, and which is no small cause of the continuance of the people in Popery still;
 English which have not the tongue of the people, nor can performe divine offices, or
 converse with them, and which hold many of them two, three, four, or more Vi-
 carages apeece; Even the Clerkships themselves are in like manner conferred upon
 the English, and sometimes two or three or more upon one man, and ordinarily
 bought and sold, or let to farme &c. His Majesty is now with the greatest part of this
 Country, as to their hearts, consciences, King, but at the Popes discretion, &c.

Your Lordships most obliged

Kilmore this 1. of

servant in Christ Jesu,

Aprill, 1630.

W^ml. Kilmoren and Ard.

This was the condition and state of the Papists in Ireland then; who the very same
 yeere Novemb. 22. 1630. presented this Petition to the Lords Justices and Counsell
 thus indorsed with Bishrp Lands owne hand, *The Petition of the Recusants in Ireland
 to the Lords Justices, and in some things concerning the Church.*

To the right honourable the Lords Justices and Counsell.

*The humble Petition of the Lords, Knights and Gentlemen here attending,
 on the behalfe of themselves, and the rest of his Majesties Subjects
 of this Kingdome, Novemb. 22. 1630.*

Most humbly making Petition;

That whereas the late employed Agents did humbly offer to his Highnesse three
 Subsidies to be granted and confirmed by Parliament in this Kingdome, and for
 that the said Parliament was not called accordingly, yet the Inhabitants of the Coun-
 try are compelled to goe on forward with the payment of the same, with which if e-
 their

thers that have imployments, and are of greatest meanes in this Kingdome had been taxed, or had borne according as they would have been by the authority of Parliament, the said three Subsidies, and the summes whereat they were estimated, would have been long since levyed: and whereas his most gracious Majestie in compassion of his Subjects did grant divers Favours, Graces and Benefits to them; and did manifest his princely care of them, that they should have favours and graces, in regard of the great burden they did and doe beare in payment of so great summes. Your Suppliants humbly beseech your Honours, to consider of the humble request of your Suppliants under-written, being some of these particulars: wherein they conceive the Country and people are over-heavily burthened: which doth not onely discourage, but also disable them to beare the charges which they doe; and that your honours will be pleased to take such order for their ease and reliefe in the same, as shall stand with Justice, Equity, and the intimated favours, which your Suppliants well hope and conceive his Highnesse of his owne royall disposition and gracious inclination, is willing shall be conferred upon them.

And your Suppliants shall ever pray, &c.

That in regard his Majestie signified his pleasure in his Instructions, that an Act should passe in Parliament, that no Tythes should be inquired of above lx. yeers past; that your Lordships will give order, that all Commissioners and Officers shall forbear inquiring of Tythes for his Majestie before that time, and that Plantations grounded upon such Tythes may be forborne, and that the holding of the Parliament may be certained.

That your Lordships may direct a course that the Clergy doe not proceed with the great burden and charge they doe lay upon the poore people for clandestine Marriages, Christnings and Burials, &c.

That your Lordships likewise will direct a course to ease the poore Subjects of the unreasonable fines imposed by the Clerks of the Market, and also to ease them of the intolerable charges they beare by means of the suing forth Recognizances for building of Churches, fines for Bridges and High-ways.

The Commissions that are issued to examine what payments are made of the Subsidies, to be renewed.

That there may be free liberty for transporting all Commodities of the Kingdome that may be spared, without paying any thing for Licences.

That no advantage be taken for not inrolling the Surrenders of *Cinnauht*, according to his Majesties Instructions and former Graces.

The Complaints of the Common-wealth to be annexed to the former Petition, delivered by the Noble-men and Gentlemen of the Country to the Lords Justices and Counsell. December 6. 1630.

That the Bishops Court shall hold no longer then one day at a sitting.

That the Inquisitors comming to doe service to the same Court shall not pay for their entrance.

The Subsidy of the Bishops and Clergy, if they have paid the same, no ease done to thy Country thereby.

That no Escheator shall bring parcels of Records into the Country to be found by a Jury, but that the whole Record, or a true Copy thereof be brought, and the same to be testified by the Officer of the Court.

That your Lordships lay downe a rate for the issues for respit of homage, according each terme or yeere, for which the said respit of homage shall happen to be in arreare, proportionably to the respit of homage it selfe.

That the King at Armes or any of his shall demand no fees or duty belonging to him, by colour of his Office, of any Noble-man or Gentleman, unlesse he be test for.

That School-masters shall not be disturbed from teaching, so they teach nothing concerning Religion.

That

That the houses may be restored to the Inheritors, which were seized on by vertue of a Proclamation, (to wit, that forementioned.)

How this Petition came to the Bishops hands, appears by this Letter, thus indorsed by him, *Feb. 10. 1630. My Lord Primate of Armagh, about the Recusants Petition to the Lords Justices, &c.*

To the right Reverend Father in God, my singular good Lord, the Lord Bishop of London, one of his Majesties most honorable privy Counsell.

My very good Lord;

Since I wrote unto your Lordship concerning the businesse of Sir John Wisheart and Master Elphenston; all the Bishops Chancellours in the Kingdome were sent for to Dublin by the Lords Justices, to answer such things as are objected against the exercise of Ecclesiasticall Jurisdiction in a Petition exhibited unto them by the Regular Lords of the Country: Which being a matter of no small importance, I thought it my duty to impart unto your Lordship the true Copies both of the Petition of the one and of the Answer of the other, that you may be the better prepared to speake therein if the matter shall be brought over into England; and give us direction here how we are to follow the businesse for I feare all the Bishops are to appeare about the beginning of Easter Terme, to declare their resolutions touching the same propositions.

I send likewise unto your Lordship a short Letter which I received even now from the Bishop of Kilsenora. The Bishoprick of Killalow is contiguous unto his, and both being conjoynd together by a perpetual union, would make an indifferent good competency for one Bishop: for that of Kilsenora is otherwise in it selfe, so poore, and so farre from any good Benefice that might be annexed unto it, that there is little hope it will ever be made fit for any man of worth.

I humbly thank your Lordship for the tender regard you had of my reputation, in stopping the publishing of my book there, before the faults committed in the reprinting thereof should be corrected: for which and thoe other high favours which I doe daily receive at your hands, I must alwayes professe my selfe to rest

Your Lordships faithfull Servant in all

Drogheda February

duty ready to be commanded.

10. 1630.

Ja. Armachanus.

What answer was given to this Petition of the Recusants by the Bishops and their Chancellours, will appeare by this ensuing paper, thus indorsed by Bishop Land, *The Answer of the Lords Bishops and Chancellours to such Articles of the Recusants Petition as concerne the Church.*

An Abstract of those things which concerne the Ecclesiasticall Jurisdiction in the Petition exhibited to the Lords Justices.

1. **T**Hat your Lordships may direct a course, that the Clergy doe not proceed with the great burden and charge they doe lay upon the poore people for clandestine Marriages, Christnings and Burials &c.
2. That the the Bishops Courts should hold no longer then one day at a sitting.
3. That the Inquisitors comming to doe service to the said Court shall not pay for their entrance.
4. The Subsidy of the Bishops and Clergy, if they have paid the same, no ease done to the Country thereby.
5. That School matters shall not be disturbed from teaching, so they teach nothing concerning Religion.

The

The Answers of the Lords Bishops and Chancellours that are now present, to the Articles of grievance lately by your Lordships imparted to them.

Right honourable our good Lords:

AS to the imputation cast upon us to burthen and charge the poore people for clandestine Marriages, Christnings, &c.

We humbly propose to your Lordships consideration.

1. That the cognizance of these causes doth by the Lawes of this Realme belong to the Judicature Ecclesiasticall, with a very severe charge in Gods name to see to the due execution thereof, as in the Statute of 2. Eliz. cap. 2. may appeare.

2. That the refractariness of the people in not resorting to Church, and being conformable to divine service and administration of Sacraments, and other Rites according to the forme of the book of Common-prayer, is no way to be cherished or fostered, especially in the apparant endeavours which is now used by the popish faction, to draw them away from the obedience of his Majesty to that of the Pope.

3. That if it be permitted to them to marry and baptize without controule, all other Scismaticks, as Anabaptists, Brownists, &c. may claime the like.

4. That they are in no worse condition then those of our owne; and his Majesty in those very graces which their very Agents obtained, and to which they have reference in their Petition, did referre the Delinquents in these particulars to be proceeded against, according to the ordinary course of Law, Art. 49.

5. That if this proceeding be stopt, these inconveniences will arise: The Bishops and Ordinaries are not able to answer the Kings writs, which are by the common Law to be directed unto them, as in cause of Bastardy, and Certificate of marriage, and the like; as also the whole Common-wealth will swarme with Incest, Adultery, Whoredome, &c. if it be lawfull for popish Vicars to dispence and divorce at pleasure, and voyd new marriages upon pretext they were not solemnized by the parish Priest according to the Trent Reformation, and other like frivolous pretexts, contrary to the law of God.

6. As to the burthen of the poore people, we doe humbly desire, that the Delinquents may be informed against, and upon conviction severely punished.

7. And if it seeme to your Lordships, that the fees of the Ecclesiasticall Courts be over-burthenous, that the Commission for regulating them may be speedily executed.

2. Touching the continuance of the Courts longer then one day at a sitting. We conceive the same to be for the ease of the people, and expediting of causes, and the hindring of chamber-justice; but if it shall appeare otherwise to your Lordships, we desire your Lordships to set downe what order you shall think most fit for the ease of the people, and due performance of that service.

3. Concerning Inquisitors fees for their entrance. We doe deny that ever any such thing was done, and if any can be justly charged therewith, let him be punished.

4. Touching our Subsidy. We doe think it is not unknowne to your Lordships, how cheerfully we have strained our selves for the safety of the Country, some of us having besides contributed to the Souldiers as deeply as they, even of our mensall lands which we hold in our owne hands.

5. Touching School-Masters.. We humbly desire your Lordships to consider:

1. How much it concerneth the Reformation of the manners of the people, that School-Masters be well-affected to Religion and to the present Government.

2. That popish School-Masters doe breed up and prepare the youth of this Realme to be Priests, and contrary to the Priviledges of his Majesties Progenitors, to the University of Dublin, doe teach them Logick and Philosophy.

3. That under the name of School-Masters, divers dangerous and seditious persons may be nourished in private Families, to the corrupting and seducing the youth of this Realme, and withdrawing them from his Majesties allegiance.

4. That whereas if such be put downe, the parents would out of necessity send their Children to the Ministers and Curates or Free-schools in every County, and the Col-

O

ledges

NOTE.

ledges at *Dublin*; by the allowing them, they will be still nouzeled in Superstition and Barbarisme.

Lastly, whereas your Lordships lately desire us to certifie you, who are the chiefe abettors of the popish titular Clergy, your Lordships have them now shewing themselves in their presenting this Petition, which we hope you will be sensible of for the publike good, the good of his Majesty and the glory of God to whose blessing and protection we humbly leave you.

The returne upon Command, to advise upon some moderate course in the exercise of Ecclesiasticall Jurisdiction.

Right honourable Our good Lords:

IN obedience to your Lordships commands, We the Bishops and Chancellours present in the City, have considered of the wayes for the moderating and easing the pretended burthen, whereof the Petitioners complaine, in the matter of clandestine Christnings, Marnages and Burials.

And doe find, that we that are present cannot resolve of any other course then to referre our selves to our former answer, and the lawes now in force: and according to our duties to God and the charge laid upon us in the *Alt 2. Eliz. c. 2.* doe humbly desire your Lordships that the said Act for the uniformity of Common-prayer and Service in the Church, and the administration of the Sacraments, may be duly and truly executed.

Also the lawes concerning the restoring to the Crowne the ancient Jurisdiction over the State Ecclesiasticall and Spirituall, and abolishing all forraigne power repugnant to the same, may be effectually and fully put in ure.

And that all School-Masters be bound to teach the Schollers for their first books the grounds of Christian Religion, and to use in their Schooles, the prayer appointed in the beginning of the Grammer, set forth by his Majesties authorite, with such other books as shall be appointed by the Bishops of this Kingdome; and that idle and unprofitable books, such as *Gesta Romanorum*, which is now upon the Presse in this City for the use of their Schools, which doe but teach them to attend to Fables, and lying legends, may be banished from the same.

And forasmuch as sundry of us having no other occasion of coming to this place but your Lordships commands, have been now fourteen dayes in Town, and doe lye here at charges, and are with-holden from performance of our duties at home; we humbly entreat your Lordships to licence us to depart.

What the issue of this businesse was I cannot certainly learne; but I find, that this very yeere 1630. among other things there fell out a great difference between the Regulars and Secular Priests and popish Titulary Bishops in *Ireland*, which grew to a very great highth, as I have formerly touched in the Bishop of *Calcedons* businesse.

How farre these differences between them there pceeded in, I shall give you a short account out of the Arch-bishop of *Armagh* his Letter to Bishop *Land*, who writ thus to him among other things.

My very good Lord:

(a) After the French account, who begun the yeere with January as our Almanacks doe: But 1630. after our ordinary computation.

THere came into my hands certaine propositions of our Irish Regulars against the Seculars, censured at Paris, 15. January (a) 1631. by sixty Doctors of the Sorbon, one whereof is this, *Superiores Regularium digniores sunt Episcopis: siquidem dignitas pastoris petenda est ex conditione sui gregis quemadmodum opilio. dignior est subulco; Another, In partibus haeticorum non tenetur populus Christianus necessariam sustentationem suo Paracho subministrare quia bona Ecclesiastica ab haeticis possidentur. Together with them I received the Arch-bishop of Paris his condemnation of two*

English

English Books, published January 30. 1631. the one, an Answer to certaine assertions of Doctor Kellison in his Treatise of the Ecclesiasticall Hierarchy, written by Nicholas Smith: the other, an Apology for the Popes manner of proceeding in governing the Catholikes in England during the time of persecution; Author, Daniel a Jesu: It may somewhat concerne us here, to be made acquainted with the Argument of these Books, and therefore I make bold to entreat your Lordship, that you would give order to one of your Chaplaines to communicate the same unto this bearer, who will speedily informe me thereof.

Your Lordships in all service,

Drogheda March

17. 1631.

Ja. Armachanus.

The yeere following, these differences in Ireland between the Priests and Arch-bishop of Dublin, Thomas Fleming proceeded to a publike Protestation and contestation even in print, as appears by this notable paper of the Priests against him, printed at Rhoan both in Latin and English, to make it more notorious; I shall only trouble you with the English Copy; found in the Arch-bishops Study, indorsed with Master Dels hand thus, May 2. 1632. Protestations of the secular Priests in Ireland, against Thomas Fleming Arch-bishop of Dublin.

To all the most Illustrious Arch-bishops and Bishops of Ireland, but more particularly to those of the Province of Dublin
their honourable Lords, David Bishop of O'fory, John
of Pernes, Ross of Kildare, and Matthew Vicar Apostolicall of Laghlein

MOST Illustrious Lords and Reverend Bishops, the Priests of Dublin make their complaint before you, that the most Illustrious Arch-bishop of Dublin, Thomas Flemming, of the order of Saint Francis, without alleadging any cause against them, only for his will, and at his pleasure, useth to exile and banish Priests out of his Dioceffe. And they protest that in so doing he exerciseth a tyranny over the Clergy, contrary to the Canons of Holy Church, and the lawes and statutes of this Kingdome.

2. Most Illustrious Lords and reverend Fathers in Christ, the aforesaid Priests doe make their complaint, that the same most illustrious Arch-bishop of Dublin, Thomas Flemming of the order of Saint Francis, though humbly sought unto and desired, doth refuse to doe them justice in their causes, neither yet will he permit the Clergy to follow their actions meerly erill before the Magistrate, contrary unto the received custome of this Kingdome, from the first conversion of this Nation. And they protest that in so doing, he exerciseth a tyranny over the Clergy, contrary unto the Canons of the Church, and the lawes and statutes of this Kingdome.

NOTE:

3. Most Illustrious Lords and Reverend Fathers in Christ, the aforesaid Priests doe make their complaint, that the most Illustrious Arch-bishop Thomas Flemming, of the order of Saint Francis, in inflicting his Ecclesiasticall censures, observeth no canonicall proceeding at all, omitting not onely the solemnities of the law, but those things also that are necessary and essentiall in all proceedings thereof, namely, citations and prooffe of causes. And they protest that in so doing, he exerciseth a tyranny over the Clergy, contrary unto the Canons of Holy Church, and the lawes and statutes of this Kingdome.

4. Most Illustrious Lords and Reverend Fathers in Christ, the aforesaid Priests doe complaine, that the most Illustrious Arch-bishop Thoms Flemming, of the order of Saint Francis, refused to heare all prooffes against the Regulars in the matter of the eleven propositions condemned at Paris, which testimonies or prooffs two venerable Priests presented unto him the 15. of November, in the yeere of our Lord 1631. in Dublin. And moreover, the aforesaid Priests doe professe, that the same Illustrious Arch-bishop is a favourer and a Patron of certaine new and never heard of Heresies, published by the Fryars of

his Order, and others; of the which heresies, or rather blasphemies, being advertised by a Petition, he utterly refused to heare the Accusers and Witnesses. And they protest that in so doing he exerciseth a tyranny in the Church of God, contrary unto the canons of holy Church, and the lawes and statute of this Kingdome.

5. Most illustrious Lords and reverend Fathers in Christ, the aforesaid Priests doe complaine, that the same most illustrious Arch-bishop Thomas Flemming of the order of Saint Francis, did not suppress, extinguish or correct (according to the canons of the Church, and as the lawes of Princes doe command) a certaine infamous Libell made, printed and published, under the false and fained name of Edmund Wiseman, against the good name, fame and reputation of certaine venerable Priests of the Clergy, who in the aforesaid libell are expressly and by name mentioned; but on the contrary, the same Arch-bishop reads, commends, publisheth, and defends the same, to their irreparable dishonour and infamy, by whose example also others, especially of the Regulars of this Kingdome, are incited, provoked and animated to doe the like. And they protest that in so doing, he exerciseth a tyranny over the Clergy, contrary to the canons of holy Church, and the lawes and statutes of this Kingdome.

6. Most illustrious Lords and reverend Fathers in Christ, the aforesaid Priests doe complaine, that the same most illustrious Arch-bishop of Dublin, Thomas Flemming, of the order of Saint Francis, being given to understand by way of petition, in the behalfe of the Clergy of Dublin, that a certaine parish Priest, by name Patrick Brangan, with his assistant James Quin, but a few months agoe, thorow extreme negligence had left the blessed sacrament consecrated in many hosts, and that without hope of recovery; Our aforesaid Arch-bishop making small or no account of so great a sacrilege, permits notwithstanding the aforesaid Priests, whereof the one is most unlearned, the other lame, who to execute all Ecclesiasticall jurisdiction, by whose ministry he daily exposeth the Sacraments of the Church to profanation and abuse. And in so doing, they protest that he offends against the divine Majesty and the sacred canons of the Church. They professe also that in these aforesaid excesses he hath the Regulars his Counsellours, ayders and abettours, especially one John Preston, a Fryar of his order, a most seditions and turbulent fellow, to the ruine of the Clergy, and disturbance of the Christian Common-wealth.

7. Most illustrious Lords and reverend Fathers in Christ, the aforesaid Priests doe complaine, that the most illustrious Arch-bishop of Dublin Thomas Flemming, of the order of Saint Francis, doth make parish Priests young men, unlearned and unbred; others famous for their learning, gravity and vertue, being neglected; and more it is to be lamented, for that such are the times and state of things, as if we had Augustine, Ambrose and Hieroms, it were meet to preferre them unto the pastorall office (others omitted.) But what may we expect of this our Prelat? who hath ordinarily in his mouth, To what end should parish Priests be learned? or Preachers? forasmuch as these matters belong unto Regulars. Moreover the aforesaid Priests doe complaine, that the most illustrious Arch-bishop Thomas Flemming of the order of Saint Francis, at the coming unto his Prelature, found within the walls of Dublin five parish Priests, men of learning, ripe yeeres and uncorrupt conversation, in place of whom either taken away by death or exile, he hath placed onely two, and such as we are not willing to speake of what condition: so as it seemes he desireth nothing more, then by this extirpation of the Clergy, a more easie and compendious way may be made unto those armies of Monks and begging Fryars, who in this Kingdome (observing no Regular discipline) doe labour to create a Monarchy unto themselves, as already they have done under this Bishop, to the destruction of the Church, the impoverishing of the Inhabitants, and no small deiriment to the Common-wealth. And they protest that in so doing, he exerciseth a tyranny over the Clergy, contrary unto the canons of holy Church, and the lawes and statutes of this Kingdome.

8. Most illustrious Lords and reverend Fathers in Christ, the aforesaid Priests doe complaine, that the illustrious Arch-bishop of Dublin, Thomas Flemming of the order of Saint Francis, is accustomed to answer the Clergy complaining of their grievances unto him; if I doe you wrong, you may goe to Rome to complaine: In the meane time re-

NOTE.

Papists may lose their God irretrievably.

NOTE.

porting

porting himself to be so powerfull in the Court of Rome, that he feares no Adversary. And of this that Reverend Priest Father Patrick Cahill, Doctor of Divinity had experience, who for a yeere treating of his injuries and grievances done unto him by the Arch-bishop of Dublin, could by no meanes prevaile once to be admitted unto the presence and audience of the most eminent Cardinall Ludovisus, Vice-chancellour of Rome, which Cardinall notwithstanding is given by his Holinesse unto the Irish, as the onely Patron and protector of the Irish Nation. These things we may remember with griefe to our selves, that this is nothing else but to tyrannize over the Clergy, to the dishonour of the Church, and no small contempt to the See Apostolicke.

There is then
small justice
to be had at
Rome.

For which and other causes besides to be alleadged, and in their due time and place to be proved against the above-named Thomas Flemming, of the order of Saint Francis, we the aforesaid Priests, and hereafter to be named, doe set before your eyes most illustrious and Reverend Lords these our grievances, as meet and honourable witnesses of this our deed, writing and publike Instrument, and as farre as is possible and lawfull for us by the Canons of holy Church, declining the Jurisdiction of our afor. said Ordinary by this our present writing; and from this time forth we appeale unto the See Apostolicke, from all Ecclesiasticall censures hereafter to be inflicted upon us by the same illustrious Arch-bishop Thomas Flemming, of the order of Saint Francis. And in the mean time providing for our innocency & safety (according to the example of Saint Paul and Saint Antoninus) we doe invoke the aid of the secular arme for our present remedy, against the aforesaid illustrious Arch-bishop Thomas Flemming of the order of Saint Francis, and all Regulars of what order soever, as well Monks as begging Fryars, Abettors counsellors and participants with him in the premises, as Violators and contemners of all lawes divine and humane, and men by the law excommunicate. Humbly beseeching your Lordships in the bowels of the crucified, that you would be pleased to intimate with us much speed as may be, this our protestation and appeale unto the See Apostolicke; and the God of peace and love, long preserve your Reverend Lordships in safety.

Dated at Dublin May 3. in the yeere of our Lord, 1632.

Peter Caddell Doctor of Divinity.

Paul Harris pr. (a) Deacon of the University of Dublin. (a) Deane;

From which Protestation I shall observe these considerable particulars.

1. First, that the papists in Ireland had their own popish Arch-bishops, Bishops, and a Vicar Apostolicall residing then amongst them, in the Title and body of this Protestation manifest.

Secondly, that their Arch-bishop Flemming had a popish Clergy under him in his Province, and did exceedingly tyrannize over them, usurping jurisdiction even in temporall causes, and over the Kings owne Courts among the Catholikes of Ireland.

Thirdly, that the popish Bishops in Ireland, did usually conferre orders, and exercise all Episcopall jurisdiction there.

Fourthly, that they had a speciall Cardinall at Rome (Ludovisus) given by the Pope unto the Irish, as the onely patron and protector of the Irish Nation. **NOTE**

Fifthly, That the secular Priests were exceedingly jealous lest the Monks and regulars in Ireland should overtop Lord it, and usurpe a Monarchy over them, and thereupon appealed to the Pope against them and their Franciscan Arch-bishop.

Sixthly, that they were growne extraordinary bold and insolent there in as they openly published this their protestation and appeale in print both in Latin and English to all the world, and avowed it under their hands, subscribed to it.

Seventhly, That they had then erected a popish University in Dublin it selfe, of which Paul Harris professeth himselfe Deacon (or Deane as Bishop Bedle styles him) even in print, of which more hereafter in the Bishop of Kilmores letters.

This very yeere 1632. the Papists in Ireland, upon a false suggestion, procured a discharge

charge for paying 12. d. for their abience from Church every Sunday towards the maintainance of the army, and put the greatest charge of it upon the Protestants, to their great grievance; as appears by this passage of the Primate of *Armagh* his letter to *Bishop Land*, who thus indorsed it, *March 1. 1632. Lord Primate of Armagh, The generall grievance of the protestant party in Ireland.*

My very good Lord:

IF you shall think it expedient that I may meet your Lordship this summer in *Scotland*, to doe my service there unto his Majesty, I shall have opportunity (God willing) more freely to deliver my mind unto you, both touching this particular, and the generall grievance which the Protestant party here hath taken, upon the unhappy step of the execution of the statute of 12. d. against Recusants, grounded upon a most untrue suggestion made unto his Majesty, that Writs were issued out for the levying of those monies before the time of the contribution granted by the Country for the maintainance of the army was expired: after which the next newes here expected is, that the Earle of Westmeath should bring over directions for the abridging of our Episcopall Jurisdiction, that so the popish Bishops may keep their Courts more freely then we shall be permitted to doe; quod dirum omen overtat a nobis Deus &c.

Your Lordships in all observance

Dublin March

1. 1632.

Ja. Aramachanus.

Hereupon the Protestants within the county of *Cavan*, both Clergy and Laity; being oppressed by laying the charge of the Souldiers upon them, in ease of the papists, and exceedingly injured by a popish Sheriffe (a great enemy to the English Protestants) by unequall assessments on them, drew up this ensuing Petition. and presented it the Lords Justices and Counsell of *Ireland*, whereby the power of, and favours shewed to the Papists there, to the great grievance of the Protestants, is fully laid open.

To the right Honourable the Lords Justices and Counsell.

The humble Petition of the Protestant Inhabitants both Clergy and Laity within the county of Cavan.

In all humble manner sheweth unto your Lordships:

WHereas your Lordships were pleased to send directions unto the Sheriffe of this County bearing date the 12. of February last 1632. *scilicet Anglia, &c.* for the levying of certaine summes of money towards the maintainance of the Army, or contribution for the last three meneths, ending the last day of *March* last; and that your Lordships directions were grounded upon the signification of his Majesties pleasure, which summes were plotted and collected by the Collectors without the consent of the Protestants in this County, and partly by force, by laying of souldiers upon the County, by the Sub-Sheriffs warrant being a Recusant, without any warrant from your Honours to that effect. We doe humbly pray your Lordships, that this money so collected and now paid in according to your Lordships directions, it may not be prejudiciall unto us and our posterity and successors in time to come; and that your Lordships will be pleased favourably to forbear any further imposition of any such burden upon us, untill your Lordships shall represent these humble Remonstrances unto his Majesty, at whose hands we have full confidence, out of his accustomed clemency, to find reliefe.

NOTE.

1. That whereas about foure yeers last past, Sir *Andrew Steward* and Sir *Arthur Torbasse* deceased, Knights and Baronets, were appointed Agents to treat with his Majesty for the easing of this Province of *Ulster*, of the burden of the Army, which was then imposed; the said Agents exceeding their authority did condescend with the Recusant

cusant Agents to the imposition of six score thousand pounds sterling, upon this Kingdome to be paid within this Kingdome.

2. That the said summe, though heavily pressing the conformable Subjects, especially the Plantators and poore Clergy, was by them satisfied and payed according to his Majesties directions, with hope that thereupon they should not be further charged with the like impositions

3. That since that time the undertakers and plantators have renewed their Patents, paid great fines, and doubled their rents to his Majesty, to their great charg, especially in the deare yeeres that have been by the murren of Cattell, and unseasonableness of the times.

4. That the Country hath been and are still at excessive charges, in building of Castles and Bawenes, Goale-houses, Shire-houses, Bridges and High-ways, and now are called upon to re-edifie their Churches, which are for the most part altogether ruined.

5. That where the Plantators are lately by direction from his Majesty to be trained in Bands under Captaines and other Officers by Sir William Grabayme, twice a year, for which he receiveth due entertainment from them, they conceive that not only they shall be able to serve his Majesty in his and their owne defence, but to approve their fidelities against any other if occasion of trouble should be.

6. That if any be feared, it seems hard that others no way doubted of, should be in worse condition by reason of their dangerousnesse. NOTE.

7. That whereas your Lordships doe intimate a proffer made by a great number of Noble-men of this Kingdome, to continue their contributions; We humbly desire, that it may be considered, that though they be many in themselves, yet are they but few, being compared with the rest, and that their proffers seem probable to be for their owne ends, which will be a meanes to weary the Plantators.

8. That those who now make these propositions were the chiefe opposers of the payment of the late contribution into the Exchequer, least it should grow to be esteemed a revenue of the Crowne, and be required of Posterity: whereby it may appear it is for their owne ends.

9. That as in the former contribution his Majesties graces did solely redound unto the Recusants, so it is now sought in like manner, that they may have all the ease and thanks, though the burden lye as heavy on others as on them: All which much tending to the disheartning of good and conformable Subjects, we desire your Honours by your mediation to his Majesty to prohibit. NOTE.

Do. For Bedle Bishop of Kilmore (with two more Bishops) among others subscribed this Petition at the request of the Gent. of that County, and (as appears by his Letters to the Lord (a) Deputy and Arch-bishop of Canterbury) did very much qualifie the complaints and grievances therein contained by altering the first draught presented to him, from a smart Letter unto an humble Petition; yet notwithstanding he was specially complained of to the King, for setting his hand to this Petition, and opposing his Majesties service in Ireland, touching the levy of moneys upon Recusants and others to maintain the Army; The like accusation of him came to the now Arch-bishop of Canterbury, who thereupon writ a sharp Letter of reproofe to him concerning it, dated October 12. 1633. to which this Bishop returned an answer on the 5. of November following relating the truth of the fact, and justifying his action; and withall he writ another Letter of the same date to the Lord Deputy of Ireland (a copy whereof he sent the Arch-bishop inclosed in his Letter to him) to excuse, and justifie what he herein did; in which Letter there are these memorable passages, touching the extraordinary increase and boldnesse of the popish Bishops, Priests, Monks, Recusants, in Ireland at that time; the copy of which Letter, under this Bishops owne hand and Seale, I found in the Arch-bishops Study, thus indorsed with Master Dells owne hand: Receipt. December 24. 1633. The Lord Bishop of Kilmore, William Bedle, his letter to the Lord Wentworth, Lord Deputy of Ireland, about the maintainance of the Army and the Cavan Petition. Right

(a) Dated
Novemb. 5.
1633.

Right Honourable my good Lord, &c.

NOTE.

IN the midst of the midst of these thoughts I have been advertised from an honourable friend in England, that I am accued to his Majesty to have opposed his service, and that my hand with two other Bishops onely, was to a writing, touching the moneys to be levyed on the Papists here, for maintenance of the men of warre, &c. Indeed if I should have had such an intention, this had been not onely to oppose the service of his Majesty, but to expose with the publike peace mine owne necke to the secans of the Romish Cut-throats: I that know that in this Kingdome of his Majesty, the Pope hath another Kingdome farre greater in number, and as I have heretofore signified to the Lords Justices and Counsell (which is also since justified by themselves in print) constantly guided and directed by the order of the new Congregation, de propaganda fide, lately erected at Rome, transmitted by the meanes of the Popes Nuntioes, residing at Bruxels or Paris; that the Pope hath here a Clergy if I may gnesse by mine own Diocesse, double in number to us, the heads whereof are by corporall Oath bound to him, to maintaine him and his Regalities, contra omnem hominem, and to execute his Mandates to their uttermost forces; which accordingly they doe, styling themselves in print, Ego N. Dei &c. Apolliticæ Sedis gratia Episcopus Fermien, Ossorien, &c. I that know there is in this Kingdome, for the moulding of the people to the Popes obedience, a rabble of irregular Regulars, commonly younger brothers of good houses, who are growne to that insolency, as to advance themselves to be Members of the Ecclesiastical Hierarchy in better ranke then Priests; insomuch as the censure of the Sorbon is faine to be implored to curbe them: wh ch yet is called in againe, so tender is the Pope of these his owne creatures: I that know that his Holinesse hath erected a new University at Dublin, to confront his Majesties Colledge there, and to breed up the youth of this Kingdome to his devotion; of which University one Paul Harris, the Author of that infamous libell, which was put forth in print against the Lord Primate's Wansted Sermon stileth himselfe in print to be Deane: I that know and have given advertisement to the State, that these Regulars dare erect new Frieries in the Country, since the dissolving of those in the City, that they have brought the people to such a sortish senselesnesse, as they care not to learne the Commandements, as God himselfe spake and writ them, but they flock in great numbers to the preaching of new superstitious and detestable doctrines, such as their owne Priests are ashamed of, and at these they levy collections, three, foure, five, six pound at a Sermon: shortly, I that know that this Clergy and these Regulars have at a generall meeting like to a Synod, as themselves stile it, holden at Drogheda, decreed, that it is not lawfull to take the Oath of Allegiance, and if they be constant to their owne doctrine, doe account his Majesty in their hearts to be King, but at the Popes discretion. In this estate of this Kingdome, to think the bridle of the Army may be taken away, it should be the thought not of a brain-sick, but of a brainlesse man.

NOTE.

NOTE.

NOTE.

NOTE.

But though I think strong for the establishment of the Army, perhaps I would have had it maintained onely by the Recusants fines, and mislike that they are gratified by the not exacting of them; let my letters of the 23. of March 1629. to the Lords Justices commanding me to give them ample advertisements in any particular that might further the establishment of true Religion in this Kingdome: Let those Letters I say of mine be seen, it will be found that I use these formall words; Forasmuch as the people are generally very poore and therefore discontented, very ignorant and strongly perswaded by their Priests in their owne way, and the Recusants for their number farre exceeding the better part. I leave it to the Lords wisdom to consider, how safe it may be to urge them to come to Church at once. by exacting the fines for Recusancy, unlesse something doe sound there first, which they themselves doe conceive they doe not well to refuse to heare, &c. And to an honourable friend of mine in England not long after, touching this very poynt, that unlesse impediments were first remobved, and the matter better disposed, to presse the forme presently by the pecuniary mulcts, would but breed a Monster: And let the Cavan Petition be but perused, to see if there be ever a word for or against the Recusants fines, whereby

without

without further ado, I and all that joyned therein are justified from the imputation of opposing in that particular touching the monys to be levied upon the Papists.

Yea, but at least I joyned to oppose the applotment of Contributions upon Protestants. Nor that neither; For it was both applotted and paid. But to petition that the Lords Justices and Councell, would forbear any further imposition till they should represent to his Majesty, &c. herein onely I joyned.

My Lord, as I have never esteemed it to become me or any Subject, to take upon and to be the Auditor of the publike Accompts, as being a matter to bee left in the wildome and providence of the Kings Majesty, the Father, of the publike family: so I have yet thought, the way ought not to be foreclosed to the subjects to have recourse (in humble and dutifull sort) to his Majesties goodnesse to declare their grievances, this serving to evaporate their discontents (a good meane to keep them from festering inwardly) and so to help to cure them: How much lesse is this to bee denied to the dutifull and obedient, who had not opposed the applotment made upon them, though levied disorderly, by laying on the Souldiers without Commission, by an Irish Recusant sub-Sheriffe, the most odious man to the English in all the County. For which cause there was a deliberation of the Assises, to have indicted him of High Treason, though (as I thinke) by the wisdom of the Lord chiefe Justice it was put by. The petitioners therefore having before paid the money imposed, and harshly imposed; this very thing to petition, that they might not be charged againe, till his Majesty were informed, seemes not to bee worthy such blame. In wish and hearty desire I rest

The day of our deliverance from
the Popish Powder-plot.

Your Lordships in all duty,
JOHN KILMORE.

Note.

By this Bishops Letter, you may clearly discern the potency and boldnesse of the Popish party in Ireland at that time, who built a new Colledge in Dublin to red with Jesuites, and young Students, to bee trained up in that pragmaticall dangerous Order. I shall adde to this a Certificate of Boetius Egan, the Popish Bishop of Elphin in Ireland, in the behalfe of one Philip O Conor a young Popish Student (the originall whereof was found among Secretary Windebanks papers) which will somewhat illustrate the Premises.

NO: Fr. Boetius Eganus Dei & Apostolica sedis gratia Elphin' Episcopus, Omnibus ad quos presentes literæ pervenerint. Notum facimus presentium latorem Philippum O Conor Hybernum nostre antedictæ Diocesis adolescentem, esse virum integrum, conversationis laudabilis, bonæ indolis & esse nobilissimis hujus regni Catholicis parentibus legitime oriundum, modo ultra marinas partes proficiscentem studendi causa, eo quod in hoc nostro afflictio regno, nec ei, nec aliis similibus orthodoxæ fidei cultoribus incumbere literis permittitur, ob grassantem apud nos hæresim. Quare eundem Philippum omnibus Christi fidelibus, potissimum in Ecclesiastica dignitatis fastigio constitutis, nec non Gymnastorum rectoribus plurimum in visceribus Salvatoris commendamus, eos obnixè rogantes, ut eidem consilio, favore, & auxilio, quoties opus fuerit, subvenire non dedignentur, mercedem ab eodem recepturi in cujus vinea laborare & insudare intendit post suum (Deo annuente) reditum in hanc suam afflictam patriam. In quorum omnium fidem his subscripsimus & sigillum parvum, quo ad talia utimur, apponi curavimus.

Fr. Boetius Elphyn Episcopus.

What good use was made of this increase of the Popish Party in Ireland, and how they were connived at, out of a meere designe to ballance the Protestants there, (by the infernall policy of the then Lord Deputy) to the end he might compound a lower house of Parliament there, so, as that neither the Recusant nor the Protestant should appeare considerably one more then the other, holding them as much as might bee upon an equal ballance, that so they might prove the more easie to governe, then if either party were absolute; and that by this policy, the King might by a packed

Note

Parliament without charge in a short time make a more absolute Conquest of that Nation and Kingdome by wisdom, then all his Royall Progenitors have been able to accomplish by Armes, and vast expence of Treasure and blood: will most evidently appeare, by this Duplicate of the Lord Deputies dispatch to his Majesty, 22 Jan. 1633. superscribed, For my Lords Grace of Canterbury; found in Canterburys private Study, and this indorsed with his owne hand Rec. Mar. 2. 1633. Com. Ang. Reasons for the present calling of a Parliament in Ireland. Which being a pernicious piece against the freedom and power of Parliaments, laying downe most desperate Policies how to over-reach Parliaments, and make them instruments to erect a meere Arbitrary Government, and enslave themselves; to what good use was to bee made of the Popish Party in Irish Parliaments, I shall here insert out of the Originall.

May it please your Sacred *MAJESTY*.

Considerations tending to the better Government of the Church and Clergy in this Kingdom, I offer in a Letter herewith sent to my Lords Grace of Canterbury.

The present meane condition of this Army, and the necessary course to bee held in the speedy reformation thereof, I fully now set forth in my dispatch to Mr. Secretary Coke.

The state of your Majesties Revenue; The annuall Issues of your Treasure, and the debt charged upon this Crowne upon my comming to the Government; The Propositions humbly offered by mee, for the bettering your Majesties affaires in this particular: Together, with a way of raising a constant great Rent forth of the Salt; I have at this time also transmitted to my Lord Treasurer; of all which, I beseech your Majesty at your best leisure bee pleased to take a summary Account.

Now I trust, the importance and weight of this inclosed Discourse, will recompence for the length thereof, and obtaine my pardon: Albeit I presume thus to present it immediately to your Sacred Hands. For indeed, I take it to bee no lesse then the ground-plot, whereupon to see and raise safety and quiet to this Kingdome, as it stands in relation within it selfe, security and profit, as it is in dependance to the Crown of England.

And therefore I doe most humbly beseech your Majesties quickning Spirit may move upon these Waters: That wee may from your directions receive life, and from your Wisdom borrow light to guide and conduct us along in the way we are to take, towards the accomplishment of so happie a Worke.

God Almighty assist you in these, and all other your Counsels, and long preserve your Majestie in full Power and Greatnesse, &c.

Dublin Castle, 22 of Jan. 1633.

My humble Opinion concerning a Parliament, in this your Majesties Kingdome of IRELAND.

Note

Albeit the calling of a Parliament in this Kingdome, is at no time off so much hazzard, where nothing is propounded as a Law, before it first borrow motion from your Majesties immediate allowance under your Great Seale, as it is in England, where there is a Liberty assumed to offer every thing in their owne time and Order: And this Subordination whereunto they have been led by the Wisdom of former times, is ever to bee held as a sacred Prerogative not to bee departed from, in no piece to bee broken or infringed; yet is the Proposition alwayes weighty, very necessary to bee considered with great deliberation, whether the present conjuncture of Affaires doth now advise a Parliament, or no? And after a serious discourse with my selfe, my reason perswades mee for the Assembling thereof.

For the contribution from the Countrey towards the Army ending in December next,

next, your Majesties Revenue falls short twenty thousand Pounds sterling by yeere, of the present charge it is burthened withall; besides the vast debt of fourescore thousand pounds Irish upon the Crown, which yearly payments alone, are impossible by any other ordinary way to be in time supplied, but by the Subject in Parliament. And to passe to the extraordinary, before there bee at least an attempt first to effect it with ease, were to love difficulties too well; rather voluntarily to seek them, then unwillingly to meet them. And might seeme as well vanity in the first respect, so to affect them, as faintnesse to bow under them, when they are not to be avoided.

The next inclination thereunto ariseth in mee from the conditions of this Country, growne very much more civill and rich, since the acceffe of your Royall Father of blessed memory, and your Majesty to the Crowne; That all you have here, is issued out againe amongst them for their protection and safety, without any considerable reservation for other the great affaires and expences abroad: That this great charge is sustained, and this great debt contracted, thorough imployments for a publike good, whereof the benefit hitherto hath been intirely theirs. That there hath been but one Subsidie granted in all this time, nor any other Supply but this Contribution; in exchange whereof your Princely Bounty returned them Graces as beneficiall to this Subject as their Money was to your Majesty; so as their substance having been so increased, under the guard of your Wisdome and Justice; So little issued hence from them; The Crowne so pressed only for their good; And so modest a calling upon them now for a supply, which in all Wisdome, good Nature and Conscience, they are not to deny; should they not conforme themselves to your Gracious will, their unthankfulnesse to God, and the best of Kings would become inexcusable before all the World, and the Regall Power more warrantably to be at after extended for redeeming and recovering your Majesties Revenews thus lost, and justly to punish so great a forfeit as this mult needs be judged to be in them.

Next, the frightfull apprehensions which at this time makes their hearts beat, lest the Quarterly Payments towards the Army, continued now almost ten yeeres, might in fine turn to an Hereditary Charge upon their Lands, inclines them to give any reasonable thing in present to secure themselves of that feare for the future; And therefore according to the wholsome Counsell of the Physitian, *Dum dolet accipe.*

Note.

And lastly, if they should meanly cast from them these mighty obligations, which indeed I cannot feare: Your Majesties affaires can never suffer lesse by their starting aside, when the generall Peace abroad admits more united Power in your Majesty, and lesse distracted thoughts in your Ministers to chastise such a forgetfulnesse to call to their remembrance, and to inforce from them other and better duties then these.

Note.

In the second place, the time your Majesty shall in your Wisdome appoint for this meeting imports very much, which, with all submission, I should advise might not be longer put off, then *Easter* or *Trinity* Term at furthest; And I shall crave leave to offer my reasons.

The improvements mentioned in my dispatch to the Lord Treasurer, (from which I no wayes recede) would not be fore-slowed, wherein wee lose much by deferring this Meeting. A circumstance very considerable in these straits, wherein if surprized, might be of much disadvantage, in case the Parliament answer not expectation. And to enter upon that worke before, would bee an Argument for them to scant their supply to your Majesty.

Again, a breach of a Parliament would prejudice lesse thus, then in winter, having at the worst six moneths to turne our eyes about, and many helps to be gained in that space, where in the other case the Contribution ending in *December* next, wee should be put upon an instant of time, to read our lesson at the first sight.

Then the calling of a Parliament, and determining of the quarterly payments, falling out much upon one, might make them apprehend there were a necessity in forcing

forcing a present agreement, if not the good one wee would, yet the best wee could get: And so imbolden them to make, and flatter themselves to gaine their owne Conditions; and Conditions are not to bee admitted with any Subjects, lesse
 “ with this People, where your Majesties absolute Sovereignty goes much higher;
 “ then it is taken, perhaps, to doe in *England*.

And lastly, there being some of your Majesties Graces, which being passed into Lawes, might bee of great prejudice to the Crowne: and yet it being to bee feared they will presse for them all; and uncertaine what humour the denying any of them might move in their minds; I conceive, under favour, it would bee much better to make two Sessions of it, one in Summer, the other in Winter. In the former to settle your Majesties supply, and in the latter, to enact so many of those Graces, as in Honour and Wisdome should bee Judged equall; when the putting aside of the rest might bee of no ill consequence to other your Royall purposes.

All the Objections I am able to suggest unto my selfe, are two. That it might render fruitlesse the intended improvement upon the concealments, and prejudice the Plantations of *Connagh* and *Ormond*. The first, may easily be helped, by a short Law propounded in my dispatch to my Lord Treasurer. And, *posito*, that there no other Law passe the first Session; the second, is likewise sufficiently secured.

Then it is to bee foreseene what your Majesty will demand, how to induce and pursue the same, for the happy settlement of the Regall Rights and Powers in this more subordinate Kingdome.

My humble advice is, to declare at the first opening of the meeting, that your Majestie intends and promises two Sessions. This former for your self; that latter in *Michaelsmas* Term next, for them. This, to ascertain the payments of your Army, and to strike off the Debts of your Crowne; that, for the enacting of all such profitable and wholsome Laws, as a moderate and good people may expect from a Wise and Gracious King.

That this being the order of Nature, Reason, and Civility, your Majesty expects it should be intirely observed, and your selfe wholly intrusted by them; which they are not onely to grant to bee fit in the generall case of King and Subjects, but ought indeed to acknowledge it with thankfulness due to your Majesty in particular, when they look back, and call to mind, how, for their ease, you were content to take six score thousand pounds (which their Agents gave to bee paid in three) in six yeeres: and not barely so neither: but to double your Graces towards them the whilst, which they have injoyed accordingly, much to their advantage, and greatly to the losse of the Crown.

And that considering the Army hath been represented over to your Majesty from this Counsell, and in a manner, from the body of this whole Kingdome, to bee of absolute necessity to give comfort to the quiet minds in their honest labours, to containe the licentious Spirits within the modest bounds of sobriety, it consists not with your Majesties Wisdome to give unto the World, no not the appearance of so much improvidence in your owne Counsels, of so much forgetfulness in a case of their safety; as to leave that Pillar of your Authority and their Peace, unset for continuance, at least, one six moneths before the wearing forth of their Contribution.

Therefore your Majesty was well assured, in conformity to the rules of Reason and Judgement, they would presently grant three Subsidies to bee paid in three yeeres, to disengage the Crowne of fourscore thousand pounds debt: and continue their Quarterly payments towards the Army foure yeeres longer: in which time it was hopefull, (suitable to your Gracious intentions) some other expedient might bee found out to maintaine the Army, without further charge to them at all. VVhich Law passed, they should have as much leisure to inact for themselves at after as they could desire, either now or in winter: Nay, your Majesty would be graciously pleased with the assistance of your Counsell to advise seriously with them, that nothing might remaine either unthought of, or denyed, conducing to the

the publike good of this Kingdome. But if they made difficulty to proceed with your Majesty in this manner, other Counsels must be thought of, and little to be relied or expected for from them.

I am not to flatter your Majesty so farre, as to raise any hope on that side that all this should be granted, but by pressing both, and especially the continuance of the quarterly payments to the Army, which they dread above any earthly thing: I conceive it probable, that to determine & lay asleep (as they think) the contribution; and in acknowledgement of your Majesties happy acceſſe to the Crown, they may be drawn to a present Gift of three Subsidies payable in three yeares, which alone would keep the Army on foot during that time; and if my calculation hold, almost discharge the debt of the Crowne besides.

For thus I make my Estimate, the contribution from the Country is now but twenty thousand pounds sterling by the yeere, whereas I have good reason to trust each Subsidy will raise thirty thousand pounds sterling. And so there will be ten thousand pounds for three yeeres over and above the establishment, which thirty thousand pounds sterling, well and profitably issued, will I trust, with Honour to your Majesty, and moderate satisfaction to the parties, strike off the whole fourscore thousand pounds Irish, which in present presseth so sore upon this Crown.

And then Sir, after that, in *Michaelmas Terme*, all beneficiall Acts for the Subject be thought of, as many, no fewer, nor no more enacted, then were fit in honour and wisdom to be granted: If for a conclusion to this Parliament, we could gain from them other two Subsidies, to buy in Rents and Pensions to ten thousand pounds yearly value; (a thing they are inclinable unto, as is mentioned in my dispatch to the Lord Treasurer) I judge there were a happy issue of this Meeting; and that it should through Gods blessing appeare to the world in a few yeeres, you had without charge made a more absolute Conquest of this Nation by your wisdom, then all your Royall Progenitors have been able to accomplish by their Armies, and vast expence of Treasure and Blood.

Notes

These being the ends, in my poore Opinion, which are to be desired and attained; the best meanes to dispose & fit all concurring causes thereunto, are not to be forgotten: and therefore as preparatives, I make bold to offer these insuing particulars.

It seemes to mee very convenient, a Committee be forthwith appointed of some few of us here, to take into consideration all the Bills intended when there was a Parliament to have been called in the time of my Lord *Falkland*; such as shall be judged beneficiall, to make them ready; such as may be of too much prejudice to the Crown, to lay them aside; and to draw up others which may chance to have been then omitted: this worke may be by the Committees either quickned or fore-slowen, as the Parliament proceeds warmer or cooler in your Majesties Supplies.

Next, that your Majesties Acts of Grace directed to my Lord *Falkland* the four and twentyeth of *May*, 1628. may be considered by such of your Counsell in *England*, as shall please your Majesty to appoint, there being many matters therein contained, which in a Law would not futarely so well sort with the Power requisite to be upheld in this Kingdome, nor yet with your Majesties present profit, which hath perswaded me to except against such, as I hold best to be silently passed over; and to transmit a Paper thereof to my Lord Treasurer.

It is to be feared, the meaner sort of Subjects here, live under the pressures of the great Men; and there is a generall complaint, that Officers exact much larger Fees, then of right they ought to doe: To help the former, if it be possible, I will find out two or three to make examples of. And to remedy the latter, grant out a Commission for examining, regulating, and setting downe Tables of Fees, in all your Courts, so as they shall find your Majesties goodnesse and justice watching and caring for their protection and ease both in private and publike respects.

Notes

I shall endeavour the lower House may be so composed, as that neither the

Note.

Recusants, nor yet the Protestants shall appeare considerably more one then the other, holding them as much as may bee, upon an equall Ballance, for they will prove thus easier to governe, then if either party were absolute. Then would I in private discourse, shew the Recusant, that the contribution ending in December next, if your Majesties Army were not supplied some other way before, the twelve pence a Sunday must of necessity bee exacted upon them: Shew the Protestant, that your Majesty must not let goe the twenty thousand pounds contribution: nor yet discontent the other in matter of Religion, till the Army were some way else certainly provided for: and convince them both, that the present quarterly payments are not so burthensome as they pretended them to bee. And that by the graces they have had already more benefit then their money came to: thus paying one by the other, which single might perchance prove more unhappy to deale with.

Note.

I will labour to make as many Captaines and Officers Burgeses, as possibly I can, who having immediate dependance upon the Crowne, may almost sway the buisnesse betwixt the two parties which way they please.

Note.

In the higher House, your Majesty will have, I trust, the Bishops wholly for you: The titular Lords, rather then come over themselves, will put their Proxies into such safe hands, as may bee thought of on this side: and in the rest your Majesty hath such interest, what out of duty to the Crown, and obnoxiousnesse in themselves, as I do not apprehend much, any difficulty amongst them.

To these, or to any thing else directed by your Majesty, I will with all possible diligence apply my selfe, so soon as I shall understand your pleasure therein. Most humbly beseeching you will take it into your gracious Memory, how much your Majesties speedy resolution in this great buisnesse, imports the prosperity of your affaires in this place; and in that respect vouchsafe to hasten it as much as conveniently may be.

Upon these Reasons a Parliament was accordingly summoned in Ireland the yeere following, the Lord Deputy recommending by his Letters Burgeses of his owne nomination to most Townes, who had little or no courage to deny any Burgeses of his recommendation. Among others, hee recommended one of *Secretary Windebanckes* Sonnes (then waiting on him in Ireland) to bee a Burgess there; as is evident by this Copie of his Letters of recommendation, found among *Windebanckes* papers, who (as appeares by * other Letters) was accordingly elected.

* Secretary Windebancke to his Son from Hampton Court, 27 October. 1634. Wherein thus hee writes. Now you are become a Parliament man, I hope you will in acknowledgement of the great Honour my Lord Deputy hath done you, endeavour so doe his Majesty the best service you can.

Note

After our heartie commendations. Whereas by order of the Commons House of Parliament that corporation of *Imishe* by reason of a double election of the person chosen there, is now to proceed to a new election of a Burgess to serve at the next Session of Parliament to commence the fourth of November next. And for as much as *Francis Windebanke* Esquire, is one well knowne unto us to bee able to serve you therein, as a person well affected to his Majesties service, and the welfare of his people, wee have thought fit to recommend him to you to bee elected by you for one of the Burgeses upon this occasion: wherein as you shall gaine advantage and benefit to your Corporation in such a choyce, hee being one that will serve you therein without expecting any recompence towards his charges; so wee, for our part will take it in good part at your hands, as a testimony of the due regard you have to one recommended unto you from us, which we shall take an opportunitie in fit time to let you know for your advantage; And so expecting your due performance hereof, wee bid you farewell. From his Majesties Castle of Dublin this 26. of September. 1634.

Copia vera exam.

Your loving Friend
(signed) *Wentworth*.

That

That this Parliament was equally ballanced with Protestants, and Papists, & how farre the said *Deputie* pursued, obtained his forementioned designes thereby to inflave that Realm, is so well known to most, that I shall not insist upon it: onely I shall observe that this connivence and underhand fomenting of that faction made them grow so insolent, that they raised a strong mutinie even in *Dublin* it selfe, against the Archbishop, the Mayor and Justices, and rescued two Priests from them, which they had taken in a religious house saying open Masse, and were like to stone them to death, so as they were enforced to retire to the Castle for Sanctuary, as appears by this extract out of Sir *Thomas Dutens* Letter among *Windebanks* papers.

I presume you will heare at large the relation of our battill of stones at *Dublin*, where the Archbishop of that towne, and the Major and Captaine *Cary*, and the Sergeant at Armes, and the two pursuivants escaped narrowly to have beene stoned to death on Saint Stephens day last: for the two Justices sent them in a peaceable manner to surprise certaine Priests at Masse in a Religious house in Cock street, where they tooke away their habits and pictures in peaceable manner, and then laid hold of two of the Priests to bring them to the Justices to answer their exercising of Popery in so publique a manner, contrary to the Kings Proclamation; they were no sooner come out into the street, but all the multitude of mechanicks & common people fell upon them, and tooke away the two Priests from them by force, and followed the Mayor and the Archbishop, and the rest so fast with stones all along the high street, as they were forced to house themselves in Skinners Row, till the Justices and wee all came from Church and rescued them, and so orderly wee all went through the multitude to the Castle, and in our passage there was but one stone cast out of a window, which lighted betweene the two Justices. Wee presently made Proclamation for all people to keepe the Kings peace and their owne Houses; and since, have committed to prison some of the Aldermen and their Deputies and Constables for not doing their duties, and many other ordinary persons whom we found to bee Actors in this Ryot, wherein many were hurt, but God bee thanked none were slaine.

Note.

But to leave Ireland for a time, and returne to England, you have seene before in the Articles of the marriage, that the *Queene* was to have a Bishop, and 28. Priests in her house as her Chaplaines, and that this Bishop should have and exercise all Episcopall jurisdiction in matters of Religion. After those Priests and the Bishop were accordingly come over and settled here; *Father Philips* the *Queenes* Confessor, and others of them grew so insolent that they began to practise and teach, That the Pope upon the Treaty of marriage reserved to his owne or his Delegates jurisdiction, the *Queens* whole Family, especially the institution and destitution of the Ecclesiasticks: That the King of England had no power to intermeddle therein; for that hee was an heretick; the Pope threatening to declare all Apostates who should seeke their establishment from the King. They likewise maintained the lawfulnessse of deposing Kings that were hereticks; & concluded to excommunicate all such as should oppose this doctrine, or take the oath of allegiance; in which action one *Musket* a Priest, and *Trollop* the Popish Vicar in the North were very active, which caused some combustions in the Court even among the Roman Catholicks, and the businesse grew so high, that some private advices were given to his Majestie concerning these particulars, expressed in these three insuing Papers (seised among *Windebanks* writings, who was privie to all their counsels, as you shall heare anon.)

Note.

Advices upon the present state of English Catholicks, as well of the Queenes House, as of his Majesties Dominions.

The constant report approved by *Father Philips* the *Queenes* Confessor is, That the Pope upon the Treaty of Marriage reserved to his owne or Delegates Jurisdiction the *Queen* of Englands whole family, principally the institution and destitution of her Ecclesiastiques. Testifie the confession of the Bishop of *Menda*, who contrary to his opinion and certaine knowledge was forced to advance and defend joynt with the pretended Bishop

Note.

Note.

Note.

Bishop of England, the pernicious Paradox, for the deposition of Princes, saying to A.B. for his justification, that although upon that subject hee had written against Baronius and Bellarmine for the contrary, neverthelesse for the present his hands were bound. Testifie the unitie of maxims, counsels and daily practices which he held with the foresaid pretended Bishop. Testifie the negotiations held at this present in Rome and England for the procuring of Excommunications and suspensions against all those Catholiques, Priests, or others which shall stand for the Kings authoritie against that damnable doctrine brought already into his Majesties Kingdome, as their favorites boast, and to be executed by the Bishops agents; particularly, by Mr. Musker a Priest living in London. Testifie the Popes Letters to the King of France, now in the Catholiques hands, wherein hee complains to have beene abused, in that (contrary to the King of France his promise) neither Toleration was granted in England, nor the oath of Allegiance suspended.

All which duly considered directly tends to a manifest sedition, and division of the Kings authoritie and state, and that not in qualitie or proprietie of Religion, but in particular manner and condition of dutie, obedience, and naturall Allegiance, withdrawne from their true Prince and Sovereigne.

In remedy of which pernicious opinions and practises, it pleaseth his Majestie, in imitation of his predecessors, as well to continue the feall defence of his owne right and authority, as the Pope doth his pretended and usurped, which two wayes may easily bee done.

The first, by lively pressing his naturall subjects to take the oath of Allegiance, in as much as it concerns the abjuration of the Popes authoritie for the deposition of Princes, as of late the State of France hath proceeded against the Jesuites without any respect to matter of Religion or Priesthood: for the obligation of a Subject to his lawfull Prince being founded in the Law of Nations, Nature and God, the deniall thereof is *crimen lese Majestatis*, and so may bee ordained by act of Parliament or otherwise, and so those who shall bee punished by death for refusing thereof, cannot pretend cause of Religion, the oath being propounded in forme as it is now stiled, or the forme altered in substance, onely referred, as prudent men shall define.

The second by constraining all French servants to King or Queene, to disavow or detest (according to the late ordinances of State Parliaments, Universities of France, namely of Sorbon, that damnable and erroneous doctrine for the deposition of Princes) against the Jesuites.

And that it may please his Majestie not to admit any Catholique servant which shall refuse either of the foresaid manners of oathes or detestations.

Besides, that diligent search and punishment bee used against all Agents and Negotiators, which in these Realmes advance the contrary error to the prejudice of his Majesties authoritie and peace of his State.

For the reservation of the Queenes house to the Pope, it is evident in all antiquity, and now practised in all Christian Nations, that the institution and destitution of Ecclesiastiques (in regard of their persons and as members of the State) depends of the Prince, or of his Subjects by his consent, although their spirituall faculties or internall jurisdiction may bee derived from a superiour Prelate, Patriarck, or Pope, but all by equitie, justice and Canon, whereby the King of England propounding such his Subjects Ecclesiastiques as hee thinkes fit for the Queenes service, cannot bee refused by the Pope or other, untill they have shewed and proved sufficient cause of refuse.

Note.

Finally, how dangerous, prejudiciall and dishonorable such reservation is to the Kings authoritie, State and posteritie, upon what end or colour soever, every man of smaller judgement cannot but see.

An Answer to the Principles pretended against his Majesties establishment of Ecclesiasticks in the Queens house.

TWO be the Principles upon which the F. C. pretends the establishment of the Ecclesiasticks in the Queens house to belong unto the King of France.

The first is, *That the King of great Brittain hath not power, because as he saith, He is an Heretike.* Which ground is false, because the King of great Brittain neither by Councell nationall nor generall, nor by any Act authentick, or legall of Prelates having authority to doe the same, hath been defined or declared such: besides, heresie deprives no man of his temporall right, such as is the collation of temporall Benefices, giving of domestick charges and offices; yea, no Prelate of the Greeke Church living under the Turke can exercise his function, but with civill dependance and approbation of that Prince.

NOTE.

The second Principle is, *That all established by the King of great Brittaines authority, are by him threatened to be forthwith by the Pope declared Apostates.* In answer, whereof it is evident, that such royall establishment is neither Heresie nor Apostacy, and when the Pope should undertake such a matter, he should grossly abuse his authority against the Commons and Common law of the Church; yea, Ecclesiasticks by the King, will and may by Catholike lawes and right defend their establishment to be good, as the contrary to be erroneous, to wit, to seek to deprive our King of his right and authority therein.

NOTE.

Supposed that the King of great Brittain for avoiding of greater inconvenience, condescendeth to the reception of some French in the Queens house at the instance of the King of France, or choyce of the Queen of England, some conditions are necessarily to be observed. First, that albeit (*salvo jure proprio Regis magnæ Britannia*) the choice be in the Queen of England, yet the confirmation and approbation of all and every one be in the King of great Brittain, according to the last clause of the eleventh Article of the Treaty. Secondly, that concerning the French Bishops and Priests sent into England by the Popes authority, two things are to be considered; the first is the spirituall power, Catholike Religion and Jurisdiction, as well in the head as members; the second is the exaltation of the Popes temporall power in prejudice of the Kings soveraigne authority, under pretext of Catholike Religion, by obtruding as matter of faith, the Popes power for deposition of Princes. Howbeit then the King of great Brittain permitte the full exercise of Catholike Religion and spirituall power to the Queens Clergy and Catholike domestiques, notwithstanding the laws and statutes made to the contrary in this Realme since *Henry the eighth*; to is it necessary for the preservation of his soveraigne authority and peace of his State, that he prevents the intrusion of the Popes temporall power under pretext of Religion in prejudice of his owne; which he may in this concurrence most conveniently doe, by using the same remedies against these French Ecclesiasticks and Domesticks, which the State of France, but particularly the Parliament and University of Paris, assembled in their Colledge of Sorbon procured against the Jesuits, this same yeere 1626. the one by arrest the 17 of March this yeer 1626. the other by censure of the first of Aprill 1626. in condemning the pernicious doctrine of Santarelli Jesuit, for deposition of Princes; as false, erroneous new, contrary to the Word of God, derogating from the authority of Princes, provoking to Factions, Rebellions, Seditions, and murders of Princes, and constraining sixteen principall Jesuits, **Mercury** relates, to subscribe to the said arrest of the 17. of March 1626. with promise to subscribe to the censure of the Sorbon which should afterwards be made, in which their subscription they dis-avowed and detested, the foresaid damnable doctrine of Santarellus their compaignon: According to which may it please the King to compell all these Ecclesiastiques of the Queens house to subscribe to the foresaid arrest and censure, disavow and detest the foresaid new doctrine, as new, false, erroneous, contrary to the Word of God and their Parliament of Paris and Sorbon hath defined; which if they refuse to doe, it is most evident that it is not the preservation of the Queen in the Catholike Religion, not the

NOTE.

exercise of spirituall power and true piety that they intend, but under this pretext an introduction of popish domination in prejudice of the Kings authority, an insertion of venomous plants of Factions and Seditions; and why should they reluse the doctrine and practise of their own State, whereby the King shall effectuate two principall works; the one, that his soveraigne authority, with exclusion of the Popes pretended power in temporals, intended in the Oath of Allegiance, shall be to his Subjects manifestly approved and confirmed by the doctrine and practice of the State of *France*; the other is, that whereas the Pope by meanes of the Queens house, aymed at the establishment of his temporall power and greatnesse in this Kingdome (as is manifest by the doctrine and practice of the Bishops and English Priests since the marriage), and consequently made a Kingdome a part within this Realme; by the subscription and disavow of their Ecclesiasticks of this damnable doctrine, the cleane contrary will follow that in example of the Queens house, all English Catholiques will conforme themselves in doctrine and practice, and in this point the King shall receive full duty and obedience of his Catholike Subjects, and the Pope shall be content with his spirituall power, limited as in *France* for the Queens house, so long as it shall please the King to permit it.

NOTE.

That the Bishop of Merdes and all Bishops sent into *England* from the Pope, have their Bulls, papales expressly prohibited by the lawes and rights of this Realme, it is manifest.

By these papers you may plainly discern, the dangerousnesse of these Romish Agents, their high and bold attempts against his Majesties Pre-rogative royall, and the safety of his person, and their policies, by which presently upon the marriage they endeavoured to set up the Popes both Ecclesiasticall and Temporall jurisdiction to over-ventop the Kings. How this controvertie was ended I have no certaine intelligence; As for other Priests and Jesuits, you have already seen what Proclamations were published against them, between, and during the two Sessions of Parliament in the yeere 1628. by reason of the frequent complaints of the Commons and for the forenamed ends: Vpon which Proclamations divers Priests and Jesuits were apprehended and some Recusants indited by Officers and Justices of peace, well affected to our Religion; but how, notwithstanding all these Proclamations, royall promises, Priests and Jesuits were released from time to time by warrants, sometimes under his Majesties owne hand; sometimes under the hands of his privy Counsell but most times by warrants from Secretary Windebank alone; and how John Gray with other Messengers, and one Harwood were reviled, threatened to be whipt, and committed to Prison by Windebanke, for apprehending Priests and Jesuits according to their duty, till they should put in bond, with sureties to him. NEVER TO PERSECUTE PRIESTS OR POISH RECUSANTS MORE with other particulars of this nature, I have manifested at large in my *Royall Popish Favourite*; to which I referre the Reader; onely I shall give you a short touch of some Priests and Jesuits released after these Proclamations, as likewise by whom and whence.

(a) The Warrants and Priests names you may see in my *Popish Royall Favourite*, p. 18. to 30.

(a) 11. Aprilis 6. Caroli, there were 16 Priests released out of the Clink by one Warrant under his Majesties owne Signe Mannal, at the Instance of the Queen, notwithstanding any former order, against such releases: 26. Julij 6. Caroli, by like Warrant and Instance there were six Priests and Jesuits more released out of the same prison: 18. November and 20 January 7. Caroli two priests more were thence discharged by like Warrant: 15. June 1632. and 18. Decemb. 1633. there were two priests more discharged out of the Clink by a Warrant of the Lords of the Counsell, upon the Queens recommendation.

On the 15. of June 1632. Windebanke was made one of the principall Secretaries of State by Arch-bishop Land's procurement, as appears by this passage in his (o) *Diary*: June 15. Master Francis Windebanke MY OLD FRIEND, was sworn Secretary of State, which place I OBTAINED FOR HIM of my gracious Master King CHARLES. To what end this Instrument was advanced to this place of trust by Canterbury & what good service he did the Priests Jesuits Nuncio Papists

& See the Bre-viate of his Life, p. 18.

pists, Pope and his Nuncios therein, will appeare in the sequel of this Narration. No sooner was he settled in his place, but within few moneths after he fails to release and protect Priests, Jesuits, Recusants, more then any of his predecessors, and all the Counsell besides, becoming their speciall patron, insomuch that in the yeere 1634. he received this speciall letter of thanks from *Father Joseph* for it, (written by the French Kings speciall command) faithfully translated out of the originall, indited in *Italian*, found among his papers.

Most excellent Sir, my Patron most worshipfull:

I should be too much wanting to my duty, if I did not render my most humble thanks to your Excellence, having after so many other favours conferred upon our Mission, received for a compleat height, the singular prooffe of your affection in the delivery of our Fathers; I knowing with what love and care you were pleased to commit your selfe in this worke, the which besides the merit of charity, hath been most gracesfull to his most Christian Majesty, who in this doth with great satisfaction acknowledge the good will of his Majesty of great Britaine in the person of his Minister in these occurrences which he well relishesth: If in any occasion I can serve your Excellence you shall find me most ready to render you prooffs of my devotion and observance, beseeching you to continue the favourable effects of your benignity towards our Fathers; and with this I end, auguring to you all compleat felicity.

NOTE:

Your Excellencies most devout

*From Paris the 23. of
Novemb. 1634.*

and most humble servant in Christ,

Fryar Joseph of Paris, Capucine.

Besides, *Panzani* the Popes Nuncio in England, after his returne hence, writ him a letter of thanks from Rome, for the daily favours he received from him in behalfe of the Roman Catholikes whiles he continued Nuncio here, of which more in due place.

This trade of releasing, protecting Priests, Iesuits and Papists, this Secretary continued all his time, till his flight into France; upon his questioning in the Commons House for this offence, What Priests and Iesuits he bailed and discharged, will appeare by Master *Glyn*s report to the House concerning it, in the Commons Journall 1. Decembris 1640. and by this Catalogue of Priests discharged by him under his owne and Master *Reads* (his Secretaries) hands, written since his questioning in the house of Commons and found among his other writings.

1. **T** *Thomas Woodward* in 200. l. with two sureties to appeare upon 20 dayes warning bond, dat. 19. Oct. 1632.
2. *Henry More* with two sureties, in 400. l. to appeare upon 20 dayes warning, bond dat. 1 Dec. 1633.
3. *Edward Tresham* with two sureties, in 400. l. to appeare upon 20 dayes warning, bond dat. 6. Dec. 1633.
4. *Thomas Leake* with two sureties, in 400. l. to appeare upon 12 dayes warning, bond dat. 1. March 1633.
5. *Thomas Holmes* with two sureties, in 300. l. to appeare upon 40 dayes warning, bond dat. 9. May 1634.
6. *Francis Harris* with two sureties, in 300. l. to appeare upon 20 dayes warning, bond dat. 4. Junij 1634.
7. *Peter Curtis* with two sureties, in 300. l. to appeare upon 40 dayes warning, bond dat. 12. Junij 1634.
8. *Henry Owen* with two sureties, in 300. l. to appeare upon 20 dayes warning, bond dat. 11. of July 1634.

Q =

Thomas

9. *Thomas Renolds* with two sureties, in 300. l. to appeare upon 20 dayes warning, bond dat. 6. *August* 1634.
10. *John Foliot* with two sureties, in 300. l. to appeare upon 20 dayes warning, bond dat. 3. *Novemb.* 1634.
11. *Humphry Turbevill* with two sureties, in 200. l. to appeare upon 30 dayes warning, bond dat. 1. *Dec.* 1634.
12. *Daniel Chambers* with two sureties, in 300. l. to appeare upon 40 dayes warning, bond dat. 3. *Dec.* 1634.
13. *William Drury* with two sureties, in 300. l. to appeare upon 20 dayes warning, bond dat. 19. *Febr.* 1634.
14. *Edward More* with two sureties, 300. l. to appeare upon 20 dayes warning, bond dat. 24. *March.* 1634.
15. *Bonhome Cooke* with two sureties, in 300. l. to appeare upon 10 dayes warning, bond dat. 19. *March* 1634.
16. *Peter Wilford* with two sureties, in 500. l. to appeare upon 20 dayes warning, bond dat. 23. *March* 1634.
17. *John Rivers* with two sureties, in 300. l. to appeare upon 30 dayes warning, bond dat. 13. *Apr.* 1635.
18. *John Hawkehee* with two sureties in 500. l. to appeare upon 20 dayes warning, bond dat. 27. *Junij* 1635.
19. *Iohn Howles* with two sureties, in 300. l. to appeare upon 20 dayes warning, bond dat. 7. *Aug.* 1635.
20. *Iohn Piers* alias *Fisher* with two sureties, in 500. l. to appeare upon 20 dayes warning, bond dat. 12. *August* 1635.
21. *Henry Gifford* with two sureties, in 500. l. to appeare upon 20 dayes warning, bond dat. 21. *Aug.* 1635.
22. *William Valentine* with two sureties in 200. l. to appeare upon six dayes warning, bond dat. 25. *May* 1636.
23. *Edward Courtney* with two sureties, in 20000. l. to appeare upon 10 dayes warning, bond dat. 22. *July* 1636.
24. *Thomas Preston* with 2 sureties, in 1000. l. to appeare upon 10 dayes warning, bond dat. 14. *Apr.* 1627.
25. *Henry Morie* with five sureties, in 5000. l. to appeare upon 20 dayes warning, bond dat. 16. *June* 1637.
26. *Iohn Goodman* with two sureties, in 500. l. to appeare upon 20 dayes warning, bond dat. 17. *Sept.* 1639.
27. *Iohn Southworth*, *July* 1640.

This Catalogue was inclosed in this ensuing paper writen with *Windebankes* or his Secretary *Reals* owne hand (which are very like) and thus indorsed:

The Kings discharge to Secretary *Windebanke* for releasing of Priests.

WHereas divers Roman Catholikes as well priests as others, have been at severall times enlarged out of divers prisons, to which they had formerly been committed, they first entring into bond with sureties to appeare before the Lords of our privy Counsell, upon warning given to them to that purpose; which bonds have been taken by our Trusty and right welbeloved Counsellour Sir *Francis Windebanke*, and one of our principall Secretaries of State, and remaine with him.

And whereas we have also thought fit upon divers occasions to give speciall commands and directions in favour of some particular persons of the Roman Catholike Religion, wherein we have used his service; We doe hereby acknowledge and declare that the enlargement of the said Roman Catholikes and those other acts done in favour of those of that religion by our said Secretary, have been performed by our speciall command and order given to him in that behalfe, without any advice or originall motion of him, who hath onely moved herein as he hath been from time commanded by

NOTE.

by Vs, and for which We had good grounds and reasons of State, such as VVe shall Our Selfe declare when VVe shall find cause: VVe doe therefore hereby fully and absolutely acquit, discharge and save harmlesse the said Sir Francis Windbanke from any trouble or question, to which he may be subject for or concerning the execution of our said commands, and from all penalties that he may incur by reason thereof, any Law, Act, Statute, proclamation, or any other matter or thing whatsoever to the contrary, in any wise notwithstanding: and of this all our Officers, Ministers and Subjects whom it doth or may concerne are to take notice.

This discharge I find not signed by the King, which makes me thinke it to be a draught prepared for his royall Signature by Windbanke since his questioning in parliament, to lay all the blame of his Actions upon the King himselfe; who (as it seems by his following letter) gave him a passe when he fled from the parliaments justice into France, but his Secretary Master Read fearing the first passe not to be sufficient, sent this ensuing passe out of France, found among Mr. Thomas Windbankes papers.

Whereas Our right trusty and welbeloved Counsellour Sir Francis Windbanke Knight, one of our principall Secretaries of State, is to make his repaire into forraigne parts; We doe hereby licence him to passe, and straitly charge and command you and every of you, to suffer him to goe quietly by you, and to embarque himselfe at any of Our ports most convenient for his passage, and to take with him his Nephew Robert Read, and two other in his company, together with his and their carriages, without any manner of search, stay, or other interruption whatsoever; and this shall be as well to the said Sir Francis Windbanke, Robert Read and the rest, for passing, as to you and every of you, for suffering them to passe, as aforesaid, sufficient warrant and discharge. Given at Our Court at White-hall the second day of December 1640.

To all Admirals, Vice-admirals, Captaines of Our Forces, Castles and Ships, and to all Justices of peace, Mayors, Sheriffs, Bayliffs, Constables, Customers, Comptrollers, and Searchers, and to all other Our Officers and Ministers, whom it doth or may concerne, and to every of them,

This counterfeited anti-dated passe was sent to Master Thomas Windbanke into England out of France, to procure his Majesties hand and Signet to it; and if any difficulty or scruple were made by the King to signe it, the Queens omnipotent mediation must be used to obtainits Signature, as this letter of Mr. Reads to Mr. Thomas Windbanke wherein it was inclosed, will sufficiently manifest, and likewise discover to the world how grossly his Majesty hath been abused by this Secretary, the Archbishop and others of his Ministers by procuring his hand to such forged, anti-dated warrants, to excuse themselves and lay all the blame of their Actions upon him, which should cause his Majesty to look better to them hereafter in this kind.

Sir,
MY Uncle has acquainted me with a letter he has written to my La. of Arundell and with the directions he has given you about it, I put him in mind of some addition fit to be made to it, which he likes very well, and has commanded me to write to you. That if her Ladiship or any other with whom shee shall please to advise, can think upon any way to prevent any proclamation against him, or at least to sweeten any rigorous course that may be intended against him, as probably such meanes may be found, now that their M. M. (Majesties) and the Parliament seeme to be upon better termes, her Ladiship will be pleased to advance it with all her power: And really I am of opinion, if the King did know how much dishonour he has abroad by this question of the Secretary, and had a true sense of master Secretaries condition both his Majesty and the Queen would be hearty in his businesse, which could not but produce good effects. Sir, I have considered that when they fall upon our businesse, they will goe neerer to
questions

NOTE.

question Master Secretary for comming away without license, and therefore it will be fit to get the Kings hand to a passe for him, which will prevent that; I beleeve the King will not make difficulty to doe it, but least he should, it would not be amisse to get the Queen to present it to him for his hand; my Uncle holds it fit to be done, and I have sent you here with such a passe as is to be signed, with the date that it must bear; it wil be good to get this very paper signed, for it being my hand, it will the rather be thought it was made before our comming away; when it shall be signed, you may get Master Porter to cause it to be sealed with that signet remaining in his Majesties custody, for the more secrecy, if it may conveniently be done, otherwise it will be valid without a Scale, but the stronger the better in this case: you shall not need to send it hither, but to keepe it by you, to produce upon occasion.

NOTE.

His honour thinks not fit to write to the Queen about your businesse, and gives this reason, that he holds it not a place fit for you at this time, by reason of the hazard of it, and besides, he beleeves if the Queen should incline to doe it at this time, the Parliament would take shadow at it, and it would be the worst: for this businesse; however, he advises you to consider seriously of it, and consult some of your Friends in it, but this is his opinion, &c,

Paris 8. March, 1641.

YOURS,

ROBERT READ.

The sixt of December Secretary Windebanke by another royall passe, landed at *Calis*, December 5. 1640. writ from hence these two following letters to the Court to his Sonne Thomas Windebanke, with his owne hand wherein he relates both the manner of his flight and passage into France, justifies himselfe in the matters charged against him as done only by the Kings and Queens directions, from whom he had letters of recommendation to the King and Queen of France, and the chiefe Officers there, and useth divers expressions of the continuance of their royall favours towards him, which will appeare more fully by his and Master Reads letters writ to Master Thomas Windebanke his Sonne under their owne hands since their flight into France, which I shall here insert in their order of time.

That this Secretary had a passe from his Majesty, what use he made of it, and what befell him in his passage, will appeare by this letter to his Sonne.

NOTE.

TOM, the day I parted from London I came to *Gravesend*, about eight in the morning, and from thence hired a boat for sea, hoping to have found some passage there; but failing there, I went from thence to *Queenborough*, and by the way I found a Ship bound for *Roven*, into which I did put my selfe that night about midnight, in that I was transported to *Marger* upon Fryday, where we anchored that night, and the next day we came to *Deale*, where I was in danger to be discovered by a searcher that came from Sir John Pennington, but his Majesties Warrant being to passe me without search, that difficulty was cleared: Nevertheless, the apprehension of a like, together with the slownesse of the passage of the Ship of *Roven*, made me provide for prevention of a like danger, and so I desired Monsieur Aubert, whose care and love to me hath been my onely comfort in my great affliction, to hire me any little catch at *Deale* for my speedy passage; which being instantly done, we did put our selves the last night, being Saturday, into an open boat, wherein we had no shelter but the Heavens, and were all that night by reason of the calme, and changing of the wind upon the sea, and could not get hither to *Calis* untill this afternoone about two, where then we arrived safely.

I have no leasure by reason of the sodaine returne of the Master of the Boat to give you a further account of my selfe, though you will think my condition full of heaviness, not so much for my selfe, who by ordinary course of nature cannot long continue in it; as for your Mother, your selfe, and the rest of my deare Children, all whose afflictions as they come from me, so I wish them layd upon me, upon condition that they and you were freed of them; in the meane time you must be their comfort

comfort in mine absence, for which God will bless you, and move the Kings heart to take you into his princely consideration; which I shall be as well contented with, as it I had continued in my prosperity; The being deprived of the light of my Sovereigne Lord and Masters countenance is the greatest and most bitter of my afflictions, to which God will returne me if he finds it fit, if otherwise, I hope he will arme me with patience; You will present my most humble service to my Lord Duke of *Lenox*, the Lord Marquesse *Hamilton*, the Earle of *Manchester* and his Lady, with the Lord Chamberlaine, Lord *Goring* and Lord *Cottington*, the like to the LORD ARCH-BISHOP, and Lord TREASUREK. and any other that shall enquire of me: God bless you and sendus a happy meeting, so I rest;

YOURS, &c.

Calis 6. December

1640.

FRAN. WINDEBANKE.

TOM. I writ to you this afternoon already, immediately upon my arrivall here and gave you account of my passage into these parts, and this was by the Master of the boat that brought me hither; since, understanding that the Pacquet boat is to part away from hence to morrow, I thought fit to take that occasion to communicate some thoughts of mine concerning my unfortunate businesse in Parliament.

It is not unlikely but that the House of Commons will, notwithstanding mine absence (or the rather for it, as taking my retreat for a confession of the charge) proceed to present me to the Upper House for a Delinquent of so high a nature, as never came so much as into my thoughts to be guilty of: In this case you shall doe well to consider whether it will not be fit for you, most humbly to move his Majesty in favour of me, to deale with some of the Lords best inclined to me, namely, the Lord Duke of *Lenox*, the Lord Marquesse *Hamilton*, the Earle Marshall, Lord *Goring*, Lord *Cottington*, and others, not leaving out the Lord Chamberlaine, that my charge may be set downe in writing, and that I may be permitted to make my answer to it; if this may be granted, the next particular that will fall into consideration will be, how farre his Majesty will please to ad vow me in the two great parts of the charge, namely, the enlarging of Priests, and the procuring of bills of grace from his Majesty for stay of the conviction of Recusants, and likewise for such letters as my selfe have written upon his Majesties commandement, for stay of such indirements: For the first of these there are 27. or 28. Bonds taken of such Priests as I have set at liberty, which Bonds you shall doe well to shew his Majesty, being all taken by his speciall direction, and I doe not remember that any have been delivered out of prison but such as are so bound, unlesse perhaps some may have been taken out of the hands of those two Hell-hounds *Gray* and *Newton*, that were disabled by the Lords from prosecuting Recusants, and this at the instance of the Queen to his Majesty: For the second, namely, the stay of convictions by Bills of grace and otherwise, they were all entirely moved and procured by the Queens Majesty and some of her servants, and likewise of those neere his Majesty, who had no small benefit by them, and I had nothing at all to doe with them, but in the dispatch of some of those Bills which belonged to me as Secretary, and his Majesty may please to remember, that before those Bills passed my hands, some of them were made during life, which upon my motion to his Majesty and the representation I made of that inconveniency, was altered, and they were granted but during pleasure, & so became revokable whensoever his Majesty should command: His Majesty may likewise further please to remember, that of late I did humbly represent to him the prejudice to his revenue by these bills of grace, and besought him there might be a stop of them, and I doe not remember that any have been granted these two or three years; howsoever I doe religiously professe I never moved in them, nor any other businesse of Recusants, originally, nor without his Majesties speciall commandement, and therefore if I should not be ad vowed in all, my condition must be very hard: Nevertheless rather that his Majesty or his affaires shall suffer, I desire the whole burden may be laid upon me, and though I have his Majesties hand for most of them and commandement for all, yet I will rather perish then produce either to his prejudice without his permission

NOTE.

NOTE.

permission; if his Majesty shall please to appeare to the Lords above-mentioned in my behalfe, you are not to leave them unsolicited, and you must specially wait upon my brother Secretary, and present my humble service to him. Since my arrivall here, I have presented my selfe to the Governour *Le Comte de Charrau*, who hath offered me great civilities, inviting me to sup with him, and desiring me to make use of his Coach to *Paris*, but I have thought fit to excuse my selfe as handsomely as I could of both; you shall doe well to present my most humble thanks and services to the Queen for these honours, which I have reason to acknowledge are done me in contemplation of her Majesties favour to me, so as though in mine owne Country it be accounted a crime to me to be her Majesties servant, yet here I shall have reputation and receive much honour by it.

NOTE.

At my first dis-embarking here, in my red furred cap, I was taken for my Lords Grace of *Canterbury*, and the noyse was generally spread through the Towne that it was he: by which it appeares this people can judge well of colours, unlesse they had thought him a Cardinall.

Comfort your poore afflicted Mother in mine absence, who if shee should fall into any distemper of sicknesse for this disaster upon me and my Family, there could be nothing added to my misery in this world.

God blesse you, and make you more happy in your owne person then you are in that of

Calis 6. December

Your most distressed,

but affectionate Father

1640.

A POSTSCRIPT.

Francis VVindebankes

Commend my dearest loue to your Mother, and let your brother and sisters know I send them my blessing.

NOTE.

You shall doe well to acquaint the Queens Majesty with the particulars of my travels, and most humbly to implore the continuance of her favour to me and my poore ruined Family, and withall forget not to represent to her Majesty the singular favour shee vouchsafed me in the company of *Monsieur Aubert*, who hath been a most carefull and tender friend to me.

NOTE.

TOM. I have made longer stay here at Calis then I expected, the Governour next day after my arrivall, intimating to me with great civility, that he is by his instructions, not to suffer any stranger of quality to passe without giving notice of it to the State, and accordingly had sent an expresse to *Monseieur de Chavigny*, and until his returne he desired me to have patience; this morning the Courtier is returned with a letter from *Monseieur de Chavigny*, not onely commanding licence for my departure, but expressing great respect to my person, and giving order for my accommodation with any thing that this place can afford, so that to morrow in the morning, God willing, I purpose to goe from hence towards *Paris*: The civilities I have received from the Governour are very many and extraordinary, especially since the letter from *Monseieur de Chavigny*, he having given me an entertainment this day at dinner at his house, and sent his Coach to attend me whethersoever I would make use of it, either in the Towne or out of it; I desire you to acquaint her Majesty with it, and to present unto her my most humble services and thanks, seeing it is meerly in my relations to her that I receive these honours, and withall most humbly to move her, whether shee will not think fit to make some demonstration of her gracious acceptance hereof to the Governour, in what way her princely wisdoms shall think most fit.

NOTE.

The onely contentment I had of my stay here, was the hope to have received letters from you by the packet-boat this weeke; to which purpose, I sent for the male of letters addressed to *Paris*, and by the authority of the Governour opened it, but found nothing belonging to me; I pray you acquaint master *Burlamachy* with it, and assure him, that I sealed up the male againe with mine owne seale, in presence of the Governour, and of

NOTE.

of these that have the charge of the letters, and that they are all sent.

For mine own most unfortunate business in Parliament, I long to know what effect my coming from England hath produced, though I expect little good, but to be kept from business.

Concerning mine own domestique affairs; the chiefest that I shall recommend to you is the care of your poore mother, upon whose living and comfort depends mine; next I wish you to procure me a bill of credit, to which purpose Robin hath writ to master Burlamaqui for I find my charge here will be very high, and if his Majesty shall not relieve me I shall not be able by mine owne revenue to subsist: This I have represented to the Lord Treasurer and Lord COMPTROLLER, and desired them to give order for payment of such monies as are due to me in the Exchequer, which are as Michaelmas last 800. l. you shall doe with like care to solicit these Lords for the payment of the monies, for which I stand engaged to master Richard for the King, and not to forget my board-wages nor the monies in the hands of the Earle of New-castle.

The letters that goe herewith, you will deliver with the remembrance of my humble services to those Lords, to whom I have written, to assist you as occasion shall be presented. That to my Lord Chamberlaine is more large and particular then the rest, and I have left it open purposely, to the end, you may shew it to his Majesty, and if his Majesty like it, to deliver it, otherwise not. NOTE.

I shall want linnen and apparel at Paris, and Aubert tells me, I may have a Trunk conveyed by the paquei-boat hither, and from hence to Paris, with a small charge; and therefore I wish there were two suits put up, one of plaine Velvet and I never yet wore, and another of the little wrought Velvet and diamond worke, and linnen of all sorts but bands, with three or foure paire of warme wollen stockings, and two paire of blacke silk ones.

The ship in which we should have passed and was bound for Rouen, was within 24. houres after we left it, pillaged by the Dunkerks but rescued from them after by the French, and brought in hither as lawfull prize, where shee now is, so that it was happy we forsooke her and passed in a Shallop, and though our passages were full of hazard, yet we escaped a greater danger by it.

God bless you, and put a happy end to all our sufferings, which I wish might all fall upon my selfe, so your mother and you who are most innocent, were free; in all conditions I shall be

Your most affectionate Father

Calis 13. December
1640.

FRAN. WINDEBANKE.

TO M. Your letters of the 17. of December came fitly to welcome me hither to Paris, and gave me infinite comfort in the expressions you make of their Majesties favours to me and mine in our present distressed condition, the like I understand by matter Treasurer, and you are herewith to receive letters to them all in acknowledgement of their goodness: You writ nothing concerning the Recedents Bonds, which I desired you to shew to his Majesty. I desire you to let me know by your next what you have done therein. NOTE.

Your most affectionate Father

Paris 4. January
1641.

FRAN. WINDEBANKE.

Master Read, his Secretary, by a letter of the same date to master Thomas Windelbank (then a Gentleman of the privy Chamber to his Majesty in Ordinary) writes thus.

Sir,

I Am of opinion with you, that our businesse in Parliament will not sleep, yet I like it never the worse that it goes on no faster, for in all probability, if they may have their will of the great ones, as I beleve they will, we may escape the better, especially since they cannot chuse but know that the King continues his favour to master Secretary, which I hope will somewhat take off from their fiercenesse against him. NOTE.

Paris 4. Jan. 1641.

Your most affectionate cozen and humble servant

R

R. READ,

T. M.

Tom. I writ to your mother and your selfe the last weeke by the ordinary; but this extraordinary occasion of *Sir John Fortescues* returne into England presenting it selfe, I could not but make use of it, that you may understand the state of my health as often as may be, which continuing good, I am confident will be some comfort to you all in the midst of your afflictions.

NOTE.

I have not been able to put my selfe in order, to goe out of my lodging untill this day, but now my first appearing abroad hath been to present my selfe to my Lord of *Leicester*, who hath received me with great respects and professions; which honour his Lordship having vouchsafed me for her Majesties sake, and in vertue of her gracious letters of recommendation in favour of me: you are with all humility to acknowledge it to her Majesty in my name, and to present unto her my most humble thanks.

NOTE.

In my letters of the last weeke to his Majesty, I presumed to represent the necessity (as I conceived) of my attending the ministers here; first, *Monsieur de Chavigny*, and then the Cardinall, as well in acknowledgement of the honour they did to you, when you were imployed here, as for the order they gave to the Governour of *Calis* to treat me with all respect, as soone as they had notice of my arrivall there.

Paris 7. January
1641.

Your very loving Father

Francis Windebanke.

Tom. If you understand any thing of the disposall of the Secretaries place, I wish some considerable summe might be thought upon to be given to me by him that shall succeed, which would be of more advantage, and give me better satisfaction then any pension that his Majesty shall conferre upon me, and will be of lesse charge to his Majesty; you shall doe well to be attentive upon this, and immediately after the first notice of to make earnest meanes to the Queen to procure this for me.

NOTE.

My Lord Ambassadour hath done me the honour to give me a visit at my lodging.

Paris 11. January
1641.

Your very loving Father

Francis Windebanke.

Tom. your letters of the 31. of *December* that came this week, were brought too late, and so long after the delivery of all others, that I was in great paine and apprehension I should not have been made happy with the knowledge of the estate of my poore Family this weeke, which would have added much to my sad thoughts: I have now, I thanke God, received full satisfaction in that which I so much longed for, and hope, whatsoever my other afflictions may be that I shall receive no other newes of your healths during my absence from you.

NOTE.

There is little in your letters that requires answer; that onely concerning my charge when it shall be made, is of consideration, which will require little answer, if his Majesty shall please to avow me in the businesse of Recusants, as I doubt not but in honour and justice he will; what else can be objected to me of moment, I doe not apprehend; nevertheless, if his Majesty think fit that you shall petition the Lords for permission to me to make my answer, you may doe it, though I could be contented you should first see the particulars of the charge, whether there be any thing in it besides that of the Recusants; and howsoever you must acquaint his Majesty with your petition before you exhibite it.

I was upon Sunday last at Service and Sermon at my Lord Ambassadours house, where my Lord did me very much honour, otherwise I have kept my lodging.

Paris 18. January
1641.

Your most affectionate Father

*Francis Windebanke.**Tom.*

TO W. I shall be glad that the Trunk of secret papers may fall into so good a hand as that of my Lord Cottington. I am very sorry to hear that his Majesties intention of an inquiry or yearly allowance to me begins already to coole; considering the charge I must lye at while I am in these parts, or any other, and the uncertainties of the benefit of the Post-Office, and of the boord wages for the Secretaries dyet, which you shall doe well to take some time to represent at large to the Queene, and to implore her favour for the continuance of that his Majesties gracions purpose to me, without which I and mine are in danger to be exposed to want and misery.

NOTE.

Paris 25. Jan. 1641.

Your very loving Father,

Francis Windebanke.

TO M. &c. He gave me a speciall invitation in the Cardinals name to the Ballet; and though such a gallantry be not agreeable to my present condition nor liking, yet in pressing it, and assuring me the Cardinal had already taken speciall order for my accomodation there, and would understand it as a great honour to him; I held it not criminal to use it: so I am to be there in the afternoone, and doe make account not to be at home till to morrow morning at three or foure at the soonest. I have not yet seen the Cardinal, which makes this favour the greater. But Monsieur de Chavigny tells me this must be no impediment to the going to the Ballet, and after this refection, and magnificence of the marriage shall be past, himselfe hath order to bring me to him and I must make account to be very welcome to him, and to be exceedingly well received.

NOTE.

The newes of Master Treasurers rendring up his white Staffe may concerne me in my boordwages for the dyet, without which, if some other consideration be not had of me, I shall quickly have my selfe freightened in my weake fortune. And therefore you shall doe well being, now the more soone as you shall heare that Master Treasurer hath the Duree of his consideration, to the Queene in my name, to be pleased to take me into Her consideration, and to move His Majestie, that some course may be taken for my subsisting, being otherwise likely, with my family, to be exposed to want and misery. I writ to her Majesty the last weeke, and recommended you to her favour: and besides, he hath bene pleased to command you to make addresse to Her upon any such occasion. I am not willing to importune her Majesty too often with my letters; and besides your continuall solicitations will be more proper to preserve me in Her memory than letters, which are for the most part laid aside, and by reason of other busineses, not much thought on. Her Majesties promises in her late letters vouchsafed me, were so full of grace and freedome, that I am confident upon your intercession somewhat will be done for me upon these alterations, and therefore you must follow it close; and for the manner, or the matter whether Pension or whatsoever else, I leave it to your selfe, having formerly given you some instructions herein.

NOTE.

NOTE.

NOTE.

Paris 7 Feb. 1641.

Your, &c.

Fran: Windebanke.

TO M. Since the writing of the other, that goeth herewith directed to you, I have bene at the Cardinals Ballet, &c. I have now written to the Queene about my businesse, and have left open the letter that you may see it, and then seale and deliver it. you thinke fit; you are upon the place, and therefore can best judge what to desire of the Queene and in what manner, and so I must leave it to you. But I wish you to addresse your selfe to Master Mountague and Master Jermam, and desire their assistance and advice, with remembrance of my humble service, and thanks to Master Jermam for his noble letter of this morning, &c.

Your, &c.

Paris 7 Feb. 1641.

R 2

Fran: Windebanke.

Your, &c.

NOTE.

TO M, &c. I have thought fit to let you know the particulars, that you may represent them to their M.M. (Majesties) for whose service meerly I am thus persecuted, and to whose wisdom, next after my trust in God, I most intirely submit my selfe, my fortune, and whatsoever else is mine; all which is now in extreame perill, For my faithfullnesse and obedience to their Commandements. (The rest of this letter being three folio Pages is writ in Characters, and contains some mysteries locked up in these unknowne Cyphers, not yet discovered.

Yours, &c.

Paris, 1 March 1640.

Fran: Windebank.

TOM, &c. I have beene this afternoone with the Cardinall, by the introduction of Monsieur de Chavigny, and received very great civilities and professions from him; he brought me out of his chamber into the next, giving me the upper hand, and holding me by the hands, (There follow three lines of Characters.)

Yours, &c.

Paris March 12. 1640.

Fran: Windebanke.

Master Read, Secretary to Windebanke, march 29. 1641. writ a letter (for the most part in Characters; to master Thomas Windebanke, wherein there are these passages at large:

S I R.

Yours of the fourth and eleventh currant have brought me double comfort this weeke, which was no more then I needed after such a vacation; I perceive my feares of the miscarriage of the first were not altogether vaine, since they were to neere a danger; their redemption from which, I assure you, was a great worke, and shewes a great deale of goodnesse in those friends which you mention; and I am willing to take it for a signe that the Parliament owes us not so ill a Talent as was feared. The Answer of their Majesties is very gracious, and I thanke God, has much revived Master Secretary, &c.

NOTE.

I cannot but wonder that the House should be scandalized at the stile you gave my Vnckle, since I am sure it is not in the power of any to take that Title from him but the King, and his Majesty having not yet done it, I know not but why he should enjoy it till his Majesty shall please otherwise to dispose of the place.

Master Weckerlin and Master Withering have sufficiently shewed their malicious barbarousnesse, God reward them for it, &c.

Paris, Goodfriday 29 march, 1641.

Yours, &c.

Robert Reade.

After this followed these ensuing letters from Windebanke and his Secretary Read to his Sonne Thomas Windebanke, all writ from Paris.

NOTE.

TO M, &c. Master Mountague arrived here very well upon saturday last. and hath beene with Monsieur de Chavigny and the Cardinall, who have received him very well. He brought me so gracious an expression from the Queene, that I held my selfe obliged, to make an humble acknowledgement of it to her Majesty, which goeth herewith.

My Lord Ambassadour continues still his favours to me, and hath been this weeke with me at my lodging, which is a very great honour to me.

Yours, &c.

Paris 19 Aprill
1641.

Francis Windebanke

S I R, &c.

NOTE.

HE can tell you that my Vnckle enjoyes (I thanke God) bodily health, and his heart is not the heavier for some expressions delivered him from their Majesties by

by Master Mountague, who arrived here on Saturday last: He comforts himselfe that NOTE.
he shall have all the favour his Majesty and the Queen are able to doe him, &c.

Paris 16. Aprill

Sir, your most affectionate Cousin

1641.

and obliged Servant,

Ro. Read.

SIR, &c.

IT is likely now my Lord of Strafford is dispatched, that businesses will goe faster on then formerly, and that amongst them, my Uncles will have its turne: What course will be taken in it I cannot judge; but I doubt not, if they make a charge, such things will be contained in it, as cannot be foreseen, and I fear if sombody be not there present to make a defence or disprove them, they may be taken for confesse, which may be a ruine to us all; I know no body is able to answer but my Uncle and my selfe: For him, there is no thought of his going thither; for my selfe, I know no reason why I should not be there, if his Majesty please to avow my Uncle, I thinke there will be no need of other answer; but if he shall please to say, he will first see the charge, there will be a necessity of somebodies being there, to bring to his Majesties remembrance the grounds and reasons upon which divers things were done, which must be needs slip out of his Majesties memory; and besides, there are divers papers and warrants to be searcht out for my Uncles justification; if his Majesty please to cause the charge to be sent hither, then there will be no need of me till the answer goe backe, which will be the best way of all. I beseech you consider seriously of it, and as soone as the business shall be spoken of, it would not be amisse to know his Majesties pleasure in all these particulars; and in the meane time be pleased to let me know your own opinion of them, &c. NOTE.

Paris 31. May

Sir, Your, &c.

1641.

R. Read.

TOM. &c. my letters were sent from hence under my Lord Ambassadors cover, directed to master Secretary Vane, which I have hitherto found the surest way, &c. I remember well I then sent you a letter for the Queen, in acknowledgement of the gracious remembrance her Majesty vouchsafed me by Master Mountague, &c. The last weeke I sent by the same way a letter to his Majesty, with a Duplicate of it to you, concerning the businesse wherein you had signified his Majesties pleasure to me. I hope if that have fallen into other hands, they will not dare to keep backe that which was directed to his Majesty whatsoever became of the rest, and I rather wish you to make your addresse to my Lady of Arundell, and humbly desire her Ladiship to mediate for me to my Lord. NOTE.

Paris 3. May

Your, &c.

1641.

Francis Windebanke.

TOM. &c. You must not faile to attend my Lord of Lecester as soone as you may; and to acknowledge his great honours and favours to me; you shall doe well likewise, to be an humble suter to the Queen in my name, that she will be pleased to take notice to my Lord, of the faire and noble treatment I have received from his Lordship for her Majesties sake, and upon her recommendation, and this you may doe at some time when my Lord may be present, and that you may be sure it may not be forgotten, &c. NOTE.

Your, &c.

Paris 6. May 1642.

FRAN. WINDEBANKE.

TOM.

NOTE.

TOM. &c. You are now to receive a letter from Robert Read, concerning a business which hath been lately examined in Parliament, you shall doe well to acquaint his Majesty with it, and most humbly to crave his direction, in case it shall come to a stricter inquisition, as I have reason to conceive it will; considering what I have formerly written to you upon this subject, to be represented to his Majesty, and under what malice and danger I lye for that business. None understands mine innocency herein better then his Majesty, nor can better cleare me, to whose Princely wisdom I entirely remit it, and shall governe my selfe both in this and any thing else concerning his service, wholly according to his pleasure.

Paris 21. June 1641.

You s, &c.

FRAN. WINDEBANKE.

S I R,

Considering the Declaration of the business of Scotland, which was set out just after the laying downe of the last Parliament that was unhappily dissolved; at which I remember I wonder since there is not any one word in it tending to the disadvantage of the subjects of England; I shall order my selfe for matter of answer, according to our Majesties pleasure, but if I must make answer, I know no reason but why I should doe it, as my best advantage, without regarding the interest of any other, this being as much for any man to looke to himselfe. I am sorry to find by your last weeks letters, that you have so ill an opinion of our businesses, I was ever in hope (and so am still) that a difference will be put between the offenses of such as committed them willingly, and no doubt advised the King to things that have been done in prejudice of the people, and the actions of my Uncle who were merely ministeriall, he being, God knows, far from advising those things that were done in favour of the Roman Catholikes, and that he was not of them with a very ill will, as I am able to certifie; but as businesses stand then, there was no avoiding them, since they were carryed by so strong a hand as yours very well, I am confident their issue will in honour and justice advantage our most happy King, and our most loving those things, &c.

NOTE.

NOTE.

Paris 21. June

You, &c.

1641.

Ro. Read.

S I R, &c.

YET it is not likely her Majesty would appeare for any other without his consent (I must say so) as I had expected in the business between Sir John Berkeley, and my selfe; nevertheless, my Uncle (because he would not ground any resolution upon his owne judgement) commanded me as of my selfe, to goe to Master Mountague and to speake to him in confidence concerning the business, and to desire his opinion in it: and he told me cleerly and positively, that he knew there were three or foure competitors that he likewise knew the Queen. to continue engaged, and that the place had not been thus long vacant: but that his Majesty being divided between his owne good intentions to some, and her Majesties engagement for others; he had not been able to come to a resolution, which confirmed my Uncle in his former opinion; yet because you may have some better ground for your desire then we are aware of, and that our friends were her Majesty, they are now reduced to a small number: my Uncle commanded me to desire Master Mountague to take occasion by recommending his business to her Majesty: good remembrance, to mention your selfe in particular to be taken into speciall consideration, which he has promised to doe this weeke very effectually; and further to desire Father Phillips to assist you upon any occasion, to whom you may have recourse in any business concerning my Uncle or your selfe; Mistress Civer likewise this week recommends your selfe in particular to her Majesty. and to madam Nurse her mother, to whom also you may addresse your selfe as you shall find cause. Besides this, my Uncle has also thought it fit to write humbly to the Queen. in your favour, though still upon Generals; so that if you shall think fit to make an attempt upon

NOTE.

upon the particular place you writ of, you may easily procure upon these grounds, or at least know by either of these, to whom you are addrested, how farre her Majesty stands engaged,

Sir, Yours, &c.

Paris 28. June

1641.

Robert Read.

About this time Secretary Windebanke's Lady and Family resolved to goe over to him into France, whereupon he writ this letter to his Sonne.

TO M. &c. You must procure a Passe from his Majesty for them all, and if I may know the time of her comming, I will meet her at Diepe: If his Majesty shall make difficulty at the Passe, you must beseech the Queens interposition to let them know, that the little appearance of the end of my businesse hath cast us both upon this resolution; you will be her guide, and I beseech God to blesse you, and let and bring us happily together. NOTE.

your, &c.

Paris. 5. July 1641.

Francis Windebanke.

In August following, Secretary Windebanke had a mind to Petition the House, whole royall advice and assistance he craved & had in it, these ensuing letters manifest.

TO M. &c. With them I sent you a Petition to the House of Commons in my name, but referred the proceeding in it to his Majesties pleasure, and to such advice as you might take from some trusty friend. I wish some care be taken, that the Secretaries place being disposed of, (which if his Majesty be not good to me, must be mine utter ruine) I may not be excluded from the generall pardon, which it is likely will be granted at the end of this Session: I hope you will put both their Majesties in mind hereof, with some earnestnesse. NOTE.

Paris 16. Aug.

1641.

Your, &c.

Francis Windebanke.

TO M. &c. I now send you a Petition which I have framed to be presented to the lower House in my name, if his Majesty shall thinke fit, to whose wisdoms I doe most humbly submit it, either to be suppressed, altered or disposed of as his Majesty shall please. That which hath moved me to fall upon this way, is the apprehension that the House will adjourne without comming to any resolution concerning me, which would be a greater punishment then otherwise in reason I can expect, considering my sufferings already: Howsoever, by this I may perhaps make a discovery of the inclinations of the House, and what ply my businesse is likely to take: I wish you could communicate this to some discreet trusty & secret friend before his Majesty be acquainted with it, and take deliberate advice upon it: In Case his Majesty approve this course, you shall then beseech him to deliver the Petition to Master Treasurer, & Master Comptroller, & to give them order to recommend it to the House from him; with farther intimation, that his Majesty will take it well if the House shall grant it: You are likewise to beseech the Queen to second his Majesty herein, and to recommend it to Master Treasurer and Master Comptroller, and any other in the House in whom her Majesty hath interest. I doe not conceive that such a Petition can doe harme, and perhaps the House doth expect some such submission, and will be mollified or quickned by it; nevertheless, I submit it to better judgement, and the life and death of it are indifferent to me, and therefore I leave it entirely to your ordering. NOTE.

I feare my arrears in the *Exchequer*, and the household will be slowly paid, having heard that the House of Commons have ordered, that his Majesty should be moved for the stopping of pensions due to Master Jermaine, Sir John Sucklin, or my selfe, but Gods will be done.

Your, &c.

Paris 2. Aug. 1641.

Francis Windchance.

S I R, &c.

NOTE.

YOU say nothing of the motion made in the House of Commons that the King should be moved to withhold the monies he is pleased to allow Master Secretary: You will receive from my Linckie a Petition, which I cannot but hope will produce some good effect, if it be accompanied with some hearty recommendation from the King, which must be done one of these fower wayes; either by his Majesty going to the House, sending for the House to him, sending for the Speaker alone, or by commanding the Counsellours of the House to recommend it in his name; each of these fower wayes as they stand, being more effectuall then the other, but the latter must be done of necessity, though any of the former wayes be taken for; their effectuall speaking in the businesse will be of good use. I doe not understand what there can be objected against the delivery of the Petition being so modest, since if it doe not succeed so well as to obtaine an absolute end of the businesse, yet this benefit we cannot faile of by it, that he will discover so much of their inclination as to give a judgement thereupon, what we are like to trust to: I am confident you will find all assistance from the Queen, and so God speed it: when once it is delivered, it must be solicited as heartily as recommended, for the least slacknesse in the solicitation of it will much prejudice the businesse; his Majesty appearing in it onely at the delivery of the Petition will not be sufficient, but he must be pleased to continue his favour till it be brought to some resolution, &c.

NOTE.

Sir, your, &c.

Paris 2. Aug. 1641.

Ro. Read.

S I R,

NOTE.

I Perswade my selfe the conjuncture is now proper for it (the Petition) since this late occasion hath begotten a good intelligence betweene the Queen and both Houses; and besides, it is said they are upon Counsels in favour of the Roman Catholics, &c.

Sir, your, &c.

Paris 9. Aug. 1641.

Ro. Read

NOTE.

TOM. &c. I returned you the Petition altered, though not altogether in those words that his Majesty directed, being of opinion (with submission nevertheless to better judgement) that the House will never be a means for any pardon or abolition, but if they will give way to it, I can expect no more, and I have reason to believe there will be no impediment. And for that which was formerly inserted, that I desired it of them, it could not well beare other sense, then that I craved their consents, or what was in them to grant, without which I knew it could not be, and with which it was probable there would be no difficulty: it being likewise to be presumed, I could not be so ignorant in a businesse so publike and obvious as to thinke the power of abolition could rest onely in them, but onely that their liking was necessarily to be precedent to others: Howsoever, I am exceeding glad the Petition was not pre-ented, and doe hold his Majesties opinion full of wisdom and favour to me, in stirring the businesse as little as may be, and therefore though I send backe the Petition; I wish it should be laid by and not made use of at all unill expresse order from me. For the Motion you intended to make

NOTE.

for

for (b) a Ship, I wish it had been forborne : such a favour from his Majesty (if he should have granted it) being likely to have raised more noise, and brought more prejudice upon his Majesty.

Tours, &c.

(b) To carry over his Lady and Family into France.

Paris 23. Aug. 1641.

Francis Windebanke.

The Petition intended to be presented to the House mentioned in this Letter, is this following.

To the Right Honourable the Knights, Citizens and Burgeesses assembled now in Parliament.

The humble Petition of Francis Windebanke, Knight.

Sheweth :

THAT whereas the Petitioner is charged, that he hath caused to be enlarged and delivered out of prison sundry Romish Priests, and done other things concerning the Roman Party, of which there is none that better understands how farre he is guilty then the Kings Majesty. And whereas among his many grievous sufferings since this his misfortune, there is none that afflicts him so much, as, That this honourable House hath taken offence at this, or any thing else that hath passed in his Ministry while he had the honour to be neere his Majesty.

NOTE.

He most humbly beseecheth this honourable House, in regard that his late Father and himselfe have served the Crowne of England neere these fourscore years, and have had the honour to be employed by the late Queen Elizabeth, King James, and his now Majesty, in businesses of great trust, they will be pleased to make the most favourable construction of his services, seeing he had no ill intention, nor hath offended willingly or maliciously; and so to take him and his poore innocent Wife and Children into their commiseration, that he may not continue in forraigne parts that little fortune which was left him by his Father, and to which he hath made so small and inconsiderable an addition, that he and they must perish, if he continue to languish in exile out of his owne Country. And further, most humbly desireth, that this honourable House would be a meanes, that he may have an abolition and pardon for whatsoever is past, and permission to returne in safety into England, to passe that little time which remaineth of his life privately in peace, and in the Church of England, whereof he will in life and death continue a true Member, and in which he desireth to bestow the rest of his time in devotion for the prosperity thereof, for the good of the State and for happinesse to attend the Councils, and resolutions of this honourable House.

This Petition being sent into England and here approved, was sent inclosed in a letter from Mr. Tho. Windebanke to Master Basely, to be presented to the House, when ever they should fall on his businesse; of which his Secretary Read writ over his opinion in this confident manner to Master Tho. Windebanke.

S I R, &c.

Being confident that there is no man in England but will be satisfied in his conscience that nine months banishment and the losse of the Secretaries place, is a farre greater punishment then any thing my Uncle has done can deserve, considering all has been done upon command.

NOTE.

Sir, your, &c.

Paris. 16. Aug. 2641.

Ro. Read.

This Petition (it seems) was not presented, whereupon Master Read writ thus to Master Tho. Windebanke.

S

S I R,

S I R,

NOTE.

Since this opportunity of setting our businesse on foot is elapsed, there is no more to be done, but to hope that it will not be called upon till the Kings returne; in the meantime it is a great comfort to my Uncle to see the continuance of his Majesties favour toward him, &c.

Sir Yours, &c.

Paris 23. Aug. 1641

Ro. Read.

After this, Secretary *Windebanks* Lady and his Sonne arrived in France and lived in Paris, but his Sonne returning shortly after from thence to Court, he writ thus to him, concerning the English Fugitives, not Parliament proofe here, and the generall favour there indulged to him.

NOTE.

TO M, &c. Since your departure hence the Cardinall hath been moved by Monsieur de Seneterre, at the solicitation of Master Foster, that The English now here, and fled hither to avoid the Storme in England, might be freed from that law of confiscation of their Estates, in case they come to dye here, which we and other strangers are liable unto here, and hath left it to those of the Nation, to settle by what meanes themselves shall thinke best, assuring that the King shall grant it in any ample manner, and withall the advantageous and firme conditions that can be desired: This is a very great priviledge to the Nation, and hath been granted with so much cheerfulness and expression of resentment of our condution, that I wish her Majesty will be pleased in those letters which shee will vouchsafe to honour me to the King her Brother, to take notice of it, and to acknowledge it; and if her Majesty shall likewise please in a word or two to Monsieur de Seneterre to give him thanks for his readiness in it, and to honour me with the Commission of delivering it, I shall hold it a very great favour, and it will be a powerfull motive to him to continue his good Offices to the Nation, which I assure you are very much to be valued, considering his interest in the Cardinall. What else her Majesty shall please to adde to him concerning my selfe, I most humbly submit to her wisdom, and goodness: If you shall have delivered my letters to her Majesty before these come to your hands, you may take some occasion to wait upon her Majesty againe, and with presentation of my most humble services, to acquaint her Majesty herewith.

NOTE.

Paris 8. November
1641.

YOURS, &c.

Francis WIndebanke.

NOTE.

TO M, &c. Before his departure, I made meanes to Monsieur de Charvigny (for Monsieur Seneterre is not yet returned) to be presented to the King, and to deliver her Majesties letters; he seemed to entertaine the motion with extraordinary readiness and desire to serve the Queen, and to doe me that honour, &c. But I doe make account to take some time to wait upon the Queen here at Saint Germanes and deliver the letter into her owne hands: This you may make knowne to her Majesty there, when occasion shall be presented.

Paris 31. January
1642.

YOURS, &c.

FRAN. WINDEBANKE.

Many such passages I find in Secretary *Windebanks* and Reads letters to his Sonne at Court, (over-tedious to recite) conveyed hither for the most part under the Earle of Leicesters and Burlamashies cover, and some others; but by these forementioned, you may discern what favour and respect this Secretary hath found both abroad and at home for his releasing protecting Priests, Jesuits, Papists, and by whose commands he justifies he did it, who have bin very indulgent to him for it. If these Letters under his owne hand may be credited: And thus much for the releasing onely of Priests and Jesuits, charged in Parliament on this Secretary; whose correspondence with Rome and the Popes Nuncios you shall heare of farther ere long.

How

discovering the Practises used to Usurp Popery into our Realme. 197

How many letters of grace were granted to the most noted Recusants to stay all prosecutions and proceedings against them before and after their Inditeiments, you may read in my *Royall Popish Favourite*, where many of them are recorded, and in Master Glins report 1 Dec. 1640. in the Commons Journall, who reported to the Commons House from the Committee concerning Secretary Windedanke, that there were 64 Letters of grace to stay prosecution against Papists, directed to severall Officers and Judges, short entries whereof were made in the Signet-Office, and that his house was the place of refuge for Priests and Jesuits: Many of these letters of grace and discharges of Priests were gained upon petitions to the King or Queene, presented to them by this Secretary, in whose Trunks they have since been found. Among others, I find a petition of the Lord Viscount Mountgarret (now one of the principal Rebels in Ireland) and of his Ladies, with a draught of a letter of grace inclosed therein for the discharge of all proceedings against them upon an inditement for Recusancy, found against them both at Coventry, with other petitions of Recusants; as namely, of Master Richard Foster, Master Tuckwell and others, for the abatement of their compositions made with the King for Recusancy in the North, where the compositions of the Lord Viscount Dunbart, Master Anthony Merscliffe and William Green had formerly been abated; Besides those Recusants who compounded at low rates in the North (as you have seen) got them abated lower afterwards, and obtained speciall protections from the Commissioners against all future prosecutions, of which I shall give you but one present at large, in the case of Sir Henry Merry.

G. O. M. DERBY,

WHERCAS Sir Henry Merry of Barton in the Countrey of Derby Knight, being a convicted Recusant, hath personally appeared before his Majesties Commissioners, authorized to compound for the forfeitures of the lands and goods of Recusants, convicted within this and other Counties; at the Mannour of Saint Mary, neare the walls of Yorke, the 15. day of August instant, and hath made composition for an annuall rent, to be paid unto his Majesty for all his Mannours, Lands, Tenements, and Hereditaments, with the appurtenances within the severall Counties of Derby and Leicesters, and for all arrerages due for the same; and therefore by his Majesties instructions is no further to be disquieted or troubled with vexatious informations upon any lawes made against Recusants for his Recusancy onely, so long as he shall duly pay unto his Majesty the rent so compounded for; therefore his Majesties said Commissioners by force of the said composition aforesaid, doe hereby require you to take notice of the composition aforesaid, and of his Majesties pleasure in that behalfe.

Dated at the Mannour aforesaid, the said 15. day of August 1632.

To the Sheriffs of the Countrey of Derby and Leicesters, and to his Majesties Commissioners of inquiry of lands and goods of Recusants convicted within these Counties &c. to all other his Majesties Officers and Ministers whom the premises may concerne, and to every of them.

per Warrant Commissioner.

Cha. Radcliffe Clericus Commiss.

For staying proceedings upon inditeiments, I shall give you but two or three instances here (omitted in my *Popish Royall Favourite*) to wit, the Lord chiefe Justice Richardsons Warrant to the Clerk of the Crown in the Kings-Bench, for stay of an Inditement against the Lady Parkins, and John Gibbons, for sending her Daughter beyond sea to be a Nunne, the Copy whereof was sent to Windebanke, who procured it.

Mr. Fanshawe and Mr. Keeling.

ACcording to his Majesties gracious command to me, signified by Master Secretary **N O T E.** Windedanke, that no further proceedings shall be had upon an inditement against Dame Mary Parkins and John Gibbons, in Michaelmas Terme last, for sending or carrying Mistresse Penelope Parkins, the said Dame Mary Parkins Daughter beyond seas to be a Nunne, contrary to the Statute. These are to will and require you to make the Roll of the Record thereof, and to enter a Cesset processus thereupon, that no

further proceedings be had upon the said Inditement accordingly, for which this shall be your warrant, and so I rest
Your loving friend.

From *Sergeants-Inne* this 13. of May

Thomas Richardson.

To this I shall adde the same chiefe Justice his letter to *Secretary Windbanks.* concerning his staying of Proceffe against one *Lover.*

May it please your Honour;

NOTE.

IT is most true that the businesse concerning *Lover* was recommended to my care, I have done therein whatsoever was in my power to performe and there hath not been wanting in me the left duty to either of their Majesties commands; but he being indited of felony for receiving and harbouring of a Priest (and the Priest himselfe) of treason in the same inditement; I cannot discharge him thereof but in a legall way, which is, either by exception to the inditement for insufficiency, or by a legall tryall, or by his Majesties gracious pardon; that which was in my power (being onely to stay Proceffe and proceedings) I have done, and all his goods which were seized and taken from him, I have long since caused to be restored unto him againe, but nothing will please him, unless he may be actually freed and discharged of the inditement, which is not in my power to doe; I have directed him the best course I can, but he will take no way but his owne, and that is to overthrow his inditement by exception to the sufficiency of it in poynt of law; to which end he hath moved me to have a copy of it, which I have been willing and ready with all my heart to grant him, but I could not do it without the consent of master Attorney Generall it being in a cause neerly concerning the King for felony and treason; I mooved master Attorney Generall for him in his owne presence, who wished him to attend him at his Chamber, but whether he hath done so or no, I know not, for he never comes at me, but as it seems, deales maliciously with me under hand, I being as desirous to doe him all the good I honestly and justly may, as ever I was to doe any man in my life; for besides my humble duty and service to both their Majesties, he is a man for some reasons I doe particularly love and affect. This is all that I can write, and therefore with most humble thanks to your Honour for your favour, which I shall never cease to acknowledge, and with remembrance of my most humble duty and service, I humbly take my leave and rest

NOTE.

Your Honours most humble and faithfull

Servant to becommended

Bathing 30. May 1634.

Thomas Richardson.

Brownlow,

Mich. xliij. Caroli Regis.

*Farrington ques-
tion. &c. versus
Ant. Inglesfield
Ar.*

*Ordinat. est per Cur. quatuordecim die Octobris quod cesset om-
nis prosecutio inter dictas partes super omnibus informationibus &
ad omnes debiti quibuscumque concernentibus Recusantiam ip-
sus Ant. per. Cur.*

* See the Bre-
viat of life,
p. 18.

This yeere we began to have more intimate publike correspondency and trading with *Rome* then formerly, and on Aug. 7. Bishop *Land* being nominated Archbishop of *Canterbury* by the King, upon the death of Dr. *George Abbot*, had a serious offer made to him by one who avowed ability to performe it (and therefore doubtlesse a speciall Agent from the Pope) to be A C A R D I N A L L, and a second serious offer of this dignity. August 17. as appears by his own (a) *Diary*. About which time Master *Walker* *Abbot* under pretence of some disgust taken at Court, departed hence privately into *France*, and from thence towards *Rome*; by the way he professed himselfe a Papist, and let fall some words, that his designe was for *Rome*, to reconcile us to it upon the best and fairest termes: As soone as he entred *Italy*, he was most honourably entertained, presented, feasted, and brought on his way towards *Rome* in very great state and solemnity by all the Italian Princes & States neer whom he passed; and arriving at *Rome*, was there magnificently received by the Pope and his Cardinals, with whom he had private conferences sundry houres together, taking place of all the English then in *Rome*, as a kind of extraordinary Ambassadour sent from hence; he was daily courted, visited,

visited, feasted with much respect by the Pope and Cardinals, and having dispatched his negotiation there, he was sent for thence to the Court, under pretence of being *Proc. chamberlin* to the Queen, which place was then voyd by death; but soon after he went into France and there entred into a Monastery for a time (as did then Sir *Konelm Digby*) to make himself more capable of a Cardinals Cap; of which it was then voyced he had a promise. The Pope upon his Negotiation at Rome, Oct. 10. 1634. sent over a special Nuncio into England, called *Signior Gregorio Panzani*, to labour a reduction of us to the vassalage of the Church of Rome, who (b) arrived here at London Dec. 25. 1634. He *first* visited the Queen after that the King, who received and treated him with much kindness, telling him that he was very welcome, his Majesty remaining uncovered during all the discourse and entertainment; he was entertained, treated with, under the Notion of a Nuncio, residing in and about London, he had frequent access to the Court and great persons, to seduce and worke them to his ends; how farre he proceeded in this designe you may read in the late printed Books intitled, *The Popes Nuncio*, and *The English Pope*; what recomse he had to Secretary *Windbank*, and what favours he obtained from him in behalfe of the Roman Catholics, will best appear by his owne gratulatory letter sent to this Secretary from Rome, after his departure hence, the originall whereof written by the Nuncio himselfe in Italian (thus indorted with *Windbank*'s owne hand, 31. May 1637. *Seignior Gregorio Panzani* from Rome, rec. 22 June, our stile.) I found among his papers, and have here faithfully exhibited to publike view in English as worthy to be known as it was afterwards englished and given in evidence upon Oath at the Archbishops triall.

Most excellent Sir, Patron most honoured.

I Would have retained my selfe from writing to your most illustrious Lordship, for feare of being to you some impediment, I knowing your many occupations; but I having heard from many persons, and in particular by letters of *Seignior Francisco*, sometimes my Secretary, the honourable mention that otherwhiles your most illustrious Lordship is wont to make of my person; and having also oftentimes understood from the most famous *Seignior Cavaliere Hamilton*, and from Father John the *Benedictin*, how much your most illustrious Lordship straineth himself in favouring of me, I have been forced to commit this rude civility, taking in hand my pen to give you trouble; I assure your most famous Lordship that I live so much obliged unto you, that I shall never be able to pretend to satisfie to one and the least particle of that which I owe, seeing that during my abode in London, most rare were those dayes, in which I did not receive from your most illustrious Lordship some grace in the behalfe and favour of the poore Catholics.. I must also congratulate my selfe with your most famous Lordship, concerning the most noble manners and behaviours of your Lordships Sonnes, he which with their singular modesty, and other most laudable vertues have gained such an opinion, amongst them that have knowne them in this Court, that I could never be able to express it, and the Lord Cardinal Barberino in particular cannot but famate himselfe in praising them. It grieves me not to have had the fortune to meet with them in this City because willingly I would have attested my devotion towards your most famous Lordship; to the which, and to all your most illustrious family, I rest, desiring eternall felicity from Heaven. In the meane while, I humbly entreat you to favour me with some commandement, and I kisse your hands.

From Rome the 31.

Your most illustrious Lordships most devout

of May 1637.

and most obliged Servant, *Greg. Panzani*.

By this letter you may discern what intimacy *Windbank* had with, and what daily favours he borrowed upon this Nuncio during his abode in London, what curtesies he did for the papists here, what correspondency he kept with Romanists abroad, and what entertainment respect his sonnes then received in the Popes Court from his Creatures for his sake; of which more in due place.

Among the Arch bishop of *Canterbury* his papers, I found the copy of a letter said to be written to the Pope, thus indorsed with his owne hand:

Rece. Octob. 15. 1635. A copy of the letter which is reported King *Charles* did write to Pope *Urban* the eighth, about the restitution of the Duke of *Lorraine*.

Rac

As the Book
entitled *The
Popes Nuncio*,
was by the
Venerable
Archbishop, re-
cited p. 7.

NOTE.

NOTE.

NOTE.

Rex magna Britannia, &c. Sanctitati suae Urbano octavo salutem, &c. Anno 1634.

Maxime Pontifex;

Domus Lotharingia. Olim, & modo Principum Regumque mater vinculatrahbit dara, ut in captivitate ducitur, orbe spectante & dolente: Sanguis mihi (optime Pontifex) in venis salis, quem a domo Lotharingia hauri, pulsantque mihi violentes motus precordia, dum consanguineos meos Duces, patria sedibus spoliatos intueor, & hostili graviter passos; sanguis cum in Nobis idem sit, & etiam amor, distraher tamen afflicti huius cognati Lotharingia oppressi jacent, inde frater meus triumphator, sed ut eorum calamitates violenta manu, fovcam necesse est ut hunc vulnere: Itaque pressus utrinque amore, cogor ad mediations aliorum Principum confugere, ut amicitiam inter hos mihi caros conciliem, bella amore extinguens, non aliter sane extinguenda nisi fada sanguinis Christi effusione. Ad te ergo (Urbane Pontifex quem omni humanitatis cultu, ut optime Principum existimavi, revertor; cum hi Principes potestatem tuam procullo agna de e videntur, soves, & Pastorem suum; impera igitur (Sanctitatem suam ut exister) hisce tuis Filijs, Paris ut suam vocem audientes, armis sepositis pacem inter se faciant, exieris; Principibus auctoritatem tuam agnoscantibus obedientiam obtemperare Deponatur, te sedente, quodcumque inter illos violentum, sedaque redi. ut heredes sua cognati Duces, ceterique Lotharingia domus Principes reponantur in auras sedis. Hoc incumbis tua in illos monita. Curabit proculdubio paterna manus filiorum suorum vulnera, predicabitque Christianus orbis ab Urbano Pontifice Romano domum Lotharingiam ex qua fere omnes Christiani Principes flori donari, prestina & exornati sunt. Tot vero inter Reges & Principes, qui hanc Christianissimam domum nostram agnoscunt, Ego Urbano principi optimo, una cum illis gratias immortales ago, quodque huic domus Parenti mea a Sanctitate sua, prestabitur, tanquam mihi met meique totius praeitum, grato animo agnoscam. Etenim satendum est, nihil mihi contigisse gratius quam optima illius domus mihi conjunctissima contemplari ruinam.

This letter perchance was but a civill complement, for a civill end.

About this time Secretary Windobanks (as I conceive) or some other great person, desired to be resolved from Rome of the Popes good affection to the King, which some here mentioned: to which he received this answer thence in Italian (found among Windobanks papers) and it seems to be written by Cardinall Barberino, with whom the Secretary held intelligence.

NOTE

The Queen of Denmark, died in England who lived and dyed a Papist.

Concerning the demand made to your Lordship, if the Pope loveth the King? I answer, That his Holiness loves his Majesty better then any thing in this world: better then any Nephew, then all my whole Family, and better then any whatsoever thing or Family belonging to his Beatitude, or any Potentate that is: And this is a love not enely proceeding from a Sovereigne Bishop, but proper to his Holiness; A good counter-signe or testimony hereof your Lordship may see, in these few verses made by his Holiness upon the death of the Queen Grand-Mother of this King. I have seen, and shall see oftentimes testimonies, to wit, the teares which his Holiness many times hath shed for the redemption of his person to our holy Religion, the which our Lord sheddeth every time that I relate unto him, what your Lordship writes to me.

Vpon this forenamed intercourse with Rome by mutuall Agents, they began at Rome to have very good opinion of our favourable inclinations towards them; as may appeare by these passages written from Venice by Master William Middleton (Chaplain to the Lord Fielding then English Ambassadour there) to Doctor Laud Archbishop of Canterbury, in whose Study the originall was seized.

Right Honourable and most Reverend, &c.

WHiles I was writing, there came a franciscan Fryar to my selfe, his businesse was this: A mind, he told me he had to leave these parts, and with them the Religion he renusd; that I should doe him a great favour would I procure him a passage for England either by sea or by land, &c. I fell to question him, whether, and when he had been at Rome? he told me, in June and July last past; I asked him how the affaires went there? he told me, Their opinion of us was, that his sacred Majesty was favoura-

NOTE.

ble

ble to the Catholiques, that SOME GREAT ONES ABOUT HIM, were so so, or IN HEART MORE; (a) ONE he names, concerning whom as at home, so abroad (as of old of the best of men) there was much murmuring among the people; for some said he was a good man, others said nay, he deceiveth the people, &c. There is, as I am informed by a discreet Gentleman at Florence, a Jesuit lately returned from England to Rome, who pretends to have made a strict discovery of the state of England as it stands for Religion: how King is disposed how Queens, what Lords are of the Puritan faction, what not; but by name, his honour of Dorset and Pembroke are strong for Precisians. He says that the Puritans are shrewd fellows, but those which are counted good Protestants are faire conditioned, honest men, and think they may be saved in any Religion; I am promised the relation written; if it come to my hands, and there be any thing in it worthy your Graces view, I shall hereafter humbly present it to you, as now my selfe,

NOTE.

Your Graces most humble
and most obedient Servant
William Middelton.

The letter is thus indorsed with Master Dels hand; Recepi. Octob. 9. 1635.

Soone after this I find a paper of intelligence written to Secretary Windbanks from Rome the 29. of December 1635. wherein there is this passage; There is a new Ambassador from England arrived in this Court (Major Bret as I conceive) for whom there was a speciall lodging provided and entertainment at the publike cost.

What his businesse was, but to negotiate a reconciliation I know not; which proceeded so far, that it was generally reported at Rome, we should have an English Cardinal, and it was conceived by some Roman Catholike that the Arch-bishop had a hand in sending Bret to Rome, as is evident by this letter of Master Middleton, from Venice, to the Arch-bishop himselfe informing him hereof.

Right honourable and most reverend &c.

IN Rome there is great talke of an English Cardinal; and the man who is already Roman Catholike must be the man, Mr. Mountague. Your Lordship I know will smile if not at this, yet at that I shall now write. A Catholick discoursing with me let a word fall and this it was; That within this twelve month the Pope did wish, that his sacred Majesty of England were, as once his trusty sonne, for then he would not be used as he is either by French or Spaniard; the same party did not aske the question but only thus, I wonder whether my Lord of Canterbury have any hand in the sending of Serjeant Major Bret to Rome? I answered, because (I saw he was fishing) surely no, because, as you know, it is written he comes from the Queen, and in her name; Rome is very kind to our English Gentlemen; I humbly entreat your Graces pardon, if in a desire to let nothing I heare scape your knowledge, I must lowly offer unto you such things as will make you lose so much time in you shall read the Letter: but though your Lordship lose a little time, let not me, I beseech you, lose that good opinion which I hope you have conceived of

NOTE.

NOTE.

Your Graces most really devoted
and obedient Servant
William Middelton.

In these two letters there are some clauses concerning Franciscus de Sancta Jerva his book, intituled, *Deus, Natura & Gratia*, written purposely & printed in England to reconcile us to Rome, and afterward licensed and printed at Rome it selfe, to this end; though the Jesuits did some of them dislike it, as over-moderate, of which more in its due place.

In the year 1626. Signior Gregorio Panzani the Popes Nuncio in England and Major Bret, our English Agent at Rome, being discharged of their negotiations, Signior Gregorio Con (a Scot) was appointed by the Pope to succeed Panzani as his Nuncio and Sir William Hamilton (a Scot too) sent hence Leger to Rome; what letters, presents, pictures he carried with him from hence and from whom is worthy inquiry. That Windbanks and others were privy to this succession and negotiation, will appeare by this letter of Father Phillips, (the Queens Confessor) to him, the originall whereof found among his papers, is ready to be produced, thus indorsed with Windbanks owne hand 9 June 1626. Father Phillips rec. 10.

Recd.

Right honourable ;

NOTE.

Y^Efter night after your honours departing from Hampton Court, I received this inclosed : the Gentleman whosent it to me from Paris writeth, that Sir William Hamilton departed from thence the 3. of June, that is our 24. of May, so that now he must be nere into Rome : He writeth also, that Seignior Georgio Conco, whom the Pope doth send to the Queen, was to depart from Rome, about the 20. of May; if he have heard of Sir Williams hasty going, it may be he will stay till his arrivall, which I could wish, because he both can and would help him better at the beginning then any other I know ; I rest ever

Your Honours most humble and devout cō servant,

From Hampton-Court the
9. of June 1636.

R. Phillips.

see p. 109.

Page 13, &c.

Sir William Hamilton soone after arrived at Rome as English agent there: where he had special lodgings provided for him, and a pension of 500. l. per annum granted to him in another Hamiltons name, out of the Exchequer here, for his service there. Before this time the Congregation of propagating the Faith at Rome, having good hopes of the conversion and reduction of England to their obedience, constituted Cardinall Barbarino Nephew and Vice Chancellour to the late deceased Pope, Patron and Protector of the English and Scottish Nation, as Cardinall (a) Ludovisus was of the Irish, who to facilitate their designe created a speciall society of foure orders of Jesuits in England, where of the Popes Legat for the time being residing in England was the chief Patron, and Cardinall Barbarino the principall Superintendent, as you may read more at large in my (b) Romes Motion-piece, from one who was privy to the plot, & sent over hither by Cardinall Barbarino to assist Con; this Cardinall held intimate correspondence with Windebanke, as is apparant by the forementioned letter of Parizani, and by these ensuing passages in Matter Thomas VVindebankes letter to him from Rome, wherein he thus expresseth his entertainment at Rome by Sir William Hamilton and this Cardinall, to his Father.

Sir,

NOTE.

M^Y most humble duty remembred, &c. Sir William Hamilton hath been pleased to put so great an obligation upon me as to invite me to his house, for the time that I am in Rome: I would very willingly have avoyded the putting him to such an inconvenience, but he pressed it so farre, that I could not refuse the receiving of that favour; the Cardinall Barbarino, I understand, HATH LONG EXPECTED ME HERE, having had notice of my being in Italy; and I am afraid THAT OUT OF RESPECT TO YOU, he will put some honour upon me, but I will avoid all ingagements as much as with civility I may, &c.

Your most obedient Sonne

Rome the 6. Septemb. stilo novo 1636.

Thomas Windebanke.

The originall letter is thus indorsed, with Secretary Windebankes owne hand, 6 Sept. 1636. Tom. from Rome receiv. 22 our file. Answ. 23. directed to Sir John Beroughs at Parisbone. This Letter was seconded with another, thus endorsed by him, 10. Sept. 1636. Tom. from Rome, rec. 30. Sept. our file.

S I R,

NOTE.

M^Y most humble duty remembred: in my last of the 6. of this present, I have given an account of my arrivall at Rome, and of the favour Sir William Hamilton was pleased to doe me, to invite me to his house; this note, he did it with so much earnestnesse, that I could not avoyd the receiving of the honour. I have beene to visit the Cardinall Barbarino, who having had notice of my arrivall here, sent to visit me first. He is so obliging and courteous to all our Nation, that I the lesse wonder at the honour he doth me, to take notice of me; but I hope his favours will stay there; I see no reason I should thinke otherwise, &c.

Rome the 10 of Sept. stilo novo, 1636.

Your most obedient Sonne,

Tho. VVindebanke.

About

About this time the same yeare an English Friar then residing in Rome, Reader of Divinity in the Covent of *Saint Mary de Aca Cal*, tiling himselfe, *Ludovicus à Sancta Maria*, published certaine Theologicall conclusions in print, to be there publicly disputed, dedicated to *Cardinal Barberino* with his armes in Copper, & a Cardinalls Cap, over them for a crest; and Roman antiques supporting them: on the left hand were the armes of the King of England standing lower then the Cardinalls, supported in like maner, cut in Copper & standing over the conclusions, to which there was this title in Capitals, *Eminentissimo et reverendissimo Principi Francisco Cardinali Barberino, sanctæ Romanæ ecclesiæ Vice-Cancellario, R. R. ANGLIÆ, SCOTIÆ, nec non Seraphicæ Religionis PROTECTORI, VIGILANTISSIMO. Frater Ludovicus à sancta Maria ANGLVS. D. D. D.* Then follows a short dedication of these Conclusions to him, which begins thus, *MAGNÆ BRITANIÆ PATRONO MAXIMO, et Britanicæ Nationis, & Minorum Familia minimus, Theologiam devovet suam, &c. CONCLUSIONES THEOLOGICÆ, &c. ROMÆ, ex Typographia Ludovici Grignani, 1636. Superiorum permissu.* By which glorious printed paper it is evident, that they were now so bold with us at Rome, as to proclaime this Cardinall; The greatest Patron and most vigilant Protector of the English and Scottish Nation, and Realme of England, and to place his Armes above the Kings. This Frier, whose right name was Kerton, alias Morton, soon after this came over into England, where notwithstanding his vowed chastity, he was so excessively given to the flesh, defiling not only Maids, but married Woemen, that he was enforced to leave the Realme, as appeares by this Minute of Instructions, written with *Secretarie Windebankes owne hand*, for his Son *Mr. Tho. Windebanke* when he went into France to negotiate the *Palgraves* enlargement.

To specifie, that *Master Kerton*, here called *Morton*, in his order called *Ludovicus à sancta Maria*, did live so most wickedly in England since his being Priest, in drawing married Women and others to sinne carnally, and committed such horrible Acts in prosecuting his lust, that if he commeth hither againe, he will assuredly be publickly punished according to the Lawes, to the great scandall of his Religion; therefore let them be told there that they prevent his returne. If you heare Father Francis his Booke or person touched, let them know, that we understand assuredly, that it proceedeth from the Jesuites, who imploy others in it, as they did against *Father Leander*. till it cost him his life; and if that upon their Informations, they proceed against such persons who though in all things Catholique, yet are more discrete and temperat, and not intermeddling with matters of State, THAT THE KING WILL BE MUCH OFFENDED. Write to Mr. Secretary Cook: any thing that is good, except the most secret Passages.

By this Minute of Instructions, you may clearly discern, not only the Leudnes of this Leacherous Fryer, but that this Secretary held correspondency with those of his order in foraign parts, advising them not to permit him to come over againe into England, to prevent punishment and scandall to their Religion: That he was a great Patriot of *Franciscus à Sancta Clara* his Booke (writ purposely to reconcile us to Rome) and that the Jesuites prosecution of him for it, would be very displeasing to himselfe and the King to, and to informe the Roman party so much at Paris.

But to returne to Rome, *Mr. Thomas Windebanke* at his being there received a Trunke with sundry things in it sent from Cardinall Barberino to Con, the Popes Nuntio, which must be conveyed to Secretary Windebankes Agent *Richant*, to avoyd search, the truth whereof is manifest by his Sons owne Letter thus endorsed by him: 26. March, 1637. Tom from Padua, Re. 8. Aprill our stile.

SIR.
I Gave advise in some of my former of a Trunke I sent from *Livorno* into England unto Mr. *Richant* to be delivered unto you, but have not as yet received any Newes of the arrivall of it: I sent not the Keyes, as not desirous it should be opened untill my comming home, because few of the things in it are mine, but the CARDINALL

T

Barberines

NOTE.

BARBERINES TO MASTER CON : he told me there was no halt in the delivery of them so that I might doe it my selfe, &c.

Your most obedient Sonne,
Thomas Windebanke.

Padua the 26. March,
Stilo no. 1637.

* See Romes
Master-peece.
pag. 16.

IN June following this Cardinall sent a statue from Rome into England for this Secretarie or some * greater persons use; of which the Lord Scudamoore then Leger Embassador at Paris gave him this advertisement in a Letter written with his owne hand, (endorsed with Windebankes, when received.)

'Right Honourable here is come to Paris one Mr. Chambers with the statue from Cardinall Barberine, another, the servant of him that made the Statue comming along in company to take it forth, but no where upon any termes till it be in England: upon Munday next, Mr. Chambers purposeth to set forward for Deep.

Your Honours to Command
1. Scudamoore.

Paris June 16. 1637.

Note.

In Aprill 1639. Another of Secretary Windebankes sonnes being at Rome, writ thus from thence in an Italian Letter to him, (manifesting what respect and correspondency he had there among the Roman Catholikes :) Most deare Fathe, I salute you, &c. Especially not being in any place my selfe, where I am not looked upon by all those that professe themselves SERVANTS, of your most Illustrious Honour: HERE IN ROME your most illustrious Lordship hath many, amongst the which, Sir Will. Hamilton, Signior Gregoria Panzani, (the Popes first Nuncio in England) and Father John (agent for the English Bernedictines) kisse yor hands, &c.
From Rome the 15. th. of Aprill: 1639.

Your most observant Son.
Christopher Windebanke.

By all these Passages and Letters it is very evident, what Intelligence this Secretary held with the Catholike party in Rome, what respect he and his received from them, and what a freind he was to their agents and friends here.

Note.

On the first of Jun. 1637. one M. Foster a Papist, delivered this Secretary, A discourse concerning the Impediments of the peace of Christendome, together with the remedies; (endorsed with Windebankes own hand.) wherein there is this passage among other, manifesting an endeavour of reconciliation betweene Papists and Protestants by their comming over to the Popish Tenents. The 4th. Impediment is, that without an union in Religion, no stable or certain Peace amongst Christian Princes can be established: for that more occasion will be given for the house of Austrea, either to advance or defend the Catholike Religion, &c. Neither is this impediment without GOOD HOPE TO BE TAKEN AWAY: because now none but the confused Rabble of Anabaptists, and Brownists, and some small Troopes of Separatists, with a few Calvenists, and rigid Lutherans do insist upon the Doctrine, of Justification by faith only, (whereupon hath depended the principle controversie between the Catholiks and Protestants:) It will therefore be more easily removed, if learned men who have moderat spirits shall be employed in the great businessse, concerning the procuring of an happy unity of Faith and Religion in our Westerne Churches.

Note.

About this season Richard Mountagne Bish. of Chichester, (a great confident of the Arch-Bishops, intimate with Panzani the Popes Legate, and one who very passionately desired a reconciliation with the Church of ROME) who first disturbed the peace

peace of our Church with his Popish and Arminian Tenents, for which he was questioned, and his Bookes called in and censured by the Parliament, though afterwards advanced to a Bishoppricke (for a Passe for his Sonne to travell to Rome) extant under his hand and Seale.

Right Honourable.

MY humble service premised, I make bould to trouble your Honour in a Mediation for a small matter, I suppose, to his Majelty, It is that he would be pleased to grant my Son leave to go see Rome in his Travill, which he is desirous to do, and I am desirous he should; It is a clause restrained in his License, I thinke of ordinary course, howsoever I humbly desire your Honours favour therein, I do not use my Lo. Grace because he meddles not that way, and especially, because his good friends and mine would give it out, that we had sent my son to Rome to be a Priest or Jesuit; but if you please to acquaint him therewith and remember my duty to his Grace, I shall thanke you, and ever rest at your Honours service.

Aldingborne, January 26.

Your poore Beadisman, R.C.

To which, for explanation sake, I shall subjoyne a passage out of the Letter of Godfrey Goodman, Bishop of Glocester, written to Canterbury in the Tower, concerning his dissent from the new Canons Aug. 30 1642. the original whereof is in my hands.

Most Reverend, &c. Bishop Mountague of Norwich did privately encourage me to dissent (though I confesse I was little moved with his words, for I never had an opinion of that man) yet in publike to please Your Grace, he pressed my deprivation, falsly quoting some Councells (God forgive him as I doe) At that instant I could have proved, How that in His Person He did Visit and held correspondency with the Popes Agent, and received his Letters in behalfe of his sonne who was then travelling to Rome, and by his Letters he had extraordinary entertainment there. This Bishop Mountague would ascribe to the fame and credit which he had gotten by his writings, which in truth I thinke are not worth the Reading, &c. Loe here one Bishop impeaching another, for holding correspondency with the Popes Agent, with whom in verity both these Popish Bishops and many others held strict Intelligence.

But to returne to the Popes 2d. Nuncio, Con, and his proceedings here. Vpon his arrivall in England, (if we believe his Companion and assistant in a discovery made to the Archbishop and King Himselfe, even out of Conscience, which you may reade at large in my * Romes Master-peece) he was entertained and ferled at London by the Popes and Cardinall Barberinos mediation; as a Nuncio; that so he might the more easily and safely worke both upon the King and Kingdome. Where first he sets upon the chiefe men at Court, leaving nothing unattempted to corrupt and incline them all to the Roman party; he attempted (writes he) to seduce the King himself with Pictures, Antiquities, Images & other vanities brought from Rome, entring into familiarity with his Majesty, who oft requested him at London, & Hampton-court to mediate the restitution of the Palgrave to the Palatinate; which he promised in words, but advised the contrary, lest the Pope should seeme to patronize an Hereticall Prince: Hee was very intimate with Sir Toby Matthew, Captaine Reade, the Countesse of Arundell, Endymion Porter, and his Wife, but especially with Secretary Windebanke, who revealed all the Kings secrets to him, communicated Councells to and with him, the better to advance his designs, meeting with him at Night-conventicles, at least thrice every weeke; for which end he tooke an house neere to his lodging, to which he frequently resorted through a Garden doore. Besides this Nuncios with his confederates at Court & conjured society of Jesuites in London, held constant weekly meetings, Councells at Capt. Reeds House in Long-Acre & elsewhere; sent and received weekly intelligences, dispatches to, and from Rome; and proceeded so farre, as to Erect a Colledge of Jesuites in Queene-street, which they purchased.

chased, and a *Nunnery* in the Lord Gages house there, who was General of the Jesuites, and another *Nunnery* at *Greenwich*; he erected, established a Popish Hierarchy throughout the Realme of *England*, having *Officials*, *Vicars-Generall*, *Provincials*, *Arch-Deacons*, &c. in every County almost, as there you may reade at large, and in the *Popes Briefe*, lately published by speciall order of Parliament. Hee had Commission to profer a Cardinals Cap to the *Archbishop*, and fed others, with hopes and promises of vacant *Cardinals Hats* and other Dignities, to make them more industriously zealous to drive on his designs. By the *Archbishop* of *Canterburie* the *Nuncios* and these *Jesuites* meanes the *Scotish Troubles*, Warres were first raised, and revived againe, when pacified without bloudshed.

What influence the *Popes Nuncio*, *Jesuites*, *Priests*, *Papists*, in and about *London* had in the raising, fomenting, maintaining, driving on the *Scotish differences*, and Warres, you may reade at large in *Rimes Master-peece*, and the *Popish Royall Favourite*, to which for brevity I refer you, and shall add some new evidences of it in due place: What an *Arch-Stickler* and *Incendiary* the *Arch-bishop* was therein, what methods, instruments, policies & counsell he used to foment and promote the same you may reade in the *Articles* exhibited against him in Parliament by the *Scotish Commissioners*, and I shall here give you a summary account thereof out of such Authentick Letters, Papers, which Gods providence hath brought unto my hands.

The *Arch-Bishop* of *Canterbury* having made a very large successfull progresse in the introduction, advance of many *Popish Doctrines*, *Superstitions*, *Ceremonies*, *Innovations* in our Church of *Engl.* by sundry secret policies and open violent persecutions (reserved for their proper place, and therefore omitted in this *Introduction* to his tryall,) had a designe to introduce the same, not onely into *Ireland*, where he was *Dominus fac totum*, whiles he was *Bishop* of *London*, having the *Lord Deputie*, *Councell*, *Bishops*, and *Clergie* there at his owne becke, and devotion (as appeares by sundry Letters thence;) but likewise into the Church of *Scotland*, where the *Bishops* and *Court-Clergie* were exceeding prone, but the other *Ministers* and people very averse to entertain them. Whereupon he was no sooner warme in his *Arch-bishoprick*, but he begins to set on foote his designs upon the Church of *Scotland*, to which end he first practised to bring certain new orders, & Ceremonies into his Majesties Chappell there, to make that the only patterne by degrees to which all other Churches there should conforme, as he made the * *Kings Chapell* here in *Engl.* the only rule, and Canon which all *Cathedralls*, *Chapells*, and parish Churches were to bee regulated by. To this end the drawes up certaine *Articles* concerning his Majesties Chapell in *Scotland*, with a Letter to command Obedience to them: A Copie whereof, I found in his study thus indorsed with his owne hand.

* See the Cole from the Altar, and Order of Councell Table concerning Saint Gregories.

October 8. 1633. His Majesties Articles concerning His Chappell in Scotland. And his Letter to Command Obedience.

Charles R.

Our expresse Will and pleasure is, That the Deane of Our Chappell that now is, and his Successors shall bee assistant to the Right Reverend Father in God, the *Arch-bishop* of *Saint Andrewes*, at the Coronation, so often as it shall happen.

That the Booke of the forme of Our Coronation lately used, be put in a little Box, and layd into a Standard, and committed to the care of the Deane of the Chappell successively.

That there be prayers twice a day with the Quire as well in Our absence as otherwise, according to the *English Lyrurgie*, till some course bee taken for making one that may fit the customes and constitutions of that Church.

That the Deane of the Chappell looke carefully, that all that receive the blessed Sacrament there, receive it kneeling, and that there be a Communion held in that Our Chappell the first Sunday of every moneth.

That

That the Deane of Our Chappell that now is and so successively come duly thither to prayers upon Sundayes, and such Holy Dayes as that Church observes, in his whites, and preach so, when ever he preacheth there. And that he bee not absent from thence, but upon necessary occasion of his Diocesse, or otherwise, according to the course of his preferment.

That these orders shall be Our warrant to the Deane of Our Chappell, that the Lords of our Privie Councell, the Lords of the Session, the Advocate, Clarkes, Writers to the Signett and Members of Our Colledge of Justice, bee Commanded to receive the holy Communion once every yeare, at the least in that Our Chappell Royall, and kneeling, for example sake to the Kingdome, And we likewise command the Deane aforesaid to make report yearly to us, how we are obeyed therein, and by whom, as also if any man shall refuse, in what manner he doth so and why.

That the Copes which are * consecrated to Our use, be delivered to the Deane to be kept *Note.* upon Inventory by him, and in a Standard provided for that purpose, and to be used at the Celebration of the Sacrament in Our Chappell Royall.

To these Orders we shall here after adde others, if we find others more necessary for the regulating of the Service of God there: At *White-Hall* the eight day *Note.* of October 1633. Sic subscribitur.

STERLING.

Supercribed by His Majestie.

Charles R.

Reverend Father in God, trusty and well beloved Councellour, Wee Greet you well, wee have thought good; for better ordering of Divine Service, to bee performed in Our Chappell Royall there, to set down some Articles under our own hand to be observed therein, which wee send you here inclosed, And it is Our speciall pleasure that you see every thing carefully performed, according as wee have directed, by these our inclosed Articles, And likewise that you certifie, to the Lords of Our privie Councell, If any of those appointed by Our former Letters to them to Communicate in Our Chappell Royall, shall not accordingly performe the same, to the effect such order may be taken by our Councell therein, as by our said former Letters to them, we did appoint, wherein expecting your diligence and care, We bid you Farewell, From Our Court at *White-Hall*, the 8th day of *Octo.* 1633.

To set on this designe the better, the Archbishop procured this warrant from the King to himselfe (written with his own Secretaries hand Master *Dell*, and I doubt not but procured since the *Scottish* troubles to helpe him at a dead lift, if questioned) to hold correspondency with the Bishop of *Dunblane* in *Scotland*: he had caused the King to signe the former instructions for his Chapell there, and now he will be sure *ex post facto*, to get a warrant for it though dated foure dayes after them.

Charles R.

Canterbury, I require you to hold a correspondency with the Bishop of *Dunblane*, the present Deane of Our Chappell Royall in *Edenburgh*, that so from time to time, he may receive Our Directions by you for the ordering of such things as concerne Our service in the said Chappell.

October 12. 1633.

After this the Arch-Bishop writ diverse Letters to Bishop *Balentine* to promote this designe of his: as namely one dated, *Jan.* 13. 1633. To let His Majesty receive a Note who those be that confermed, and who not, for I see His Majesty is resolved to goe on constantly. Another *May* 6. 1633. informing him of his missing the Bishopricke of *Edenburgh* for his omission of prayers in the Chapell according to the *English* Liturgy, &c and exhorting him to be carefull, for the future. Another in *July* 1634. wherein he tells this Bishop, that his excuse for not reading prayers (as aforesaid) was not satisfacto-

ry; to wit, that the singing men could not come for debt for that the prayers might have beene read by his Lordships Chaplaine: That he did well to acquaint the Lords with His Majesties resolution concerning the Communion there. Another Octo. 4. 1634. To like purpose, and concerning the payment of the Singing mens wages. Another Jan. 12. 1634. Giving him thanks for his Resolution about ordering the Kings Chappell, and wearing his Whites, &c. and promising to speake to my Lord Traquair, about Edward Helly. Another Febr. 28. 1634. Containing, Thanks from the King for the solemnity of the late Communion, and expressing his hopes, that the other Bishops were in their Whites as well as he, that the envy of the vulgar might not fall only on him. That he had shewed His Majesty the paper of those of the Session as did not conforme at the Communion. That he had done what he could for the Gentlemen of the Chappell, but the times required patience, &c.

On the 28. of Septemb. 1634. The Arch-Bishop caused the King to signe a common prayer Booke, for the use of the Church of Scotland; and gave order to the Bishops of Scotland, to compile certaine Canons for the Government of the Church of Scotland, which Lyturgie and Canons were to be imposed on that Church by Regall and Episcopall Authority, without consent of Parliament, or of a generall Assembly; the Bishops of Scotland, not long after, gave him a particular account of their proceedings herein (with thanks for his many favours to them and assistance of them) in this ensuing Letter, thus endorsed with his owne hand.

Recep. Aprill 12. 1635.

From my Lord of Saint Andrewes, and other Bishops about the Scottish Liturgie and CANONS.

May it please Your Grace;

WE have put our Brother the Bishop of Rosse to the paines of a wet journey for ayding the Lyturgie, and Canons of the Church, and as we have found Your Graces favour, both to our Church in Generall, and our selves in divers particulars, for which we are Your Graces debtors, so we are to entreate the continuance thereof in this, and our common affaires. We all wish a full conformity in the Churches; but Your Grace knoweth, that this must be the worke of time. We have made, blessed bee God, a further progresse, then all have here expected in many yeares, by His Majesties favour, and Your Graces helpe: and hope still to goe further, if it shall please God, to continue Your Grace in health and life, for which we pray continually. And so remitting all things to our Brothers relation, we take Our leave,

Your Graces affectionate Brothers and Servants,

Dated 2. Aprill 1635. Saint Andrew: Glasgow. Io: B. of Moray.

Ad: B. of Dublane. Tho: Brochline.

On May 19. 1635. The Archbishop writ a Letter of thanks to Bishop Valentine for his forwardnesse in this service: informing him; That the King was well pleased with the conformity at the last reception of the Sacrament: That he was glad the Church businesse there, was in so faire a way, &c. That His Majesty had given him the Bishopricke of Aberdeen, and expected his Residence there; and care of that University: August 7. 1635. He writ to him, that the King is well pleased, with the solemnity of the Sacrament, and that the Bishops were in forme. That he expects that all that receive there, doe it kneeling, and in forme; and that every one of the Session doe it once a yeare at least, and that therefore he and his Successor make a list of the names which performe, or not, &c. After this he writ a Letter into Scotland to the Archbishop of Saint Andrewes, dated November, 10th. 1635. which I find thus indorsed with his owne hand.

A Copie of my Letters sent by the Kings command into Scotland, concerning Church-businesse there to be agitated betweene my Lord of Saint Andrewes and the Earle of TRAQUARE.

My very good Lord;

S. in Christo.

FOr the particulars entrusted by the Church to the Lord Bishop of Brehen, and namely about the Abbacy of Lendores, you must expect them, from the Lord Bishop

‘*Bishop* himselfe, and from such relations as you will receive by my Lord, and the
‘*Earle of Traquare*; now at this time you shall receive nothing but that which is
‘commanded me by the King, and must be my part to act in the present and future
‘businesse for the Church of *Scotland*.

Note.

‘My Lord, for the present the King is resolved upon some great reasons of State
‘which have prevailed with him, not to meddle with the Abbacy of *Lindores*, or
‘any other of that nature, as yet, but to leave them in that State, in which they now
‘are, till such time as he may consider the decrees and the Act or Acts of Parliament
‘which concerne them, And till he can finde a way to Order them better, both for
‘his owne profit, and the contentment of his people there, Assuring you in the
‘meane time that both in this, and all other businesse, hee will be very carefull both
‘of the credit and of the maintenance of the Church, whereof if your selfe or any
‘other Bishop or Clergie Men, shall make doubt, I am commanded to tell you, that
‘therein, you will not onely doe His Majestie wrong, but hurt your selves, and the
‘Church which you seeke to benefit, And in this very parricular, you are to know,
‘and make knowne to others, that it is not, the dislike of any person or persons, or of
‘the thing it selfe, that causes this present stay, but reason of State only, and the care
‘which the King hath, all proceedings may goe on, according to Law: As for the Bi-
‘shopricks his Majestie will take their wants into as provident care as he can, and hath
‘settled *Arbroth*, upon the Bishopricke of *Breben*, but in what forme, I am not able
‘to tell you, as not being so well acquainted with the customes and constitutions of
‘that Kingdome, and therefore lest I should mistake in any circumstance, I leave
‘that wholly to the Bishops owne relation.

For all the businesse of that Church in future, which must come to the Exchequer
or any other publique audience, or any other businesse that may reflect upon the
Church, or any thing that belongs to the Kings service, in which Churchmen are tru-
sted, you are immutably to hold this Rule, and that by his Majesties strict and most
speciall Command; Namely, that your selfe, or the Lord *Rosse*, or both of you together
doe privately acquaint the Earle of *Traquare* with it, before it be proposed in publike,
either at the Councell Table, or the Exchequer, or else where, and the Earle hath as-
sumed to the King in my presence, that he will strictly observe and hold the same co-
respondency, and course with you, and further, that he will very redily and faithfully
doe all good Offices for the Church, that come within his power according to all such
Commands, as he shall receive either immediatly from the King, or otherwise by
direction of his Majesty from my selfe; and if at any time your Lordships, and my L.
Traquare shall upon any of the aforementioned businesse so differ in judgment that you
cannot accord it among yourselves, you are to let it rest, and write up either to his
Majesty or to my selfe, to move his Majesty for further direction, wch once received,
you are all to obey. That so this little unhapy difference which lately arose about *Lin-
dores* may be laid a sleepe, and that no other may hereafter rise up in the place of it, to
disturbe either the Kings or the Churches service, or disorder any of your selves, who
are known to be such carfull and direct servants to both. And to the end this may go
on with the better successe, his Majesty precisely Commands, that this mutuell relation
betweene the Earle of *Traquare* and you, be kept very secret, and made knowne to no other
person, either Clergy or Lay, for the divulging of these things cannot but breed jealousies
amongst men and disservices in regard of the things themselves. And therefore the King
bids me tell you, that he shall take it very ill at his hand, who ever he be, that shall not strict-
ly observe these his directions. This is all which I had in Command to deliver to you,
and I shall not mingle with it any particulars of my own; therefore wishing you all
health and happinesse, and good speed in your great affaires, I leave you to Gods
blessed protection, and rest.

Note.

Note.

Note.

Your Graces very loving freind and Brother.

W. Cant.

On

On December 1. 1635. *Canterbury* writ this ensuing Letter to the Archbishop of *Saint Andrewes*, concerning Fasts on the Lords day, & their Booke of Canons. The Copy whereof I found in his Chamber at the Tower, thus indorsed with his Secretaries hand.

A Copy of my Letters to the Lord Archbishop of *Saint Andrewes*, for the prohibiting of all Fasts on the Lords day throughout the Kingdome.

My very good Lord, S. in Christo.

I Have but one thing at this present to trouble you with, but that hath much displeased the King, and not without very just Cause. For now while the King is setting that Church against all things that were defective in it, and against the continuance of all unwarrantable customes, unknowne to, or opposed by the ancient Church of Christ, the new Bishop of *Aberdene* hath given way to, and allowed, a publick Church thorow out his Diocesse to be kept upon the Lords Day, contrary to the rules of Christianity, and all the antient Canonsof the Church. I was in good hope that Church had quite layed downe that ill Custome, but since it appeares, the now Bishop of *Aberdene* hath continued it, and perhaps others may follow his example, if this passe without a checke. Therefore his Majetties expres will and command to your Grace is, that you, and my Lord of *Glasgow* take order with all the Bishoppsin your severall Provinces respectively, that no man presume, to command or suffer any Fast to be upon that day, or indeed any publicke Fast upon any other day, without the speciall leave and command of the King, to whose power it belongs, and not to them. And further, his Majetties will and pleasure is, that if the Canons be not already printed, as I presume they are not, that you make a Canon purposely against this unworthy custome, and see it printed with the rest. And that you write a short letter to the Bishop of *Aberdene*, to let him understand how he hath over-shot himselfe, which letter you may send together with these of mine, if you so please. This is all which for the present I have to trouble you with: therefore leaving you to Gods blessed protection, I rest.

Your Graces very loving freind and Brother.

W. Cant.

And to justifie himselfe if questioned, he procured this Warrant writ with his owne Secretaries hand, Master *Dell*, without any date at all to be signed by his Majesty, I doubt since his late questioning) thus endorsed with his owne hand.

Warrant for the Scotch Canons.

Charles R.

Canterbury, I would have you and the Bishop of *London* peruse the Canons which are sent from the Bishops of *Scotland* and to your best skill, see that they be well fitted for Church-government, and as neare as conveniently may be to the Canons of the Church of *England*. And to that end you or either of you may alter what you shall finde fitting. And this shall be your Warrant.

NOTE.

Aprill. 20. 1636. the Archbishop writ this Letter to the Bishop of *Dunblane*, concerning the Communion in the Chappell royall, the Booke of Ordination, and the Liturgy, the Copy whereof is indorsed with his owne hand.

I Have received other Letters from you, by which I finde you have written to his Majesty about the Communion in the Chappell Royall, concerning which the King holds his former resolution; That he would be very glad there should be a full Communion at all solemne times as is appointed. But because men doe not alwayes fitt themselves as they ought for that great and holy worke, therefore his Majesty will be satisfied if every one that is required to Communicate there, doe solemnly, and conformably performe that action once a yeare at least, And in conformity to this, you are to signifie once a yeare, unto his sacred Majesty, who have communicated within the compasse of that yeare, and who not: And of this you must not faile.

NOTE.

By these last Letters of yours, I find that you are consecrated; God give you joy. And whereas you desire a Coppy of our Booke of Ordination, I have heere sent you one

one. And I have acquainted his Majetty with the two great reasons that you give, why the Booke which you had in K. James his time is short and insufficient. As first, that the order of Deacons is made but as a Lay Office, at least, as that Booke may be understood. And secondly, that in the admission to Priesthood, the very essentiall words of conferring Orders are left out. At which, his Majetty was much troubled, as he had great cause, and concerning which, he hath commanded me to write, that either you doe admit of our booke of Ordination, or else that you amend your owne in these two grosse oversights, or any thing else, if in more it be to be corrected, and then see the Booke reprinted. I pray faile not to acquaint my Lord of Saint Andrewes, and my Lord Rosse with this expresse Command of his Majetty.

I received likewise from you at the same time certaine notes to be considered of, that all, or at least so many of them, as his Majetty should approve, might be made use of in your Liturgie, which is now in printing. And though my businesse hath of late laine very heavy upon me, yet I presently acquainted his Majetty with what you had written. After this, I and Bishop Wren (my Lord Treasurer being now otherwise busied) by his Majesties appointment sate downe seriously, and considered of them all, and then I rendred them againe to the King without our animadversion upon them, and his Majetty had the patience to weigh and consider them all againe. This done, so many of them, as his Majetty approved, I have written into a service booke of ours, & sent you the booke with his Majesties hand to it, so warrant all your alterations made therein. So in the printing of your Liturgie, you are to follow the Booke which my Lord Rosse brought & the additions which are made to the Booke I now sent. But if you finde the Booke of my Lord Rosse, and this to differ in any thing that is materiall, there you are to follow this later Booke, I now send, as expressing somethings more fully.

And now that your Lordship sees all of your animadversions, which the Kings approved written into this booke, I shall not need to write largely to you, what the reasons were, why all of yours were not admitted, for your judgement, and modesty is such, that you will easily conceive some reason was apprehended for it. Yet because it is necessary, that you know somewhat more distinctly, I shall here give you a particular accompt of some things which are of most moment, and which otherwise perhaps might breed a doubtfullnesse in you.

And first, I thought you could not have doubted but that the Magnificat, &c. was to be printed according to the Translation of King James, for that was named once for all. And that translation is to be followed in the Epistles and Gospels, as well as in the Psalmes. Where I pray observe in the Title-page of the Psalmes in the booke I now send, an alteration which I thinke my Lord Rosse's booke had not. And if you have not printed those Psalmes, with a Colon in the middle of every verse, as it is with ours ordinarily in the English, it is impossible those Psalmes should ever be well sung to the Organ. And if this error be run into, it must be mended by a painfull way, by a pen for all such Bookes as the Chappell Royall useth, and then by one of them the next impression of your Liturgie may be mended wholly.

NOTE.

Secondly in the Creed of Saint Athanasius. We can agree to no more emendations, no not according to our best Greeke Copies, then you shall finde amended in this Booke.

Thirdly though the Bishops there were willed to consider of the Holy Dayes, yet it was never intended but that the Office appointed for every of them, should be kept in the Liturgie, and the consideration, was onely to be of the observation of them.

Fourthly, for the sentences at the Offertorie. We admit of all yours, but wee thinke with all that diverse which are in our Booke would be retained together with yours. As namely the 2d. 4th. 6th. 7. 8. 9. 10. 13. 14. 15.

Fifthly, I would have every Prayer or other Action through the whole Communion named in the Rubrick before it, that it may be knowne to the people what it is, as I have begun to doe in the Prayer of Consecration, and in the memoriall or Prayer of oblation. *Eac similiter.*

NOTE.

Sixtly, We doe fully approve the Collect of Consecration and Oblation should preceed, and the Lords Prayer follow next, and be said before the Communion in that order which you have exprest, but for the Invitation, Confession, Absolution, Sentences, Preface, and Doxologie, We thinke they stand best as they are now placed in our Liturgie, and as for the Prayer of humble access to the holy Communion, that will stand very well, next before the Participation.

Seaventhly, I have ordered a Rubrick in the Margin of this Booke according as you desire, to direct him that celebrates when to take the Sacrament into his hand. Namely to take, and breake, and lay hands on the Chalice, as he speaks the words. For certainly the practise of the Church of England therein is very right. And for the objection, that we should not doe it till we expresse our Warrant so to doe, which you conceive is in these words, *Do this, &c.* I Answer, 1. That those words *Do this, &c.* are rather our Warrant for the Participation, or Communication, then the Consecration, 2. That our repeating what Christ did, is our Warrant to doe the same, being there to commanded, 3. That the whole Action is *Actus continuus*, and therefore though in our saying (*Do this*) followes after, yet it doth, and must be intended to that which We did before; and comes last to seale and confirme our Warrant for doing so. And so tis in the other Sacrament of Baptisme, where we take the Child first, and Baptise it, and then afterwards We say, We receive this Child, &c. Which in *Actu continuo* must needs relate to the preceeding act, for the Child was actually received into the Church by the very act of Baptisme it selfe. And this is but our Declaration of that Reception.

And whereas you write, that much more might have beene done, if the times would have borne it; I make noe doubt but there might have beene a fuller Addition. But God, be thanked this will doe very well, and I hope breed up a great deale of devout, and religious pietie in that Kingdome. Yet I pray for my Farther satisfaction, at your best leisure draw up all those particulars, which you thinke might make the Liturgy perfect, whether the times will beare them or not, And send them safe to me, & I will not faile to give you my judgment of them, and perhaps, put some of them to further use, at least in my owne particular.

Notes.

One thing more, and then I have done. In his Majesties authorising of the notes in this book prefixed at the begining of it, though he leave a liberty to my Lords the Archbishops of St. Andrewes & Brethren the Bishops who are upon the place, upon apparent reason to vary some things; Yet you must know, and informe them, that his Majestie having viewed all these additions hopes there will be no need of change of any thing, and wilbe best pleased, with little or rather no alteration. So wishing all prosperity to that Church, and a happy finishing of your Liturgie, and health to my Brethren the Bishops, I leave you to the Grace of God, and rest.

Lambeth Aprill 20. 1636.

Your Lordships very loving Freind
and Brother.

W. Cant.

This Letter gives us very much light concerning the proceedings of the Archbishop in the *Scottish Liturgie*, the Scottish Bishops sending all their Notes and alterations of it & doubts concerning it to him from time to time, as to their only Oracle, (all which I have at large, but preremit in silence) and receiving his directions which were punctually observed. By which it appeares how vaine and false this excuse of his concerning this businesse is, which hee drew up with his owne hand since his imprisonment in the Tower, where I founde it thus indorsed and superscribed by him.

The

The [*] true Narrative concerning the Scottish Service Book.

Doctor John Maxwell the late Bishop of Ross came to me from his Majesty. It was during the time of a great sicknesse which I had, Anno 1629. (which is 11. yeares since) The cause of his comming was to speake with me about a *Lyturgie* for Scotland. At this time I was so extreame ill that I saw him not. And had death (which I then expected daily) seased on me, I had not seene this heavy day.

* But his own Letters & the subsequent passages, manifest it to bee false.

After this when I was able to sit up, he came to me againe, and told me, It was his Majesties pleasure that I should receive some instructions from some Bishops of Scotland concerning a *Lyturgie* that he was imployed about it. I told him I was cleare of opinion, that if His Majestie would have a *Lyturgie* settled there different from what they had already; it was best to take the English *Lyturgie* without any variation, that so the same Service book might passe through all His Majesties Dominions. To this hee replied, that he was of a contrary opinion, and that not he only, but the Bishops there, thought their Countriemen would be much better satisfied, if a *Lyturgie* were made by their owne Bishops, but withall that it might be according to the forme of our English Booke, I added if this were the resolution, I would doe nothing till I might by Gods blessing have health and opportunity to waite upon the King.

And heere give me leave (I humbly beseech you) to tell your Lordships, that this was no new conceit of His Majestie to have a *Lyturgie* framed, and Canons made for the Church of Scotland: For he followed the example and care in the businesse of his Royall Father King James of blessed memory, who tooke Order for both at the Assembly held at Perth, Anno 1618. As appeares in the Acts of that Generall Assembly, and the Sermon which the late Reverend Arch-Bishop of Saint Andrewes preached before it, pag. 40. & 68.

When I was able to goe abroad, and came to His Majesty, I represented all that passed. His Majesty avoyded the sending of Doctor Maxwell to me, and the busines, but then agreed to my opinion to have the English without alteration. And in this case I held the businesse for two if not three yeare at least. Afterwards the Scottish Bishops still pressing His Majestie that a *Lyturgie* made by themselves, and in some things different from the English service would relish better with their Countymen, they prevailed with His Majestie at last to have it so, notwithstanding all I could say or doe to the contrary.

Then His Majesty commanded me to give the Bishops of Scotland the best assistance I could in this way and worke. I delayed as much as I could with my Obedience. When nothing would serve but it must goe on, I did not only acquaint His Majesty with it, but writ downe most of the amendment or alterations in His Majesties presence. And doe hope there is no one thing in that Book which may not stand with the Conscience of a right good Protestant. Sure I am his Majestie approved them all, and I have his warrant under his Royall hand for all that I did about that Booke.

Note.

As for the way of introducing it, I ever advised the Bishops both in his Majesties presence, and at other times, that they would looke carefully to it, and be sure to doe nothing in any kinde but what should be agreeable to the Lawes of that Kingdome. And that they should at all times as they saw cause, bee sure to take the advice of the Lords of his Majesties Councell in that Kingdome, and governe themselves accordingly. Which course if they have not followed that can no way (as I conceive) reflect upon me. And I am able to prove by other particulars as well as this, that for any thing concerning that Nation, I have beene as carefull their Lawes might be observed, as any man that is a stranger to them might be.

The 18. of October 1635, the Archbishop procured this Warrant of Instructions from the Kings Majesty, to this Scottish Prelates touching the *Service Book*, and other particulars:

Charles R.

Instructions from his Sacred Majesty, to the Archbishops, and Bishops of Scotland.

That you advert, that the Proclamation for authorizing the Service Booke, it derogate nothing from Our Prerogative Royall.

Note. That in the Kalender you keep such *Catholike Saints* as are in the English, that you pester it not with too many, but such as you insert of the peculiar Saints of that Our Kingdome, that they be of the most approved, and here to have regard to those of the blood Royall, and such Holy Bishops in every Sea most renowned. But in no case omit Saint George and Patrick.

That in your Booke of Orders, in giving Orders to Presbyters, you keepe the words of the English Booke without change, *Receive the Holy Ghost, &c.*

Note. That you insert amongst the Lessons ordinarily to be read in the Service, out of the Booke of Wisdom, the 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, and 6, Chapters, and out of the Booke of Ecclesiasticks, the 1, 2, 5, 8, 35, and 49, Chapters.

Note. That every Bishop within his own Family, twice a day cause the Service to be done: And that all Archbishops and Bishops make all Universities and Colledges within their Diocesses, to use daily twice a day the Service.

That the Preface to the Booke of Common Prayer signed by Our hand, and the Proclamation authorizing the same, be printed and inserted in the Booke of Common Prayer.

Given at New-market the Eighteen day of October 1636, and of Our Raigne the 11.

The originall Booke of Common Prayer imposed on the Church of Scotland, (one principall cause of the late Commotions there) I found in the Archbishops Chamber in the Tower (when I was enjoyned by Authority to search it May 30. 1642.) with all the Additions and Alterations wherein it varies from the English, written, made, and inserted with the Archbishops owne hand, as it was afterward printed and published in Scotland, Anno 1637. concerning which I shall give you some briefe materiall observations.

First, That to countenance these Alterations, he caused this Warrant in the Kings Name written with his own Secretaries (Mr. Dels) hand, to be inserted into the Booke just (after the Table for the Psalmes and Chapters, and before the beginning of the Common Prayers;) which Warrant without doubt (as appears by the Contents of it) was procured long after the date thereof, and I presume counterfeited; Charles R. being not the Kings owne hand (though somewhat like it) but Master Dels as I conceive, who writ the Warrant, which runs thus

Charles R.

Note. I Gave the Archbishop of Canterbury command to make the Alterations expressed in this Booke, and to fit a Liturgy for the Church of Scotland. And where-soever they shall differ from another Booke signed by Us at Hampton Court, September 28, 1634. Our pleasure is, to have these followed rather than the former, unless the Archbishop of St. Andrewes, and his Brethren who are upon the place, shall see apparent reason to the contrary. At Whitehall, April 19, 1636.

This Warrant, and that for the Canons were both writ by his Secretary Dell, this having a Date (or rather Antedate) but the other none at all, that it might fit with any time, if questioned.

Secondly, That these Alterations are of different natures; and may be reduced to these Heads. First, such as tend to advance the power of the Prelates; Such is that in the Preface of the Booke which in the English Common Prayer Book runs thus. *All Priests and Deacons shall be bound to say daily the Morning and Evening Prayer, either privately or openly, except they be let by Preaching, Studying of Divinity,*

or some other urgent cause; which latter clauses by Preaching, studying of Divinity, are obliterated; and this added: or hindred by some urgent cause: Of which cause if ~~it~~ be frequently pretended, they are to make the Bishop of the Diocese, or the Archbishop of the Province, the IVDGE and ALOWER.

Secondly, Such as favour of Popery, or tend towards it, or are directly Popish, taken out of the very Roman Masse-Book Ceremonial & Pontifical, or made conformable thereunto. As first, his adding of two new Saints dayes, namely, the Feasts of the Conversion of St. Paul, and of St. Barnabas, nor in the English Booke, or Statute, which runs thus. These to be observed for Holy-dayes, AND NO OTHER, &c. of which these two new Holy-days are none; but now added to the Catalogue of Holy-days with the Archbishops owne hand. Secondly, his Introduction and Addition of New Ceremonies, with Rubricks to command their use, not in the English; as First, standing up when ever Gloria Patri is sayd, [*] (borrowed from Ordo Romanus de Officio Missæ.) for which there are many Rubricks in the Order for Morning and also for Evening Prayer: as, Then all of them standing up, the Presbyter shall say or sing: Glory be to the Father, &c. As at the end of the Venite, so also at the end of every Psalm throughout the year, and likewise in the end of Benedictus, Magnificat, and Nunc Dimittis, shall be repeated, Glory be to the Father, &c. And the people shall answer, As it was in the beginning, &c. STANDING VP AT THE SAME. As it was in the beginning, &c. ALL OF THEM STANDING VP AS OFT AS IT IS REPEATED, &c. 2ly. The Standing up at Athanasius or the Nicene Creed, not formerly enjoyed in the English, by this new Addition of his to the Rubrick before it: shall be sayd, &c. this Confession of the Christian faith [*] (The Presbyter and ALL THE PEOPLE STANDING. 3ly. Singing or Chanting the Lords Prayer, Creed, Te Deum Laudamus, Benedictus, and other parts of publike service, after the [*] Popish manner, by adding this new clause (sayd OR SUNG) to their Rubricks, which were said (not sung) before. 4ly. Standing up at the reading of the Gospel. For which he added this new Rubricke. And the Epistle ended, the Gospel shall be read by the Presbyter, saying, The holy Gospel is written in the Gc. And then the people ALL STAND-
ING UP, shall say, Glory be to thee O Lord: At the end of the Gospel the Presbyter shall say, (so endeth the holy Gospel) And the people shall answer, Thanks be to thee O Lord. Directly taken out of Missale Romanum ex Decreto Sancti Concilii Tridentini restitutum: Pij. 5. Pontif. Maximi jussu Editum, Salamantica. 1588. (which the Archbishop hath diligently noted with his own hand, and used the Kalender in it for his Diary, Memoriall & common-Place-Book) Rubrica Generales Missales: and other places of it. 5ly. His order to omit the Doxology in the Lords Prayer, in the repetition of it (as it is omitted in the Roman Missall, p. 311. 312. 313. 314. and else where) for which he inserts this speciall Directory. The Lords Prayer in this and all other places of the Lyturgie, where the last words, For thine is the Kingdom &c. shall be expressed; shall read them: But in ALL Places, where they are not expressed, HE SHALL END AT THESE WORDS; But deliver us from evill. Amen (As the Papists do in all their Missalls and Howres:) belike, Glory be to the Father, &c. will supply this Omission. 6ly. His inserting a new Prayer into the Collects, prefaced with this Title and Directory. A prayer to be sayd in the Ember-weeks, for those who are then to be ordained into holy Orders: And is to be read every day of the weeke, beginning on the Sunday before the day of Ordination; Almighty God, &c. and this new Rubrick, before the old Prayer (Almighty and everlasting God, who only worketh great marvell, &c.) A prayer for the HOLT CLERGIE. 7ly. His obliterating, the word Congregation, in most Collects, Prayers, and inserting the word Church and Holy Church, in its place. 8ly. In the order of the Administration of the Lords Supper he prevaricates most of all, to usher in the Masse, Transubstantiation, and reconcile us to the Church of Rome in this maine point of difference. To instance in some particulars of moment.

First, in the situation and furniture of the Lords Table; for which purpose he altered the last clause of the first Rubrick of the Communion in this manner.

* See Georgij
Cassandri Ordo
Romanus, p. 91

* This is added

* See Ordo
Romanus apud
Georgij-Cas-
sandri Opera.
p. 100.

The old Rubrick.

The Table having at the Communion time a faire linnen cloth upon it: shall stand in the body of the Church or in the Chancell, where Morning Prayer and Evening Prayer be appointed to be sayd. And the Priest standing at the Northside of the Table, shall say the Lords Prayer.

The new altered thus.

The *Holy* Table having at the Communion time a faire white linnen cloth upon it WITH OTHER DECENT FURNITURE, *meet for the high mysteries there to be celebrated, shall stand AT THE VPERMOST PART OF THE CHANCEL, or Church where the Presbyter standing at the North side OR END thereof, shall say the Lords Prayer, &c.*

By this Alteration, the Bishop made way for the Introduction. First, of the *solemne* Consecration of the Lords Table and Altar, after the Popish manner, to make it an HOLY Table, which he holds it could not be without a speciall Consecration. Secondly, For Crucifixes, Candlesticks, Tapers, Basons, consecrated Flagons, Chalice, and all other manner of Altar furniture used in his owne Chappell at Lambeth. Thirdly, For Rayling in and impounding the Lords Table Altar-wise at the East-end of the Church; to which all the Communicants must make their approaches to receive the Sacrament kneeling, at the new Rayles. A very advantageous alteration to introduce, Authorize, and enjoin all these Innovations by colour of it.

Secondly, In the second Rubricke in the Order of the Communion; thus metamorphized.

The old Rubricke.

Then shall the Priest rehearse distinctly all the Ten Commandements, and the people kneeling shall after every Commandement aske God mercy for their transgressions of the same, after this sort.

The New.

Then shall the Presbyter TVRNING TO THE PEOPLE, rehearse distinctly all the Ten Commandements; The people ALL THE WHILE kneeling, and asking God mercy for their transgression of every duty therein; either according to the Letter, or to the MYSTICALL IMPORTANCE of the sayd Commandements,

By which Alteration, First, Intimation and way is given that the Minister who Officiats at the Communion, is to turne his back to the people, as the Popish Priests doe, save onely when he reads the Commandements: as the words, *turning to the people*, imply. Secondly, A *mysticall sence* of the Commandements introduced, whereby their litterall morality is denyed: which may well relate to the second Commandement, which the[*] Papists hold Ceremoniall, and therefore omit, delete it out of all their Decalogues in their Missals, Breviaries, Hournes of prayers, Manuels, Catechismes, as made onely for the Iewes, not Christians: which in its litterall sence would quite have subverted the Archbishops new Crucifixes and Images erected in his own Chappels at Lambeth & Croydon, taken out of the very pattern in the Masse-booke; or at least to the fourth Commandement, contradicting the Bishops new *Book of sports and pastimes on the Lords day*; which he thrust out in the Kings name; and refuting his opinion that the Sabbath is not morall, and that there is now NO SABBATH AT ALL; as his Creature and chiefe Favourite Doctor Heylyn hath taught us in his *History of the Sabbath* (he might better have intituled it, *De Non-ente, of no Sabbath*, if there be none) published by the Prelates instigation & approbation, and Dr. Pocklington his Minion, in his *Sunday no Sabbath*.

Thirdly, In the first Collect after the Commandements, *Almighty God, &c. have mercy upon the whol Congregation and so rule, &c.* is changed into: upon thy Holy Catholike Church, and in the particular Church wherein we live; So rule, &c. which makes way: 1. For the Popes, Prelates, and Clergies usurping and ingrossing of the Title Church, unto themselves, as they do; excluding the Laity: which the word Congregation; and whole Congregation includes; making the people if not the intire, yet at least the principall and greatest part of the Church. 2ly, For a union

* See Doctor Reynolds De Idolatri Romanus Ecclesie.

union with Rome, who stile their Church; [*] the holy Catholick Church, and all others but particuler Churches: And in this sence would not onely approve, but applaud this Alteration, fitted to their purpose.

Fourthly, In lieu of this Directory; Then shall the Church-wardens, or some other by them appointed, gather the devotion of the people, and put the same into the poor mans boxe, and upon the offering dayes appointed, every man and woman shall pay to the Curate the due and accustomed offerings; after which done, the Priest shall say. He inserts this following, While the Presbyter distinctly pronounceth some or all of these sentences for the offertory, the Deacon, or if no such be present, one of the Church-wardens shall receive the devotions of the people there present, in a Bason provided for that purpose. And when all have offered, he shall reverently bring the said Bason with the Oblations thereon, and deliver it to the Presbyter, who shall humbly present it before the Lord, and set it upon the holy Table. And the Priest shall then [*] OFFER UP and place the bread and wine prepared for the Sacrament, upon the Lords Table, that it may be ready for that service. And he then shall say, Let us pray for &c. And after the divine Service ended, that which was offered shall be divided in the presence of the Presbyter and the Church-wardens, whereof one halfe shall be to the use of the Presbyter to provide him Books of holy Divinity: The other halfe shall be faithfully kept and employed on some pious or charitable use, for the decent furnishing of that Church; or the publick reliefe of their poore, at the discretion of the Presbyter and Church-wardens. In which we have the Popish phraze of an Offertory, foisted into the place of the devotion of the people; which much be caried up REVERENTLY (with Congings and Duckings) to the HOLY Table, and there OFFERED up to God as a sacrifice, and humbly presented before the Lord: to make men dream of & draw them to a Massing sacrifice. That this Offertory is a part of the Popish Masse, you may see in *Missale Romanum Ritus Celebrandi Missam* p. 12, 13. and 261. and Fox Acts & Monuments. Edit. ult. vol. 3. p. 8. to omit all others. 2ly. An offering up of the Bread and Wine by the Priest at the Holy Table: just as the Priests doe in the Masse, and derived from them, as *Missale Romanum, Cereemoniale, Pontificale, and Braviarium Romanum* inform us.

Fifthly, In the prayer for the whole estate of Christs Church, there are these two Clauses added. And we commend especially unto thy mercifull goodnesse the Congregation which is here assembled in thy name, to Celebrate the Commemoration of the most precious death and sacrifice of thy Son, and our Saviour Jesus Christ. (When there is no Communion these words inclosed are to be left out.) And we also blesse thy holy name for all those thy servants who having finished their course in faith, do now rest from their labours. And we yeeld unto thee most high praise, and hearty thanks, for the wonderfull grace and virtue declared in all thy saints, who have bin the chiefe vessels of thy Grace, and the lights of the World in their severall generations: Most humbly beseeching thee, that we may have grace to follow the example of their stedfastnesse in thy faith, and obedience to thy holy Commandements. That at the day of the generall Resurrection we and all they which are of the mysticall body of thy Son, may be set on his right hand, and hear that his most joyfull voice; Come ye blessed of my Father, inherit the Kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world.

This clause is added in imitation of the [*] Roman Missall, wherein we find frequent Commemorations of the Saints departed whose memories are there celebrated: *Memoriam Venerantes famulorum famularumque tuarum, qui nos praeceperant in signo fidei, & dormiunt in somno pacis &c. Nobis quoque peccatoribus famulis tuis, de multitudine miserationum tuarum petentibus partem aliquam & societatem donare dignaris cum tuis sanctis Apostolis & Martyribus & omnibus sanctis tuis, intra quorum nos consortium non estimator meriti, sed venia quasumus largitor, admitte, &c.* If he come not up fully in all things to the Papists or their Masse-booke at the first, yet he will doe it as neare as may be, inserting these passages into it, which were formerly expunged out of it at the Reformation, to avoyd the Invocation of dead Saints, which was first usherd into the Church by the frequent publike Commemoration of Saints departed.

* See Bishop Mortons Grand Imposition: Doctor Reynolds 6. Theses. Thesi

Note.

Ritus celebrandi Missam p. 13. & Praefatione sine Notis, p. 298, 299, 230, 231 canon Missae p. 306, 309.

Sixthly,

Sixthly, In the first exhortation before the Communion, he makes this Alteration and insertion.

The English Booke.

And as the Son of God did vouchsafe to yeeld up his soule by death upon the Crosse for your health, even so it is your duty to receive the Communion together in remembrance of his death. But the fault is much greater, when men stand by, and yet will neither eat nor drinke the holy Communion with others.

The Alteration.

And as the Son of God did vouchsafe to OFFER up himselfe by death upon the Crosse for your Salvation; even so it is our duty to celebrate and receive the holy Communion together in remembrance of his death AND SACRIFICE, &c. But the fault is much greater, when men stand by, and yet will not receive this holy Sacrament which is offered unto them.

* See Missale Romanum p. 261, 262, &c.

By which Alteration and insertion [*] taken out of the *Roman Missall*, he makes the Book admit & approve of *A Sacrifice*, (at least a Commemorative one, if not a reall) in the administration of the Lords Supper, to countenance the *Sacrifice of the Masse*; which the old English passage will neither intimate, nor warrant, but rather denies.

Note.

Seventhly, In the Rubricke before the Prayer of Consecration, he makes this observable Alteration and insertion of his owne. The English Rubricke is onely. Then the Priest standing up shall say as followeth: The Archbishop adds this with his owne hand, shall say the prayer of Consecration, as followeth: But then during the time of Consecration, the Presbyter which Consecrateth **SHALL STAND IN THE MIDST BEFORE THE ALTAR**, That he may with the more ease and decency **USE BOTH HIS HANDS**, which he cannot so conveniently do, standing at the Northside of it. A very memorable Addition in severall respects, taken out of the *Roman Missall*, and introducing Masse in good earnest, if compared with the premised and ensuing Alterations. For first, it brings in **AN ALTAR** in lieu of a Lords Table (contrary to the first Rubricke) that so we may have a Massing Sacrifice, which cannot be without an Altar 2ly. It removes the Priest that Consecrates, from the North-side or end of the Table, where the first Rubricke enjoynes him to Celebrate, **TO STAND IN THE MIDST BEFORE THE ALTAR** while he Celebrates; with his backe to the people, who by this meanes can neither see nor heare, very well what he doth: which is directly taken out of the Masse-

* Missale Romanum. Ritus Celebrandi Missamp. 8. 13; 14, 15, &c. Ordinarium Missæ p. 258. 359, 260, &c.

Book, where we find these Rubricks very frequent: [*] *Sacerdos Celebraturus accedit AD MEDIUM ALTARIS UBI STANS VERSUS ILLUD. Sacerdos rediens AD MEDIUM ALTARIS, Stans IN MEDIO ALTARIS. Stans ANTE MEDIUM ALTARIS, Versus ad illud, &c.* 3ly. We have an Elevation of the hostia after its Consecration, insinuated in these words; That he may with more ease and decency use both his hands, &c. to wit in Consecrating and elevating the Bread and Wine, as the Priest is enjoyned to do in the [*] *Roman Missall*, that so the people may adore it: *Quibus prolati, celebrans tenens hostiam inter pollices, &c. genuflexus eam adorat, Tunc se erigens, quantum commodè potest ELEVAT IN ALTUM HOSTIAM. et intentis in eam oculis (quod & in ELEVATIONE CALICIS FACIT) populo reverenter ostendit adorandam:* After which he elevates the Cup in like manner, as the Missall enjoynes him.

* Missale Rom. Ritus Celebrand. Missam. p. 17. 161.

Eighthly, In the very Prayer of Consecration it selfe, there are these observable insertions & Alterations made with his owne hand; which you will best discern by placing the old and new Clauses one over against the other.

The old.

Who made there by his own oblation of himselfe once offered a full perfect and sufficient sacrifice, oblation and satisfaction for the sinnes of the whole world, and did institute, and in his holy Gospel command us to continue a perpetu-

The New.

Who made there by his owne Oblation of himselfe once offered a full perfect and sufficient satisfaction for the sins of the whole world, and did institute and in his holy Gospel ordain

all memory of that his precious death untill his comming againe, heare us Omof mercifull Father, we beseech thee, and grant that we receiving these thy creatures of Bread and Wine, according to thy soune our saviour Iesus Christs holy institution, in remembrance of his death and passion, may be partakers of his most precious body and blood.

ordaine a perpetuall memory of his precious death **AND SACRIFICE**, untill his comming againe. Heare us O mercifull Father, we humbly beseech thee, and of thy **ALMIGHTY GOODNESSE** vouchsafe **SO TO BLESSE & SANCTIFY** with thy word and holy spirit, these thy gifts and creatures of bread and Wine. That **THEY MAY BE VNTO VS THE BODY AND BLOOD OF THY MOST DEARLY BELOVED SON**, so that we receiving them, according to thy Son our saviour Iesus Christs holy institution in remembrance of his death and passion, may be partakers of **THE SAME** his most precious blood.

Note.

Where 1. we have the word *Sacrifice*, inserted, to make the Sacrament of the Lords Supper, a *Sacrifice*, as the * Papists hold their Masse to be; when as it cannot be one: 2. Because there is nothing offered, flaine or sacrificed in it: 3. Because the Elements are not offered up to God therein by us; but given as from God and Christ unto us, as these very words evidence takes, eat, drink, &c. do this in remembrance of me. Now nothing can be a sacrifice but what is offered up unto God himself, nor ought we receive from him. 4. We have a Transubstantiation of the Elements into Christs very Body & blood intimated in the words, *Almighty goodnes*, (Transubstantiation being a work of Gods * Omnipotency, as the Papists teach) and so to blesse, &c. but more clearly expressed in this sublequent clause; That they may be unto us **THE BODY AND BLOOD** of thy most dearly beloved Son: so that we receiving them, &c. may be partakers of **THE SAME** his most precious body and blood which addition is taken Verbatim out of the * Roman Missall. *Quam oblationem tu Deus in omnibus quasumus benedic- tam, ascriptam, rationabilem, acceptabilemque facere digneris, UT NOBIS COR- PVS ET SANGVIS FIAT, dilectissimi Filij tui Domini nostri Iesu Christi. And Munera quasumus Domine oblatam sanctifica: ut ET NOBIS Vnigeniti tui CORPVS ET SANGVIS FIANT* &c. And to what end this clause should be inserted out of the Roman Missall and Pontificall now, which had beene quite obliterated heretofore, when the Common prayer Booke was refined; unlesse to reduce us backe to Rome, and introduce the sacrifice of the Masse and Transubstantiation, no wise man can conjecture.

* Petrus Binsfeldis Enchirid. Theolog. cap. 6. 7. p. 49.

* Tho. Waldensis pars. 2. cap. 69.

* Missale Rom. p. 307. Oratio- nes ad diver- sa p. 82. Pon- tif. Rom. p. 173.

Ninthly, He added these two Rubrickes to this Prayer of Consecration in the Margin: These two Rubrickes following, and to stand in the Margin thus: At these words, (Take bread) the Presbiter is to take the Paten in his hand: &c. At these words, (Take the Cup) he is to take the Chalice in his hand, and lay his hand VPON SO. MVCH BE IT in Chalice or Flaggons AS HE INTENDS TO CONSECRATE, which implies that Popish Position to be Orthodox: * That the Priests intention is necessarily required to consecrate the Elements, and that no more of them is consecrated then he intends to consecrate, and laies his hands on.

NOTE.

Tenthly, In the words prescribed to be used in the very delivery of the bread and Wine after consecration, there is a most notorious alteration made by way of an *Indox Expurgatorius* with this Prelates owne hand: The auncient English forme stood thus: The Body of our Lord Iesus Christ, which was given for thee, preserve thy Body & Soule unto everlasting life: AND TAKE AND EATE THIS IN REMEMBRANCE THAT CHRIST DIED FOR THEE, AND FEED ON HIM IN THY HEART BY FAITH WITH THANKSGIVING.

The Blood of our Lord Iesus Christ, that was shed for thee, preserve thy Body and Soule unto everlasting life: AND DRINKE THIS IN REMEMBRANCE THAT CHRIST'S BLOOD WAS SHED FOR THEE AND BE THANKFULL. But the Bishop thought good to curtall these clauses, by dashing out the latter words; And take and eate this in Remembrance that Christ died for thee, and feed on him in thine heart by faith with thanksgiving; in the one: And drinke this in remembrance that Christs blood was shed for thee and be thankfull in the other: adding only this Rubricke

NOTE.

See Summa Angelica Tit- Encaristia, Petri Binsfeldii Enchirid. Theol. c. 6. p. 461

bricke in stead of them, Here the party receiving shall say, Amen, and also after the receiving of the Cup. And accordingly these passages were omitted in the printed book.

Now what might be the mistery of this notable alteration? surely it could be noe other: But first, to conforme it to the very Roman *Missall*, and Order of the *Miss*, with which it now accords, as will appeare by this Paralell.

* *Missale Romanum. Ritus Celebr. Missam, p. 21. Ordinarium Missæ p. 318.*

The Body of our Lord Iesus Christ, which was given for thee, preserve thy body and Soule unto everlasting life: (here the party receiving shall say) Amen.

The Blood of our Lord Iesus Christ, which was shed for thee, preserve thy body and soule unto everlasting life, (here the party shall say) Amen.

* *Corpus Domini nostri Iesu Christi custodiat animam meam in vitam æternam, Amen.*

Sanguis Domini nostri Iesu Christi custodiat animam meam in vitam æternam, Amen.

2ly To introduce a Transubstantiation of the Bread & Wine into Christs very body and blood, and an external receiving of them with the mouth, to make a compleat sacrifice of the Masse, which these expunged clauses doe expressly contradict; and were added by our Reformers heretofore for this very purpose, to take away all opinion of any transubstantiation, or corporall eating of Christs Body, or drinking his blood in the Sacrament.

Note.

1ly. In the Rubricke next after the delivery of the Cup he inserts this clause. And after shall be said, *THIS MEMORIAL, OR PRAYER OF OBLATION*: and these clauses into the Prayer it selfe. Wherefore O Lord, heavenly Father according to the institution of thy dearly beloved Son our Saviour Iesus Christ, we thy humble servants do celebrate and make here before thy Divine Majesty, with these thy holy gifts, the memoriall which thy Son hath willed us to make, having in remembrance his blessed passion, mighty resurrection, and glorious ascension, rendering unto thee most hearty thanks for the innumerable benefits procured to us by the same, &c. Humbly beseeching thee, that whosoever shall be partakers of this holy Communion, may worthily receive THE MOST PRECIOUS BODY AND BLOOD OF THY SON JESVS CHRIST,

* *Canon Missæ p. 306-307*

and be fulfilled with thy grace and heavenly benediction and made one body with him, that he may dwell in them, and they in him. In which additions; we have, first an Oblation in imitation of the Masse book, where we have this prayer. * *hanc igitur OBLATIONEM servitutis nostræ, quasumus Domine ut placatus accipias, &c.* 2ly A reall receiving of Christs body & blood in the Papists sence, taken out of this prayer in the very * Masse Book: *Vt quotquot ex hac Altaris participatione sanctum Filij tui CORPVS ET SANGVINEM SVMPSERIMVS, omni benedictione celesti, & gratia repleamur. &c.*

† *Canon Missæ p. 309*

2ly. Before the very next Prayer there is this Rubricke added. When all have communicated, he that celebrates, shall goe to the Lords Table, and cover with a faire linnen Cloth OR * *CORPORALL*, that which remaineth of the consecrated Elements, & then say as followeth. Which word & Linnen Cloth heere tearmed A *CORPORAL*,

* *Note.*

† *Canon Missæ p. 308. Ordinarium Missæ p. 261. Ritus celebrandi Missam, p. 17. 18.*

is taken out of the * *Roman Missall*, where it is frequently mentioned: as, *Mox ipsum reverentia super CORPORALI reponit reposita hostia consecrata super CORPORALI: Reponit super CORPORALE, &c.* And in the Roman Pontificall P. 359. *De Benedictione CORPORALIVM*; we have a speciall forme of Consecration prescribed for Corporalls, before they must be used, and 3. speciall prayers for that purpose, where in are these Clauses. *Tribue quasumus ut hoc Lintheamen tua propitiationis benedictione sanctificetur, ad consecrandum super illud Corpus & Sanguinem Dei & Domini nostri Iesu Christi; Benedicere, sanctificare & consecrare digneris lintheamen istud, ad regendum, involvendumque CORPVS ET SANGVINEM Domini nostri Iesu Christi. Omnipotens Deus, manibus nostris opera tua benedictionis infunde, ut per nostram benedictionem hoc Lintheamen sanctificetur, & CORPORIS ET SANGVINIS Redemptionis nostri novum sudarium.* All which compared with the Arch-Bishops speech in Starre-Chamber. For there tis, * *Hoc est corpus meum, &c.* will clearly manifest, that the maine end and designe of all these his forementioned alterations, and insertions was the introducing amongst us of Transubstantiation, and the Romish sacrifice of the Masse, with the very Masse-Booke it selfe, by peece-meales.

* *Page 47.*

13. In the very close of the last Rubricke for the Communion there is this notable alteration and intention for the same purpose, *THOUGH IT BE LAWFULL TO HAVE WAFER BREAD* (which the Papists use) *it shall suffice that the Bread be such as is usuall.* And whereas the old Rubricke was: *If any of the Bread and Wine remaine, the Curate shall have it to his owne use:* It is thus altered in the new. *And if any of the Bread and Wine remaine which is consecrated, it shall be reverently eaten and drunke by such of the Communicants only as the Presbyter which celebrates shall take unto him: But it shall not be caried out of the Church.* And to the end there may be little left, he that Officiates is required to consecrate with the least; and then if there be want, the words of Consecration may be repeated againe, over more either Bread or Wine, the Presbyter beginning at these words in the prayer of Consecration. *Our Saviour in the same night that he was betrayed tooke, &c.*

NOTE.

Finally in the commination against sinners, he hath made these insertions. *Prayers to be used diverse times of the yeare, (AND ESPECIALLY ON THE FIRST DAY OF LENT COMMONLY CALLED ASH-WEDNESDAY,* is added: *Brethren in the Primitive Church there was a godly Discipline, that at the beginning of Lent such persons as were notorious sinners, (were put to open penance, and punished in this world:) which he thus alters; were put to open penance, & did humbly submit themselves TO UNDERGOE PUNISHMENT IN THIS WORLD.* Which alteration makes way, and gives good colour for the introduction of Popish Confession, and Penances imposed by Priests; the end no doubt for which it was made.

NOTE.

To conclude: Whereas there were *diverse godly prayers* printed at the end of the common Prayer Book after the Psalms, *to be used for sundry purposes;* some whereof were made use of in private families, Morning and Evening; the Arch-Bishop gives this direction in the Margin concerning the expunging of them, with his own hand. *His Majesty commands, That these prayers following, or any other (for they are different in severall editions) BE ALL LEFT OUT, and not printed in your Lyturgie:* Which command was accordingly observed.

Now I beseech you judge by all these particulars what the Archbishops designe was in making all these alterations, additions, and endeavouring to obtrude this Common-Prayer Book and new Lyturgy upon the Church of Scotland without consent of their Parliament, or Generall Assembly, and what just cause our Brethren of Scotland had to oppose and resist them as they did.

This Service Book being printed in Scotland, with these and sundry other alterations, and additions, wherein it differed from the *English*, in the Yeare 1637. the Arch-Bishop having first caused *Mr. Pryne, Doctor Bastwicke, and Master Burton,* to be severly censured, pillered, stigmatized, cropped off all their Eares, and sent them close prisoners to sundry remote Castles, for opposing his popish Innovations here in England; which strook an extraordinary terror into many, here, & (as he conceived) would have terrified all from any future opposition of his Popish designs elsewhere; tooke occasion immediately after their censures to endeavour to set this Service Book on foote in Scotland by a meare Arbitrary power. For which purpose he gave order that this Book should be publicly read in all Churches within the City of Edenborough in July 1637. about which time he writ this Letter to the Lord Treasurer of Scotland, concerning the Priory, and other Lands (which the Bishops of Scotland laboured to get in possession to augment their revenues,) and the affaires of that Church.

NOTE.

My good Lord;

S. In Christo.

YOur Lordships of June 26. came to my hands on Sunday July 2. And they were the first, I received out of Scotland since your returne thither, save onely that I had one from the Kings Advocate in answer to mine, and one from my Lord of Brecken. And I confesse I did and doe a little wonder at it considering how many Letters I writ, and what their contents were. So I was glad to see one come from Your Lordship till I read it, but then I confesse I was much troubled to see things goe on there in such a way. For I thought we had beene happily come to an end of those troubles.

X 2

My

My Lord, I have much a doe to read some words in your hand-wrighting, and some things concerning that Kingdome, I understand not. Betweene these two if I mistake any thing, I heartily pray you it may goe *pro non scripto*. And now for Instance, I confesse I doe not well understand what that particular is at which my Lord of St. *Andrewes* checks; but what ever it be, I am sorry his Grace will not privately debate it before it come in publike: Or since he cannot gaine his Commission in Exchequer hee will take a course before the Commission of surrenders that may bee prejudiciall to the Archbishoprick. For I hope hee will not thinke of any advantageous way to particular persons with disadvantage to the publike.

His Majesties intention certainly is, that all mortifications to Bishopricks or other pious uses should have all immunities for the advantage of the Church that may bee had. And if my Lord of Saint *Andrewes*, either by the Commission to which His Majesties hand was gotten, or by valuation before the Commission of surrenders, depart from the good of the Church in the particular of the Priory, I must be sorry for it, but certainly the Kings bounty must not be abused. Only I beseech your Lordship looke carefully to it, that my Lord Arch-Bishop have no prejudice, for it seemes exceeding strange to me, that any thing should be attempted by him in this, that is not pregnantly for the Churches good.

For the Commission of surrenders, you know my opinion of it, and of whom I learn'd it. And I hope before these Letters come to you, you will understand His Majesties pleasure concerning that Commission from the Earle of *Sterling*.

To Your Lordships demands and desires, I give you briefly this answer.

First, I heartily thanke you that you are minded once more in a private way to move my Lord Chancellour to alter his intended course by debate there, or from hence (if there bee any use of me) and I heartily pray you so to doe. And if you think fit, you may tell him, tis my desire as well as yours, For I have not at this time written any one word of this businesse.

Secondly, If the Kings intentions for the laying the foundation of the Cathedrall Church of Saint *Andrewes*, will in this way my Lord Chancellour now takes bee wholly eluded, you must by all good and faire meanes prevent it. And if you cannot so doe it, you must acquaint His Majestie with it before it be too late.

NOTE. Thirdly, I doe hereby heartily pray you to stop all things which come to your knowledge, if you finde the Church prejudged or any thing intended contrary to the generall course introduced in favour of the Church. And I assure my selfe, that His Majestie will thank you for the service.

Lastly, Your Lordship did understand me right, and I am still of opinion, that more care is to bee taken in the settling of all these Church busineses, for the dignitie and advantage of the places themselves. And that course I beseech you hold for those things which come within your power. And yet I shall still desire the present incumbent may be considered also, where it may be without prejudice to the place it selfe in perpetuity.

NOTE. This hath been one of the heaviest Termes that ever I indured, and it seemes you have had troubles enough. The best is, the remembrances which I last put into your hands may stay for times of more leisure, The sicknes increases sorely, yet I cannot get out of London. God blesse you with health in those parts, in which prayers I rest.

Your Lordships loving poore Friend to serve You

Lamb. July 4. 1637.

Will. Cant.

After this on the 23. of *July* the Service Book was to bee read in all Churches of *Edenborough* the chiefe City of that Kingdom, as a president for all the rest; where it found such publike generall opposition by the people, that the designe of reading it was prevented, and the Bishops and others who were to put it in execution, were enforced to give the people good words & promises not to bring in the book among them, till further order for feare of being torn in peeces. The particulars whereof being at large related by others, I shal pretermitt. Vpon tydings of this tumultuous opposition, the Arch-bishop writ this letter to the Earle of *Traguard*, Lord Treasurer of *Scotland*. *August 7. 1637.* concerning Tithes, and it.

NOTE.

August

August 7th 1637.

For the Commission of Tithes I was ever against it in my own Judgment, and there in I agreed with my Lords of St. Andrews and Rosse, since neither of them hath given me sufficient reason, why J should change my minde, yer if the Commission lye a sleepe a while to see what may be said further for it, J thinke tis not amisse. And then if nothing can be said that shall make it appeare more beneficiall to that Church then yet it doth to me, it may be with the better deliberation quire extinguished. The truth is, at least as it appeares to me, in the present use of it, it is made a publicke pretence to privat ends.

My Lord, J thinke you know my opinion how J would have Church-businesse carried, were I as great a Matter of Men, as I thanke God, I am of things. Tis true the Church as well there as else where hath beene overborne by violence both in matter of maintenance, and jurisdiction. But if the Church will recover in either of these the & her Governours must proceed, not as shee was proceeded against, but by a constant temper, she must make the world see she had the wrong, but offer none. And since Law hath followed in that Kingdome, perhaps to make good that which was ill done, yet since a Law it is, such a reformation or restitution would be sought for as might stand with the Law, and some expedient be found out, how the Law may be by some just Exposition helped till the state shall see Cause to abolish it.

Note.

His Majesty takes it very ill that the businesse concerning the stablishment of the Service booke hath beene so weakly caried, and hath great reason to thinke himselfe and his Government dishonoured by the late tumult in Edenborow, July 23. and therefore expects that your Lordship and the rest of the honourable Councell set your selves to it, that the Liturgy may be established orderly and with Peace, to repaire what hath beene done amisse. For his Majesty well knowes the Clergy alone have not power enough to goe through with a businesse of this nature, and therefore is not very well satisfied with them, either for the Omission in that kind, to advise for assistance of his Lords Councell, or for the preparation, or way they tooke. For certainly the publication a weeke before, that on the next Sunday the prayers according to the Liturgy should be read in all the Churches of Edenborow, was upon the matter to give those that were ill affected to the service, time to communicate their thoughts, and to premeditate, and provide against it, as it is most apparent they did.

Note.

Nor is his Majesty well satisfied with the Clergy, that they which are in authority were not advertised, that they might attend the countenancing of such a service, so much tending to the honour of God and the King. And I am verily perswaded if that accident of the marriage of your Kinsman had not carryed your Lordship out of the City that day, some things would not have beene altogether so bad, and my Lord privy seale would have had the better assistance.

Neither was this the best Act that ever they did to send away their letters apart without acquainting the Councell, that their advertisements might have come by the same Messenger, together with their joynt advise, which way was best to punish the Offenders, at least the prime and chiefe of them, and which to prevent the like disorders. And after so long time of preparation to be to seeke who should read the service is more then strange to me, unlesse they think such a businesse can do it selfe, but his Majesty out of his piety and wisdom gave (by the Messenger which the Bishops sent) such full directions both to the Lords of the Councell, and the Lords of the Clergy, as I hope will settle the businesse from further trouble. But the Proclamation, which you have now sent up to the King, I have not yet seene.

Of all the rest, the weakest part was, the interdicting of all Divine service, till his Majesties pleasure was further known. And this, as also the giving warning of the publishing, his Majesty at the first reading of the letters and report of the Fact, checked at, and commanded me to write so much to my Lord of Saint Andrews, which I did at, and your Lordship at the Councell, July 24. spake very worthily against the interdicting of the service. For that were in effect as much as to disclaime the work, or to give way to the insolency of the baser multitude, and his Majesty hath commanded me to thank you for it in his name. But the disclayming the Book as any Act of theirs, but as it was his Majesties command, was most unworthy. Tis most true the King commanded

Note.

Note.

ded a Liturgy & it was time they had one. They did not like to admit of ours, but thought it more reputation for them (as indeed it was) to compile one of their own, yet as neere as might be, and they have done it well: will they now cast downe the milke they have given, because a few Milke-maids have scolded at them? I hope they will be better advised: certainly they were very ill advised, when they spake thus at the Councell board. But my Lord of this there was not one word in the letter. So I hope they have done with that.

W. Cam.

Vpon this Letter, the designe of imposing the Service-Booke was more strenuously prosecuted then before, and divers Ministers were enjoyned to read it by a certain day in their Churches under paine of Horning; and the Bayliffes of Edinborough were so terrified and wrote upon by the Lord Treasurer and Councell, that they writ this submissive Letter to the Archbishop thus superscribed.

To the most Reverend Father in God and our very honourable good Lord, the Archbishop of Canterbury his Grace, Primate and Metropolitane of all England, these: The originall whereof is thus Indorsed with the Archbishops owne hand. Rece. September 1, 1637. From the City of Edenborough: Their readinesse to receive the Liturgy.

Most Reverend Father in God, and our very good Lord.

WEE regreive from our hearts that tumult which did fall out in our Churches that day of the imbringing of the Service Book. Wherin now these of His Majesties Councell, who has laboured the tryall thereof, will give testimony of our innocency; since that time and rinsing of his Majesties Councell in this seriall time we have dayly concurred with our ordiner and our Ministry for settling of that Service, as the Right Honorable the Earl of Traquair L. Treasurer with the Bishops of Galloway and Dunbleane will beare witnesse, Who has spared neither paines nor attendance to bring that purpose to any good conclusion; and although the poverty of this City be great, being almost exhausted with publick and common works, yet we have not bin inlacking to offer good meanes above our power, to such as should undertake that service, and in all things wherein we have bin required, wee have ever bin ready really to approve our selves obedient and loyall Subjects to his Majesty in all his Royall Commandements, which we have vowed ever to second to our lives end. And we being infinitely obliged to your Graces favour, Wee now presumed by these lynes to give your Grace that assurance of obedience upon our part, in this purpose and in all other purposes wherein we may contribute to the advancement of His Majesties service, as can be expected of good Subjects. Whereof if His Majesty by your Grace shall be pleased to rest assured, what things any other shall suggest, we will accept it from you as ane great accumulation of favour; for all which your Grace shall ever find us most thankfull remembrancers, and most ready really to expresse our thankfulness, when ever we shall be made so happy as your Grace shall have occasion to use our service. Thus from our hearts wishing you all happinesse, we kisse your Graces hand

Eden. this 19th of
August 1637.

Your Graces most affectioned and humble
Servants, the Bayliffes of Eden.

I: Cochrane Bayliffe. Al. Linfie Bayliffe.
I. Smyth Bayliffe. C: Hammliton Bayliffe.

But notwithstanding this submission of the Bayliffes of Edenborough, yet most of the Ministers and People strenuously opposed the Service-booke, and presented divers Petitions to the Lords of secret Councell against it; whereof this was one of the principall, presented to them August 23, 1637, containing some reasons against receiving the Booke.

MY Lords of secret Councell, Vnto your Lordships humbly meaues and shews; We your subjects Master Alexander Henderson Minister at Lenchars, Master George Hamilton Minister at Newbourne, and Master James Bruce Minister at Kings-Barnes That where we were required of late by the Moderator of our Presbytery to receive two Copies of the new Booke of Common Prayer, and declaring our selves willing each of us to receive any of the sayd Bookes to read, that wee might know what it contained before we could promise to practise it; Alleadging that in the matters of Gods worship we were not bound to blinde obedience. It was refused

refused by us and taken out of some of our hands; And yet we are now charged with Letters of horning Decreed be your Lordships, upon a narrative that we have refused the sayd Bookes out of curiosity and singularity. To provide each one of us two of the sayd Bookes for the use of our Paroches; Which hath made us, who were never before acquainted with any charge from Authority, and knowing no other way so just and voyd of offence, to have recourse to your Lordships; Most humbly entreating, that the charge may bee suspended for the reasons following. First, Because this Book is neither warranted by the authority of the generall Assembly, which are the Representative Kirke of this Kingdom, & hath ever since the Reformation given direction in matters of Gods Worship, nor by any Act of Parliament, which in things of this kinde, hath ever bin thought necessary by his Majesty and the Estates. Secondly, Because the liberties of the true Kirke, and the forme of Worship and Religion received at the Reformation, and universally practised since, were warranted by the Acts of the general Assemblies and divers Acts of Parliament; specially of the Parliament 1567, and the late Parliament 1633. Thirdly, The Kirke of *Scotland* is a free and Independent Kirke, and her owne Pastors should be most able to discern, and direct what doth best beseme our measure of Reformation, and what may serve most for the good of the people. Fourthly, It is not unknowne to your Lordships, what disputing, division, and trouble hath beene in this Kirke, about some few of the maine Ceremonies contained in this Booke, which being examined (as we shall be ready, a comperent time being assigned by your Lordships to shew) will bee found to depart farre from the forme of worship & Reformation of this Kirk, and in points most materiall to do all neer to the Kirke of *Rome*; which for her Heresies in Doctrine, Superstition, and Idolatry in worship, tyranny in government, and wickednesse every way, is als Antichristian now as when we came out of her. Fifthly, The people have been otherwise taught by us, and by our Predecessors in our places, ever since the Reformation, and so it is likely they will be found unwilling to the change, when they shall be assayed, even where their Pastors are willing. In respect whereof, The sayds Letters of horning whole effect and execution thereof, ought to be suspended simpliciter in time coming. Therefore we beseech your Lordships, that we may have Letters Direct, charging the persons who have caused vse this charge against us, to compeir personally, bring, and produce the sayd Letters of horning, with the executions and indorations thereof before your Lordships at a certaine day, to be seene and considered of. And in the mean time to suspend them, And your Lordships Answer.

Note.

The Copy of this Petition was sent up to *London* to the Archbishop, together with the Answer of the Bishop of *Rosse* thereunto; who received both of them September 5, 1637. as appears by the endoriments under his own hand.

The Answer to this Petition was as followeth.

A short Answer to the Petition of the Ministers given in to the Lords of His Majesties Councell the 23 of August, 1637.

THE Narrative of the Petition concerning the Moderator of the Exercise, His carriage, as we heare is false: and where they pretend that they knew not what was in the Booke, it appears by their many objections and exceptions they object and except against it, in all parts of it almost, that they are too well versed in it, but abuse it pitifully.

To the first reason it may be truly replied, That not the generall Assembly, which consists of a multitude, but the Bishops having authority to governe in the Church, are the representative Church of the Kingdom. And that the matters of Worship, if they understand thereby, the formes of Confession, Prayers, celebration of Baptisme, and the Lords Supper, &c. were committed in the time to some few Ministers, not exceeding the number of Seven, as is cleare by the Psalme Booke, that beares the number of the approvers. Whereas this Booke of Common Prayer committed in the Assembly of *Aberdene*, Anno 1616. to some three or foure that since are deceased, hath been revived and approved by the Bishops.

Note.

The second reason is untrue, that which they call the forme of Worship, was never established by Act of Parliament. The confession of Faith was in Anno 1567. ratified

Note.

ratified, and the same often repeated since; But not the Booke of Prayers and Psalmes.

Note.

Thirdly, That the Church of Scotland is a free and Independent Church, none doth question: And it is her own Pastors (for that title in all antiquity was given to Bishops only) that have judged this forme to be most for the good of the people. As to the measure of Reformation they speake of, it is well, that they grant it to be a measure, for other whiles they thinke it absolute and perfect.

The fourth reason reflects upon themselves, that have stood out so rebelliously against the Ceremonies concluded by the Church, and ratified in Parliament. And for the rest contained in this Book, not received as yet in this Church that which is set downe in the preface, might have sufficed to convict them. They will never be able, do what they can to prove the same, or any thing in it to be either Superstitious or Idolatrous; yea we dare to say, it is one of the most Orthodox and perfect Liturgies in the Christian Church.

Note.

For the fifth, If they have taught the people, that the forme contained in the old Psalme Bookes, is the only forme of Worship, they have taught falsely. And it may be justly asked, if this was the onely true forme; why did not they themselves keep to it, but did use other Prayers, and other formes then are prescribed in the Booke, both in Marriage, Baptisme, Celebration of the Lords Supper, Visitation of the Sick, &c. As to the unwillingnesse of people, so many as are led by them, and carried by their Seditious and turbulent Sermons, will perhaps run their wayes to their owne destruction: But good and well-disposed people, will still obey God, the King, and other powers subordinate to him.

By this Answer you may discern what power the Scottish Bishops arrogated to themselves, through *Canterburies* encouragement, even more then to a generall Assembly.

September 4. 1637. The Archbishop writ this branch of a Letter to the Archbishop of Saint Andrews concerning the tumult in Edinburgh, and new pressing of the Service Booke, in answer of his Letter received from thence August 11, 1637. as appears by the Endorcement under his owne hand.

Touching the tumult, I can say no more than I have already. And for the casting of any fault upon your Grace, and the rest of your Brethren, as if the thing were done precipitately: I think few men will believe that. But that which is thought here, is, that though you took advice among your selves, yet the whole body of the Councell was not acquainted with all your Determinations, nor their advice taken, nor their Power called in for assistance, till it was too late. And that after the thing was done, you consulted apart, and sent up to the King without calling a Councell, or joyning the Lay-Lords with you: whereas all was little enough in a businesse of this nature, and so much opposed by some factious men gathered (it seems) purposely together at Edinburgh to disturbe this businesse. And indeed my Lord, you could not in this particular have ingag'd the Lay-Lords too far. And if any Lord here spake too much when he thought the service might have bin received throughout all that Kingdome in one day, I hope your Grace falls as much too short on the other side. For I hope it will be settled in far lesse time than 7. years.

Note.

And whereas you write, that the fault is most in your Ministers; I easily believe that to be true: But then they should have bin dealt withall before hand and made plyable, especially in Edenborow, or els some others appointed in the roome of such as disliked. And since your Grace is of opinion, that a sharper course would do more good, and that you would have taken such with Master Ramsey, if my Lords had not alier'd your opinion. His Majesty leaves you to take that course both with him and others, as you shall finde fittest for his service, and the Churches. And for the Postscript, I am sorry as well as you for Master Rollock, and that is all I have to say of him. So desiring God to blesse you through these troubles, I leave you, &c.

Septemb. 4. 1637.

Will. Cant.

On the 11. of September 1637, the Archbishop writ another Letter to the Lord of Traquayre; Part whereof concerning the Scottish Liturgy I have here inserted, discovering how zealous and active his little Grace was in it.

My

My very good Lord,

I Have received your Letters of *Aug. 20.* And am very glad to read in them that mine came safe to you by your servant: For the businesse, I had some little inkling given me by my *L. Sterling* about the stay of the service: But till I read your Letter, I did not believe it possible that way should be given to an Interdiction, especially considering how strongly you had ever opposed it; and withall how weak, and uncounsellable (at least in my judgement) the thing it selfe was. For they could not but fore-see, that that course would adde a great deale of heartning and encouragement to the Puritan Party. And therefore tis no wonder, if such Lords and others as were ill-affected to the *Lyturgy*, were easie in giving way to that Counsell, which they could not but see would advance to their own ends. But that my Lord of Rosse should give the advice, and my *L. of St Andrews* follow it with such stiffness, may be a wonder to any man that knowes them, and the businesse.

Note.

My Lord of St Andrews hath lately writtento me, that my Lord of Rosse was gone into his Diocesse. But for my part, I did not think that all the rest would have gone away and left the businesse: For they cannot but think that the adverse part would make use of the present time to put further difficulties upon the work; And therefore they should have been as carefull to uphold it, my Lord of Rosse especially, whose hand hath been as much in it as the most: But since they are gone, His Majesty takes it extremely well from my Lords of Edenborow, Galloway, and Dunblane, that they stay and attend the businesse as well as they can: But he hath expresly commanded me to give your Lordship thanks for staying with them, and keeping them so well in heart: For as the businesse is now foyled, if you doe not stick close to Gods and the Kings service in it, it will certainly suffer more then is fit it should.

Note

His Majesty likewise takes it exceeding well from your Lordship, that you have dealt with the City of Edenborow for maintenance for such as shall take upon them to read the *Lyturgy*: And takes it as well from the City it selfe, from whom I have received a very faire and discreet Letter, which I have shewed his Majesty, and writ the City an Answer by this Returne, and given them His Majesties thanks, which indeed hee commanded mee to doe very heartily: And in truth they deserve it, especially as the times stand.

As for the Ministers of Edenborow, I know the refusall of Mr Ramsay, and Mr Rollock: But that any other of them stuck at it, or that any Bishops seeme not to be forward, is more then I heard till now: But for that of Mr Ramsay, or any of the Bishops that would have somewhat amended, if that should be yeilded unto now (unlesse they should be able to give such reason against it, as I know they cannot) it would mightily dishonour the King, who to my knowledge hath carefully lookt over, and approved every word in this *Lyturgy*: And I doubt, it would utterly destroy the service it selfe: For while one man out of a humour dislikes one thing, and another another, by that time every mans dislike were satisfied, I doubt there would be but little left to serve God with: Besides, it is not improbable but that some men would bee as earnest to have the selfe same thing kept in, which others would so fine thrust out, what ere it bee: And that may make it grow up into a formall contestation upon some particulars, and quite distemper the service. But whereas you write that some Bishops speake plainly, that if their Opinions had been craved, they would have advised the amending of some thing: Truly for that, and in that way I would withall my heart they had seene it: And why my Lord of St Andrews and they which were trusted by the King, did not discreetly acquaint every Bishop with it, considering that every Bishop must be used in their severall Diocesses, I know no reason; and sure I am, there was no prohibition upon them. And since I heare from others that some exception is taken, because there is more in that *Lyturgy* in some few particulars, then is in the *Lyturgy* in England, why did they not then admit the *Lyturgy* of England without more adoe? But by their refusall of that, and the dislike of this, 'tis more then manifest they would have neither, perhaps none at all, were they left to themselves: But my Lord to your selfe only, and in your care; a great favour you should doe mee, if you will get my Lord of Galloway to set me down in brieve Propositions without any further discourse, all the exceptions that are taken against the *Lyturgy* by Ramsay, Rollock, or any others, and I could

Note,

be content to know which the Bishops are, which would have amended something, had they been advised with, and what that is which they would have so amended, &c.

Sept. 11. 1637.

Will. Cant.

After this, divers *Treatises* written against the *Service-Book* in Scotland, were sent thence to the Arch-bishop; foure whereof he received thence October 12. 1637. as appears by their Indorsements with his own hand, with which I shall not trouble the Reader; the substance of all of them being long since printed.

From this time till about June 1638. the businesse of the *Service-Book* was carried on and pressed by the Arch-bishops meanes, with sundry rigid and terrifying Proclamations; which not prevailing, what desperate counsels and resolutions werethereupon taken up, and by whose advise, these ensuing passages in some *Iesuites Letters*, written from hence (in French) to their *Superior* and other Iesuits at *Paris* (which Iesuits were more privie to our Counsels and designs, then most of the Privie-Councell themselves, as their Letters intimate) will best informe us. These Letters by some meanes or other came to Secretary *Windebanks* hands, among whose papers I found the Originals themselves; out of which I have translated these ensuing clauses.

One of the Letters was thus superscribed, in French, *Au R. Pere P. Gasper Segnison, SUPERIOR de la Maison professe de la COM. DE IESUS, A PARIS*; it beares date the 28. of June 1638. wherein he writes thus in French, out of which I have faithfully translated it.

My Reverend Father,

I have not been at London five dayes in all since I came from France, else I had not failed to salute your Reverence, &c. I have treated with Father Provinciall touching a succeſſion, but he saith there is some body who hinders the Father Generall, that he cannot at all resolve himselfe as yet to send one; but as soon as he shall have resolved, he hath one which he will design for this place; but he speakes not one syllable who it is, and I have not at all demanded it. For my selfe, I continue the design for Italy, as soon as the time and season shall be proper, but I know not whether I shall passe by Paris as I go, &c. I know not what to say of Mortimer, the Superior of Scotland, as knowing not whether he hath leave to goe or not, nor yet their Procurer who resides in this Court; for the Generall hath given no answer to the reply which Mortimer hath made. The Country there is in a very ill posture, and in evident danger to sever it selfe from this Crown.

June. 28.

Your most humble and obliged servant,
G. T.

This Iesuite sent another Letter with this form, writ in French, without any superscription, containing a full relation of the Scottish troubles and proceedings, to another Iesuite (as I suppose) in which there is this memorable clause, containing a resolution here taken to subdue the Scots by force, the Counsellors names, who gave this advice, and the instruments to be used in this service, to wit, the *Irish*, because they durst not trust the *English*.

Sir, &c.

BY all these proceedings the King evidently seeth, that they (the Scots) wil not submit themselves to reason by fairnes or sweetnes; and therefore he hath taken a resolution, to tame them by force, and to this purpose goeth about to raise an Army in Ireland, not daring to trust himselfe with the English; who already are much irritated against him, by reason of the monies which he pretends to raise to maintain his Fleet, the which they refuse down right to pay. This Councell of raising an Army, hath been suggested unto him by the
Bishop

Note.

Bishop of Canterb. and the President of Ireland; the which are they alone that govern him, so he hath never yet opened his mouth, or spoken one sole word of it to his Councell of State, but seeks very much to keep* all close from them; The which highly displeaseth all these Lords, and men hold this Councell of the Army for Ireland a most pernicious Councell. But I know not what better he could take, for it is most dangerous to raise it in England, where all the world is discontent; and for to raise an Army here, it were to give them the sword in their hands to defend themselves; for the part of the Puritans is so great, and they have such a correspondence with the Scots, that they begin already to break the Altars which the Bishops had erected, and to accuse the Bishops of crimes, and to demand the re-establishment of many silenced Ministers, with a thousand other insolencies, &c.

Nota.

Yet this Jesuite knowes all the plot and secrets of it, though the Councell did not.

Nota.

This 28. of Iune.

Your most humble and most obliged
servant, G. T.

The same Jesuite writ another Letter in French of the same date, with this superscription; *A Messieur, Messieur La mach*: wherein, after a pretty large relation of the Scottish affaires, he hath this clause, somewhat suteable to the former.

They (to wit, the Scots) will first of all have a free and full Parliament: they will have a reformation of their own Church, and likewise of the Church of England. They will that the King resideth 6. months in their Country; they will have the Archbishop of Canterbury as their prisoner; they will banish Monsieur Con. which they call the Man of the Pope; they demand the banishment of the Catholikes there; this is that they demand.

Nota.

The King hath never yet opened his mouth to his Counsell of these affaires, neither hath hee consulted with any soule living hereupon, but the Bishop of Canterbury; and forasmuch as I can learne, all their counsell tendeth to this, that there must be an Army raised in Ireland, to tame these Rebels, the which Counsell men of State hold farre more dangerous; and so it is feared that they may call the Palatine in for their King.

Nota.

This 28. of Iune.

Your most humble and affectionate
servant, G. T.

There was another Letter of the same date writ to one Monsieur Ford at Paris, by another Priest or Jesuite, (as I conceive) but certainly a Papist, wherein there are these Passages.

My Deare, &c.

Our Scots businesse troubles us shrewdly, and growes worse and worse; they will have a Parliament, and the King, for the consequence of it in this Kingdom, will never permit it; and so they have taken a resolution to leavie an Army in Ireland, so to trouble them and subdue them; which is held here by wise men, to be a very desperate Counsell: But the King counsels NONE BUT THE ARCHBISHOP AND THE DEPUTY of Ireland, which disgusts all; and makes men see more weaknesse in him then was ever imagined. Other newes we have none. Fitton (the Agent for the secular Priests at Rome) is here, and was presented to the King by my Lord Arundel, to whom he had sent from Italy many little toys, but now he knowes he is a Priest. I pray you tell my deare Amiable, I thank him heartily for his note, and have seene his man Jaques Depuis, who is a good cutter or graver in stone, and continues Catholike, honest, and known to the Capucins.

Nota.

This 28. Iune.

Yours as you know,
W. Hoill.

(A Postscript.)

This Letter to Iohn Foord is monstrable TO FATHER SUPERIOUR,
because you must give him one inclosed from me.

This very Postscript makes me beleeve both Hoill and Foord to be Jesuites.

Y 2

How

* Pag. 8, 9, 13.
to 25.

How active and industrious both the *English* and *Scottish* Jesuites were in formenting the *Scottish* Commotions, Warres, upon what termes and designs the Papists promised the King their assistance in those warres, refusing to ayde him therein, except he would grant them a freetoleration of their Religion, *yea resolving to poyson him with an Italian fuge*, in case he condescended not to their demands; and to seize upon the Princes person, and traine him up in their Religion, you may read at large in my * *Romes Master-piece*, from the discovery of one who was sent from *Rome* by *Cardinall Barbarino* into *England* to assist *Con* the *Popes Nuncio*, and privie to the whole Plot, which he revealed out of conscience. How forwards the *Irish* Papists were to assist the King and Prelates, in this unnaturall warre against the *Scots*; and what large contributions they gave towards the maintenance of the Warre, by the instigation of *Sir Toby Matthewes* (a Jesuite) who went over with the Lord Deputy *Wentworth* into *Ireland* for this purpose, to animate and stirre up the Popish party there, to this Pontificall and Prelaticall warre, their Subsidies there granted in Parliament 1639. and the Prologue thereunto, with the *Rise and Progresse of the Irish Rebellion* published by Authority of Parliament, will sufficiently demonstrate, to justifie the Jesuites forementioned Letters, and intelligence to be no fancie, but a reall verity.

How the Arch-bishop carried on this designe of the warre against the *Scots* in *England*, I shall give you a brief account out of his own, *Sir John Lambs*, and Secretary *Windebankes* Papers.

The 9. of September, 1638. The Arch-bishop received from some great man in *Scotland* a paper thus indorsed with his own hand. 1. *That the Garrisons ought to be kept at Barwick and Carlile*: First, for Defence: secondly, for Nurceries. 3. *That the Affaires of Scotland ought not to be kept so reserved from the Councell of England*. And the paper begins thus: *That the Scottish have a great desire to ruine 1638.* (a Character for the Arch-bishop) *you need not doubt it, &c. I beseech your Lordship not to over-charge your selfe by writing to me but at your best leisure, &c.* After which he advised the keeping of Garrisons at *Barwick* and *Carlile* &c.

In December, the Arch-bishop received this paper from *Sir John Burrowes* thus indorsed with the Bishops own hand: *Rece. Decemb. 31. 1638. Sir John Burrowes: A briefe Note out of the Records, what the King may doe for raising of men in case of a warre with Scotland.*

Observations concerning warre with Scotland, out of Records.

Such Lords and others as had lands and livings upon the Borders, were commanded to reside there, with their retinue.

Those that had Castles neare the Borders, were enjoyned to fortifie them.

The Lords of the Kingdome were summoned by writ to attend the Kings Army with Horse and Armour at a certaine time and place, according to their service due to the King: or to repaire to the Exchequer before that day, there to make Fine for their said service.

So were all Widowes Dowagers of such Lords as were deceased.

So were all Bishops and Ecclesiasticall persons.

Proclamations were likewise made by the Sheriffs in every County, that all men holding of the King by knights service or sergeancy, should come to the Kings Army, or make Fine as aforesaid: with a strickt command that none should conceale their service under a great penalty:

Like Proclamations were made, that all men having 40.l. land by the yeare, should come to the Kings Army with Horse and Armour.

The Earle Marshall made a Roll, and entred the appearance of all such as came and tendred their service.

If any failed to come, or to make Fine, their Lands, Tenements, Goods, and Chattels, were distrayned by the Sheriffe upon summons out of the Exchequer.

If any pleaded, that he had attended, he was discharged upon certificate out of the Marshalls Roll, testifying that he had done his service.

If any being come, did depart before the warre ended, their Lands, Tenements, Goods, and Chattles were seized untill they had made Fine, or the King had pardoned their offence.

Commissions went out for levying of men in every County, and bringing them to the Kings Army.

Like Commissions were made for mustering and arraying the Clergy throughout England.

Commissions were likewise issued to enquire and punish all Bayliffs, and other Officers, that for reward had suffered Souldiers to depart before they came to the Kings Army.

The King appointed certaine Captaines in such Counties as bordered upon Scotland, to levie able men in those Counties, and to bring them with their Horse and Armes to the Kings Army.

Those of the bordering shires were commanded to be ready at eight dayes warning, to come unto the Kings Army well armed: and Commissions were made for punishing such as refused.

Writs were sent into severall Counties for certifying the King what number of Horse and Foot every County could afford him in his warres of Scotland.

The Clergy of England furnished the King with a proportion of armed men.

The Ports were summoned to attend with their service of shipping.

The Constable of Dover Castle was commanded to guard the Ports, lest any by coming in, or going out there, should bring danger to the Kingdome.

The Sheriffs of Counties were commanded by writ to make provisions of corne and victuals for the Kings Army, and to cause them to be carried to the place appointed.

Writs also were sent to divers Townes of England and Ireland, commanding all Merchants to bring provisions to the Kings Army.

Ships of the Subject were taken up for transporting those provisions to a place assigned.

Inhibitions were made, that no victuals or other munition should be transported beyond the Seas during the warre.

Divers Subsidies and Fifteens granted to the King by the Subject towards the war.

Merchants strangers gave the King ayde of money towards the warres of Scotland, and lent him divers summes.

Those of Wales furnished the King with a proportion of money toward the war.

The Lords and Clergy of Ireland were required to contribute toward the war.

The King suspended the payment of his debts for a certaine time, in regard of the great occasions he had to use money in the warres of Scotland. Note that no particular Records were cited or produced to warrant the Premises.

In January he received another Paper from him, which he thus indorseth with his owne hand: *Rece. Ian. 29. what was fit to be done in point of danger from the Scots, Sir Jo. Barrowes.*

When Warre was intended against Scotland, three things were
heretofore taken into speciall care.

First, how to raise Horse and Foot, Victuals, Ammunition, Money, and other necessities for that service.

Secondly, how to secure the Seas and Sea coasts of the Kingdome, from danger of forraigne attempts, while the Kings forces were employed in those Northern parts.

Thirdly, how to provide for the preservation of the peace of the kingdome within it selfe, against riots, mutinies, and rebellions whereunto ill conditioned and desperate persons at such times are easily moved.

The first of these hath already in some speciall points been expressed.

For the second, touching the guard of the Seas, sufficient provision is made by the late course taken. And

And for securing the Sea coasts,

1. The Forts neare the Sea were fortified and furnished with men and munition.
2. All persons that had possessions and estates in maritime Counties, were commanded by Proclamation to reside there, with their families and retinues.
3. Beacons were erected in all fitting places.
4. Certaine light Horse were appointed by the Country to watch along the Sea coasts, to give advertisement if danger appeared.
5. All able men of those Counties were commanded to be sufficiently armed and trained, and put into Companies and Bands under certaine Leaders, who were to be commanded by some one Generall appointed by the King.

Concerning the peace of the Kingdome.

1. All conventicles and secret meetings were straightly forbidden by Proclamation, and parties offending severely punished.
2. All spreaders of Rumours, and tale-bearers were by Proclamation commanded to be taken and imprisoned.
3. All able men between 16 and 60 yeares of age in every shire were commanded to be sufficiently armed and trained, and to obey such Generals as the King appointed.
4. Such as were not able in body to beare Arms, but had Estates, were to maintaine at their charges such able men as were appointed in their roomes.

The very same day the Archbishop procures this ensuing warrant from the Councell Table to himselfe and the *Archbishop of York*, to write letters to all the Bishops within their severall Diocesse, to summon their Clergy before them, to excite them to a liberall contribution against the Scots.

At White Hall the 29. of January, 1638.

IT was this day ordered by his Majesty sitting in Councell, That the Lords Archbishops of *Canterbury* and *York* their Graces should be hereby required and commanded to write their letters to all the Lords Bishops in their severall Provinces respectively, forthwith to convene before them all the Clergy of ability in their Diocesses; and to incite them by such wayes and meanes as shall be thought best by their Lordships, to ayd and assist his Majesty with their speedy and liberall contributions, or otherwise, for the defence of his Royall Person, and of this Kingdome, against the seditious attempts of some in *Scotland*. And that the same bee sent to the Lord Treasurer of *England* with all diligence.

Tho. Coventry C. S. Guilliel. London, H. Manchester, J. Lenox, Lindsey, Arundel & Surrey, Dorset, Pembroke & Montgomery, Holland, Fra. Cottington, H. Vane, J. Coke, Fran. Windebanke.

But doubting of the validity of this warrant for such a contribution, he of late procured this warrant written with his owne hand (antedated two dayes before the Councell Table Order) to be signed by his Majesty, to help him at a pinch.

Charles Rex.

Note.

Canterbury, I require you to write your Letters to your Brethren the Bishops, for a contribution of the Clergie towards my affaires with my Scottisb Subjects, as was done in my Fathers time for the Palatinate. And for your so doing this shall be your warrant.

Jan. 27. 1638.

That

That this Warrant was since forged by him, to which he procured the Kings hand, is apparant, not only by the freshnesse of the inke, but by the very Letter he writ to the Bishops of his Province to set on this Contribution, dated the last of *January*: which mentions only the *Lords Order*, but not one syllable of this Warrant of the King; which, if reall, he would have recited in the first place: His Letters were all of this forme, two whereof I have signed with his own hand; and thus endorsed; *A Copy of those Letters which by warrant from the Lords, I wrote to the severall Bishops within my Province, &c. in the businesse of Scotland.*

My very good Lord.

I Have received an Order from the Lords of his Majesties most Honorable Privie-Councell, giving me notice of the great preparations made by some in *Scotland*, both of Armes, and all other necessaries for Warre. And that this can have no other end then to invade, or annoy this his Majesties Kingdome of *England*: For his Majesty, having a good while since most graciously yeelded to their demands for securing the Religion by Law established amongst them, hath made it appeare to the World, That it is not Religion, but Sedition that stirres in them, and fills them with this most irreligious disobedience, which at last breaks forth into a high degree of Treason against their Lawfull Sovereign. In this case of so great danger, both to the State and Church of *England*, your Lordship, I doubt not, and your Clergy under you, will not only be vigilant against the close workings of any Pretenders in that kinde, but very free also to your power and proportion of meanes left to the Church, to contribute towards the raising of such an Army, as, by Gods blessing, and his Majesties care, may secure this Church and Kingdome from all intended violence. And according to the Order sent unto me by the Lords (a Copy whereof you shall herewith receive:) these are to pray your Lordship to give a good example in your own person; And withall convenient speed to call your Clergy and the abler Schoole-Masters (as well those which are in peculiars, as others) and excite them by your self, or such Commissioners as you will answer for, to contribute to this great and necessary service, in which, if they give not a good example, they will be much to blame. But you are to call no poore Curats, nor Stipendaries, but such as in other legall wayes of payment have been and are by Order of Law bound to pay. The proportion I know not well how to prescribe to you, but I hope they of your Clergy, whom God hath blessed with better Estates then ordinary, will give freely, and thereby help the want of meanes in others: And I hope also your Lordship will so order it, as that every man will at the least give after the proportion of three shillings tenne pence in the pound of the valuation of his living, or other preferment, in the Kings Books. And this, I thought fit to let you further know, That if any men have double Benefices, or a Benefice and a Prebende, or the like, in divers Diocesses; yet your Lordship must call upon them onely for such preferments as they have within your Diocese, and leave them to pay for any other which they hold, to that Bishop in whose Diocese their other preferments are. As for the time, your Lordship must use all the diligence you can, and send up the moneys, if it be possible, by the first of *May* next: And for your Indemnity, the Lord Treasurer is commanded to give you such discharge, by striking a Talley, or Talleys upon your severall payments into the Exchequer, as shall be fit to secure you without your charge: And of this service you must not faile. So to Gods blessed protection I leave you, and rest

Lambeth, Januar.

ult. 1638.

Your Lordships very loving Friend and Brother
W. Cant.

Your Lordships must further be pleased to send up a List of the names of such as refuse this service within your Diocese; but I hope none will put you to that trouble.

It is expected that your Lordship, and every other Bishop, expresse by it selfe, and not in the generall sum of his Clergy, that which himselfe gives.

On

Note.

Note.

Note.

Note.

On the eleventh of *February* 1638. he wrot this Letter to Sir *John Lamb* (his creature) Deane of the Arches, for a Contribution among the *Doctors* of the Law at *Doctors Commons* and elsewhere without Warrant; the Originall whereof I found among Sir *John Lambes* sequestred writings, together with the first draught of it with the Archbishops owne hand-writing.

After my hearty Commendations, &c.

I Have received a Warrant from the Lords of His Majesties most honourable Privie-Councell, which requires me to write to all the Bishops in my Province, to call their Clergy together, and put them in minde of the great danger which this Kingdome is in, by the Trayterous Conspiracies of some ill-affected in *Scotland*: These seditious persons have begun and continued hitherto their foule Disloyalty under the pretence of Religion, which by factious spirits in all times is made the cloak to cover and hide (if it might be) their designs. But now it appeares clearly to the State that they daily strengthen themselves by Armes and Munition and other preparations for Warre: And though his Majesty hath graciously condescended to more then they could justly aske in all things concerning their Religion and their Lawes, yet they goe on still, and are satisfied with nothing but their Rebellious Disobedience, and have no lesse ayme then to invade or annoy *England*. The Letters to the severall Bishops, I have sent as I was commanded, and I doubt not but they and the Clergy in generall will give very freely, towards this great and necessary defence of the Kingdome. And because this great and common danger cannot be kept off, but by a common defence; and for that the Reverend Judges and others of the Common-Law have bountifully expressed themselves already; I am required to write to you also, that you calling to you the rest of the Doctors of the Commons, propose to them now while most of them are together, this great and waightry businesse belonging as much to their defence as to other men: and let every man set downe what hee will give to this service; When this is done, I will acquaint his Majestie with it, and yours and their forwardnesse herein: And it is expected that you hasten this with all convenient speed. So to Gods blessed protection I leave you and rest

Lambeth Feb. 11.

1638.

Your very loving friend,
W. Cant.

You must send to such Chancellours and Officialls as are not at the Commons, but at their severall Residences: And if you give them a good example here, I doubt not but they will follow it.

You shall not need to call Sir *H. Martin*, for his Majesty will send to him himselve, and looks for a greater summe then in an ordinary way.

Upon these Letters of the Archbishop, the Bishops in each Diocese summoned their Clergie before them, exhorted them by publique speeches, to a liberall contribution against the Scottish Rebels (as they stiled them) and Dr. Pierce Bishop of Bath and Wells, among other Motives, used this as a very effectuall one to excite his Clergy to an extraordinary liberality towards the maintenance of this War, because it was * *BELLUM EPISCOPALE*, an *Episcopall War* (raised by them, and for the Bishops, to support their Lordly Power and Pomp) hee might have added, that it was *Bellum Pontificale* too, which made the Papists contribute as largely towards it as the Prelates.

* The Antipathy of the English Lordly Prelacy, &c. par. 2. ch. 6.

What the Totall of the Clergies Contributions amounted to, you may conjecture by these particulars found among the Archbishops Papers.

The Contribution of the Clergy in the Diocese of Canterbury, as appears by Mr. William Cranmers Account, An. 1639. amounted to	534. l. 5. s. 3. d.	Lincoln dioces, in Bedford	315. l. 19. s. 6. d.
Of the Dean and Prebends of the Cathedral of Canterbury	300. l.	In the Archdeaconry of St. Albans	
Bangor Diocese	192. l. 8. s. 8. d.	in Hertfordshire	72. l. 12. s. 4. d.
Bristol Diocese	714. l. 11. s. 8. d.	In the Archdeaconry of Huntingdon	209. l. 14. s. 6. d.
Chichester Diocese	985. l. 16. s.	Norwich Dioces in the Arceaconry of	
Ely Diocese	764. l. 8. s.	Norwich and Norfolk	1094. l. 16. s. 8. d.
Glocester Diocese	566. l. 7. s. 5. d.	In the Archdeaconry of Suffolk and Sudbury	921. l. 19. s. 9. d.
Hereford Diocese	662. l. 1. s. 3. d.	Winchester Diocese	1305. l. 5. s. 8. d.
		Worcester Diocese	624. l. 19. s. 7. d.
		The Dean and Chapt. of Windsor	200. l.

What was contributed in other Diocesses, I finde not among his Papers, but in all these forementioned, every particular Clergy-mans contribution is specified by Name, and the Names of those who refused, or were unable to contribute, were specially certified, and returned to the Archbishop.

The contribution of the Doctors of the Civil Law at Doctors Commons, as appears by severall Notes under Sir Iohn Lambs own hand, found among his Writings, amounts to—671. l. 13. s. 4. d. paid in besides remains.

What sums were paid into the Exchequer by the Archbishop himself upon this Collection, will appear by this Extract out of the Pell, in the Receipts of the Exchequer.

In Pelle Recept. Termino Mich. An. R. Caroli 14. Sabbathi, 15. Martii, 1638

Anglia. A Reverendissimo in Christo patre Willielmo Cant. Archiepiscopo totius Anglia Primat. & Metropol. 100. l. de Denar. per ipsum recept. ex dono Thoma Rowe in sacra Theolog. doctor. nup. defunct. versus defensionem Regni. — } 100. l. fol.

Eodem Termino Veneris duodecimo Aprilis, 1638.

Cantuar. Dioc. A Decano & Capit. Eccles. Cathed. Christi Cant. ut don. sum spontaneum versus defens. Regni per manus Reverendis. in Christo patris Willielmi Archiep. ibid. solut. — } 300. l. fol.

Termino Pasche Anno Reg: Caroli 15. Martis ultimo Aprilis, 1639.

A Archiepis. ib. per Williel. Cranmer Gen. 502. l. 12. s. 9. d. de Denar. per ipsum recept. de diversis clericis infra Dioc. pred. ut don. S. spontan. versus defensionem Regni. — } 502. l. 12. s. 9. d.

Z

Eodem.

Eodem Termino Mercurii primo Maii, 1639.

Lincoln
Dio. A Willielmo Archiep. Cant. coll. Denar. ut don. spont. maa }
Cleri infra dioc. predict. 473. l. 13. s. 8. d. versus defen- } 473. l. 13. s. 8d
sionem Regni in hac expeditione S. Majestatis in partes }
boreal. per Mathew Leak Gen. solut. —————

Eodem Termino, Anno & die.

A Willielmo Archiepiscopo Cant. coll. Denar. ut don. spont. }
tan. cleri infra dioc. predict. versus defensionem Regni } 209. l. 14. s. 6d
in hac expeditione sua Majestatis in partes boreal. per }
William Rolf Gen. solut. —————

Termino Pasche Anno Reg: Caroli 15. Fovis 13. die Maii, 1639.

Anglia. A Reverendissimo in Christo patre Domino Williel. Cant. }
Archiep. 500. l. de Denar. per ipsum recept. de quadam } 500. l. fol.
persona cujus nomen concelari desideratur, dat. versus }
defensionem Regni. —————

Eodem Termino Sabbathi, 4. Maii, 1639.

Lincoln. Willielmo Archiep. Cantuar. coll. Denar. ut don. spont. an. }
cleri infra dioc. predict. versus defensionem Regni in hac } 315. l. 19. s. 6d
expeditione S. Majestatis in partes boreal. per Cantuar }
Walker Gen. Comiss. com. Bed. solut. —————

Eodem Termino Martis 14. Maii, 1639.

Anglia. A Reverendissimo in Christo patre Williel. Archiep. Cant. }
ut don. spontaneum clerici ignoti versus defension. Regni. } 87. l. fol.

Eodem Termino Luna, 20. Maii, 1639.

Cantuar.
Dio. A Reverendissimo in Christo patre Williel. Archiep. Cant. }
20. l. ut don. spont. clerici ignoti versus defens. Regni. } 20. l. fol.

Eodem Termino Martis 28. Maii, 1639.

Lincoln
Dio. A Willielmo Archiep. Cant. coll. Denar. ut don. spont. cleri }
infra dioc. pred. versus defens. Regni in hac exped. S. } 289. l. fol.
Majestatis in partes boreal per Iohan. Crosse, Gen. solut. }

Eodem Termino Mercurii, 15. Junii, 1639.

Cantuar.
Dio. A Reverendissimo in Christo patre Williel. Archiep. ibid. ut }
donum spontaneum clerici ignoti versus defens. Regni. } 20. l. fol.

Eodem Termino Mercurii, 19. Junii, 1639.

Cantuar.
Dio. Archiep. ibid. per Willielmo Cranmer Gen. 31. l. 12. s. 6. d. }
de Denar. per ipsum recept. de diversis clericis infra dioc. } 31. l. 12. s. 6d
predict. ut donum S. Spontaneum versus defens. Regni. }

Eodem

Eodem Termino Mercurii, 26. Junii, 1639.

Cantuar. Dioc. A Reverendissimo in Christo patre Williel. Archiepiscopo
ibidem 500. l. ut donum suum spontaneum versus defen- } 500. l. fol.
sionem Regni.

Eodem Termino Anno & die.

Lincoln. Dioc. A Williel. Archiep. Cant. cell. Denar. ut dona spont. cleri
infra dioc. predict. 38. l. 6. s. 8. d. versus defenf. Regni in hac } 38. l. 6. s. 8. d.
expedit. S. Majest. in partes boreal. per W. Rolfe, Gen. sol.

Eodem Termino Mercurii, 3. Julii, 1639.

Lincoln. A Willielmo Archiepiscopo Cant. coll. Denar. ut dona
spontan. Cleri infra Dioc. predict. versus defensionem } 13. l. 12. s. fol.
Regni in hac expeditione S. Majestatis in partes bo-
real. per Walter Walker, Gen. Comiss. Com. Bed. solut.

Eodem Termino Veneris, 26. Julii, 1639.

Lincoln. A Willielmo Archiepiscopo Cant. 3. l. ut dona spontanea
cleri infra dioc. predict. versus defensionem Regni in hac } 3. l. fol.
expeditione S. Majestatis in partes boreal. per Iohan-
nem Farmer, Juris Civilis Doctor. solut.

Summa totalis — 4401. l. 12. s. 7. d.

How ready the Popishly affected Clergy were to contribute to this War, will evidently appear by this Letter of Doctor Iohn Pocklington (who wrote Sunday 20 Sabbath) to Sir Iohn Lamb, among whose Papers I found it.

S I R,

ON Thursday, and Fryday last, the Clergy met at Bedford, before Mr. Commissary, Mr. Thorne, and my Self: We found them willing to contribute as much as was propounded; 'The poorest that gave any thing at all, gave no lesse' then 3. s. 10. d. in the pound, without deduction of Tenths: The most gave after 4. s. some after 5. s. some after 6. s. in the pound: Much of the money is paid in, and I suppose it will be all in Mr. Commissaryes hands by the 26. of this moneth the day appointed for the payment. I doubt not but the Clergy of England will teach the Ministers of Scotland Duty and Obedience; And if their Laity will be taught the like by ours, His Majesty I hope will have a royall and joyfull Progressse into Scotland; which God grant.

At this meeting I understood that Doctor Micklethwait is the man in nomination for Sandy: He is my old acquaintance, and very good friend, whom I love with all my heart, for I take him to be a right man for the Church; and if it might please God that he might be better accommodated neerer his own meanes, I thinke we should mutually rejoyce.

No parsonage of England could fit me better then Sandy: It is of good value, it would draw me out of that corner where my stirring for the Church-rights makes me lesse acceptable with some great hands: It brings me into the neighbour-hood

Note

of my best friends, Doctor *More*, and Doctor *Martin*, and sets me within a small distance of *Bedford*, where I shall be ready at hand to assist any service for the Church and King, though I am not ignorant that my devotion that way hath done me no great good amongst some, no meane ones; and peradventure Mr. *Thorne* may suffer a little for such employments.

To Mr *Thorne* I shewed your Letter, and he shewed me *Wallingers* Petition to the Lords; To him I spake nothing at all about it; but I beseech you give me leave to vent my thoughts of it to you: The hands that delivered it may be a Commoners of *Bedford*; but the head that devised it, hath the countenance of a Commissary, rather then a Commoner of that Town; the inditer maketh familiar use of divers words that come not within the Cognifance, nor liberty of the Town of *Bedford*: Their Charter surely reacheth not to take up errors and straves of youth, that are laid hold on at *Oxford*; I am afraid that some retainers to the Commissaryes Court cast an evill eye upon him, because it is like enough he may cast an eye upon some evill, that may be done there.

I shall not easily beleve that either *Smith* late vicar of *St. Pauls*, or *Collyer* have trayned up their Auditors to be so zealous to have the King prayed for according to Canon. I would to God they and all the Churches of *England* might be tryed with a Prayer for the Kings happy journey, and joyfull return out of *Scotland*, to see how zealously they would pray for the conversion, or confusion of their own Faction, and how they would make the Pulpits ring with invectives against Puritan Rebellion and Traytors, which as yet are silent enough. 'When Treason and Rebels is with like zeale detested, and declaimed against in Puritans, as in 'Papists; I shall beleve there is some Religion and Piety in that Generation.

Sir, you will pardon me if I am thus profuse and loose with you; where I have not a window to the heart, I am reserved and close enough. Thus with remembrance of my due respects and best wishes, I rest,

Yevelden, March 4.
1638.

At your service ever to be commanded,
John Pocklington.

* See the Bre-
viat of the
Archbishops
life; page 22:

The King assisted with these Contributions, raised an Army, and marched into the * North against the *Scots*, departing from *London* North-ward March 27. 1639. and through Gods blessing on the 17. of June following, a happy Pacification and Agreement was concluded and ratified between His Majesty and His Subjects of *Scotland*, and thereupon the Armies disbanding, and all parties returned home with much joy and contentment.

But *Canterbury* upon his Majesties return, disliking the Articles of Accomodation as prejudiciall to the Lordly Prelacie, and giving overmuch Ecclesiasticall Jurisdiction to the generall Assembly of *Scotland*, was very much discontented and offended at this happy Pacification, styling it a very dishonourable Peace to His Majesty, and exceeding prejudiciall to the Church; telling His Majesty, that it was made by a company of hunting Lords, who regarded their own sports and pleasures, more then His Majesties honor, or the honor and safety of the Church and Realm; and by his violent importunity, caused His Majesty to dissolve and Nullifie the Pacification, as dishonourable; And by Proclamation dated August 11. 1639. to call in some papers dispersed concerning the Pacification, as scandalous, ordering them to be publicly burnt by the hand of the common Hangman, ingaging His Majesty in a new resolution to subdue the *Scots*, and establish both a Lordly Prelacy and Liturgy amongst them, by force of Armes.

Which being resolved on by the perswasion of this Arch-Incendiary, he thereupon projects and resolves upon new wayes of rayfing moneys without a Parliament by way of *Loane*, and thereupon combines with *Windebank* to send for severall Officers, Iudges, Servants of the King and Queen, and others before the Lords of the

the Councell, to lend such sums of money towards the rayling of a new Army, and maintaining of a new War against the Scots, as he was pleased to prescribe.

Hereupon, in November 1639. by the Arch-bishops directions and procurement, divers Persons were sent for before the Councell Table to lend and contribute towards the maintenance of this civill Warre, on whom they imposed severall sums before hand, which they must be enforced to contribute, as appears by these severall Lifts under Windebanks hand:

14. Novemb. 1639. A Lift of those that are to Lend.

Mr. Justice Crawley	500.l.	Sir Paul Pinder	50000.l.
Mr. Justice Rives	500.l.	Mr. Henly	6000.l.
Mr. Solicitor Herbert	500.l.	Strangers	20000.l.
Mr. Surveyor	1000.l.	Danby	10000.l.
Mr. Comptroller	500.l.	Gib	10000.l.
Sir Robert Banaster	1000.l.		

December 5. 1639. (as the Arch-bishops Diary informes us) The King Declared His resolution for a Parliament in case of the Sottish Rebellion; The first movers of it were the Lord Deputy of Ireland, & the Archbishop; and a resolution voted at the Board, to assist the King in extraordinary Wayes, if the Parliament should prove peevish and refuse to grant Subsidies to maintain this Warre; the calling of this Parliament being made but a Stale to serve this Archbishops papall ends and designes against the Scots.

* See The Bre-
viat of his life,
page 225

And to testify this, he most illegally in February 1639. (after Writs for calling this Parliament issued) caused this list of names and sums to be given in to the councell Table, of Parties that must lend the sums assessed by him for support of these Wars, who were sent for accordingly before the Lords, and many of them there enforced to lend:

Sir Henry Martin	3000.l.	James Maxwell	2000.l.
Sir John Lamb	2000.l.	Patrick Mall	2000.l.
Dr. Duck	1500.l.	James Leviston	1000.l.
Dr. Eden	1500.l.	George Kirk	2000.l.
Sir Nathaniel Brent	500.l.	William Murrey	1000.l.
Mr. of the Roles.	2000.l.	Henry Murrey	2000.l.
Sir Edward Leech	2000.l.	Endymion Porter	1000.l.
The six Clerks	6000.l.	Sir Henry Mildmay	2000.l.
The Lady Cambden	5000.l.	Sir William Udall	1000.l.
Baron Weston	500.l.	Sir Edward Varne	1000.l.
Baron Trevor	4000.l.	Sir Richard Tounge	1000.l.
Baron Hendon	3000.l.	Mr. Audley	4000.l.
Sir Thomas Fanshew	1000.l.	Sir Miles Fleetwood	1000.l.
Sir Peter Osborne	1000.l.	Sir Benjamin Rudiard	500.l.
Sir Robert Pye	2000.l.	The Attorney of the Wards	1000.l.
Sir Edward Sawyer	500.l.	Mr. Chamberlin	1000.l.
Sir Charles Herbert	1000.l.	The Attorney of the Dutchy	500.l.
Sir Edward Powell	2000.l.	Mr. Cofferor	3000.l.
Sir Sidney Mountague	2000.l.	Sir Thomas Merry	2000.l.
Sir Ralph Fresman	2000.l.	Mr. Fenner	1000.l.
Mr. John Packer	1000.l.	Sir Richard Manley	500.l.
Morley	2000.l.	Mr. Comptroler of the Works	500.l.
Massam	4000.l.	Lord Chief Justice Bramston	500.l.
Surveyor of the Works	1000.l.	Mr. Justice Barkley	1000.l.
Sir Richard Wynne	3000.l.	Mr. Justice Crook	1000.l.

Sir

Sir Thomas Hatten	1000.l.	Mr. Justice Jones	500.l.
Sir John Winter	1000.l.	Mr. Henly	5000.l.
Mr. Attorney Ball	500.l.	Lord Chief Justice Littleton	1000.l.
Mr. Solicitor Winne	500.l.	Solicitor Lane	500.l.
Serjeant Whisfield	500.l.		

In this Schedule there were divers names of Noblemen and others inserted with blanks left for the sums they were to lend: And the Officers of *Star-chamber, Chancery* & other Courts here omitted, were likewise therein ordered to be sent for; under which the Archbishop with his own hand writ these directions, *To call upon the Lord Keeper for these Names: Call for Names:* Which clearly manifests this sending for all these to lend the sums here specified to be his project; and that he was the chief Actor in these Assessments of them: The most of whom were enforced to lend; 38000.l. being subscribed before the Lords of the Council by some of these persons in one day, and 10000.l. another day, as appears by a Note under *Windebanks* hand.

Moreover, I found this ensuing List of Names and Sums under *Windebanks* hand. 6. March 1639. *Kings Servants to be warned on Friday.*

These in this Paper now absent, to be sent for against Wednesday, to Mr. Solicitor Herbert.

gr.-- Sir Edward Griffin	1000. l.	will bring it down to 1000. l.	
gr.-- Sir Edward Savage	500.	Mr. William Walter	500.
respect.-- Sir John Trevor	1000.	Mr. Edmund Dunch	500.
Mr. John Frecheville	500.	gr.-- Capt. Richard Crane	500.
gr.-- Sir John Maynard	500.	Sir Thomas Ashton	500.
Sir Henry Herbert	1000.	Mr. William Coryton	500.
Sir Francis Vincent	500.	gr.-- Sir James Thynne	3000.
Sir John Smith	500.	gr.-- Sir Henry Newton	1000.
Sir Thomas Walsingham	500.	resp.-- Mr. Henry Frederick Thynne	2000.
Mr. Solicitor	500.	Sir Ralph Hopton	500.
Sir Lionel Palmage	2000.	Sir William Savile	1000.
gr.-- Mr. Thomas Fotherley	500.	gr.-- Mr. James Maxwell	2000.
refus. Sir William Ashton	500.	Mr. Patrick Mawle	2000.
Sir Thomas Richardson	1000.	He is to do what he can.	
gr.-- Mr. Edmund Windham	500.	gr.-- Mr. James Livingston	1000.
gr.-- Mr. Pye	3000.	gr.-- Mr. George Kirk	2000.
Mr. Joh: Mannors of Hadden	2000.	gr.-- Mr. William Murray	1000.
Massam	2000.	gr.-- Mr. Henry Murray	1000.
He will give his own Bond; the Lords		gr.-- Mr. Eudymion Porter	1000.

How much of these sums were lent or contributed I cannot certainly define, but on April 13. 1640. the Parliament called about the Scots assembled, wherein many Subsidies were demanded to be presently granted and levied before any grievances redressed: in conclusion after much debate, the Parliament on the 5. of May was suddenly dissolved, and no Subsidies given; but then the Convocation was continued by the Archbishops means; who granted the King a large Benevolence to continue for 3. whole years in nature of 3. intire Subsidies, to maintain this war (against all Law) to be paid in and levied under severest penalties, (of which more in due place) and made 17. Canons exceeding prejudiciall to the Kings Prerogative, the Parliaments & Subjects Liberties, in justifying and establishing divers Popish Innovations in Religion, in affront of the Parliament; upon whose dissolution, divers illegal means were set on foot by *Canterbury* and his Confederates, to raise moneys to support this war, as forced Loans, (divers Aldermen of London being

being imprisoned in the Tower, for refusing to certifie names of Persons within their severall Wards for to lend) by enforcing Shipmoney, Coat and Conduct money, in the Countries, more then ever: By Commanding by a speciall Proclamation, Aug. 20, 1640. all the Nobility, Knights, Gentlemen, and those who held Lands of the King, to attend him at the Army, with horses, men and arms, in this service according to their abilities and estates. Hereupon a great Army was raised in the North, and a bloody war likely to have ensued, but that God by his overruling Providence happily appeased it without bloodshed, by a Treaty first, and then by an Act of Pacification and Oblivion passed in the Parliaments of both Kingdoms.

What Tumults and Libels, the Archbishops breaking the first Pacification with the Scots, and after that the Parliament, occasioned, to the endangering of his Person, you may read out of his own *Diary* in the *Breviate* of his life, pag. 22, 23. which I will not repeat.

That he had the principall hand in exciting and directing these wars, will appear by the Lord *Conwayes* Letters to him, (who had then the Command of the Northern forces) the extracts of some whereof out of the very Originalls, I shall here present you with.

The first is thus Endorsed with the Archbishops own hand, Received *Junij*, 12. 1640. my Lord *Conway* his Judgement concerning popular Tumults now in England.

May it please Your Grace,

I Have received two Letters from you, the one by Mr. *Tresorers* conveyance, wherein you were pleased to let me know what the disorder at *Lamberth* was; the mutinies of the base multitude are not to be feared, nor to be neglected, the chief inciters are to be castigated and that quickly: if there were persons fitting to be Heads to a discontented multitude, there were some danger if those men could not be secured, but he that fears any Head that can be given to any discontented Body here in *England*, will be afraid like boyes and women of a Turnep cut like a deaths head with a candle in it. All these accidents must be overcome with patience, dexterity, and courage; If the end whither one would go cannot be attained with that speed is desired, learn of Seamen to lye by a wind, and gain ground by boarding: I do assure my self, that if wise thoughts be with courage put in execution, all difficulties will be overcome; there must not be any fainting by the way, if the heart fail the legs will never leap over the ditch, and if courage be added to wisdom, a Prince is able to overcome any opposition; what things did the *Duke of Savoy* do with that small and inconsiderable Country, in respect of *Spain* and *France*, with one of which he was in continuall opposition? what things did King *Henry* the seventh Governing well? what King *Henry* the eighth Governing ill? and what doth not the *Cardinall of Richelieu* bring to passe if he have a desire to effect it? and all this is done onely by considering how things should be done, and by causing them to be done, and all commands of what kind soever will be executed if he that commands hath power to reward and punish.

I do most Humbly thank your Grace for your favour to Mr. *Neville*, and if the cause were my own, I would not desire that any man should do more for me then what were very reasonable; if you think it not seasonable to move any thing that may offend my Lord of *Holland*, I do beleieve that *Captain Neville* is a man of so much reason, as that he will think himself obliged to you for your good will; but I assure my self that there is not any lesse your friend then my Lord of *Holland*, and I beleieve that at all times you ought to take heed to your self with him. And I think that at any time there is not any great danger in him, if the King be well with you; my Lord of *Warwick* is the Temporall Head of the Puritans, and my Lord of *Holland* is their Spirituall Head, or rather the one is their Visible Head, the other their Invisible Head; peradventure not because he means to do either good or hurt, but because he thinks it is a Gallantry to be the principal

Note.

cipall Pillar on which a whole Caballe must relye. I am extreemly sorry for my Lord Lieutenant that he is again fallen ill, I wish his health, as I do my own, and I have reason so to do, for I have received more favours from him, then even I did from any man.

If the times do grow Tempestuous, I do beleve that you will find many a Sir Henry, but I will not for fear, be made to be other then

Newcastle,
June 8. 1640.

Your Graces most humble and most faithfull Servant,
Conway and Kilulta.

The second is thus endorsed by him, *Rece: Junii 16. 1640, The Lo: Conway concerning the fortifying of Newcastle.*

May it please your Grace :

THe King hath been pleased to call me into his service, and I shall not faile to serve him faithfully ; and in all things wherein I may advance the Kings service I will doe it with my best endeavour ; and if I should not doe so I should use the King worse then I doe other men ; for to tell you truth under the scale of Confession, the faults that I commit are against my selfe, not against other men. This Towne of Newcastle I beleve may be fortified in such manner as that an enemy may be kept off untill an Army might be brought to relieve it : the profit that will be to the King is, that the Country will be better assured if they have a place whither they may retire if there be danger, and the Country will be pleased that the King doth take care of them : this inclosed paper will tell you the meanes whereby Money may be raised to effect this ; and from the doing of it this benefit will arise to the King, that he may make this a constant Revenue to himselfe ; they will I beleve be brought to doe this willingly for their owne safety, which they will never know how to put off from themselves, and it will be a faire example for others to follow ; if you will get it resolved on while the power that I have here doth continue, which will not now that the Army is coming hither be long, I will doe my best to get it effected : If you think this to be out of your way, I desire your pardon for giving you the trouble ; but knowing you to be faithfull to the Kings service, and not knowing very many that would be sincere in a Proposition for the King to lay any imposition, I did thinke it a necessity. I doe not heare yet so good newes of my Lord Lieutenants health as I do desire, his losse would be irreparable to the King, and to all his friends ; but I hope he will recover, which God grant : I have not any way abilities in me to serve you as he may, but such as I am I shall not faile to be :

Newcastle, June 13.
1640.

Your Graces most humble and most faithfull servant,
Conway and Kilulta.

Whereas it is conceived to be needfull, that some Fortifications be presently made without the Walls, for the safety of the Town of Newcastle, which will require a great charge both for the erecting and keeping the same ; For the raising of Moneys to that purpose, these four Propositions are to be considered of:

Imprimis, Whereas this new Corporation of Masters of Ships, have imposed of every severall Master who shall carry Coales, from either Newcastle or Sunderland the payment of 2. d. per. Cha. of Coals so carried ; which doth amount unto 1300. l. per annum at least, which they say is for the maintenance of their Corporation : Now forasmuch as the moneys thus paid doth arise forth of the

the purses of those, which are owners of Ships according to their severall parts, of which number abundance of them are no members of that Corporation, therefore ought not to be Assessed for this purpose: It is therefore desired, that this 2.d. *per. Cha.* henceforth may be paid for two or three years, or as long as need shall be for the use above mentioned, and then quite to surcease; it being both reasonable and just, that moneys thus raised should be employed for the publique good, and not for any particular society. And in case it be alledged, that they have spent much moneys in procuring their Pattent to be a Corporation; It may be answered, they have received these moneys two years already, which is more then they can have expended; and besides, they have and do still receive a Mark at least of every one they make free, which doth arise to a great sum of Moneys, for they make many free every yeer.

2. That as much be paid upon every Chaldron of Coals, for the same use, by those who sell the same, for the same time and no longer.

3. That there be as much paid upon every Chaldron of Coals, which is laden from *Sunderland*, both by the seller and buyer as is paid at *Newcastle*, and during the same time; for otherwise all the small Ships will go from that place, which will hurt *Newcastle* very much and be distastefull.

4. That all common Brewers, and all others who brew strong Ale or Beere to sell, shall pay so much of every Tun, as shall be thought fitting: And likewise all those who sell Tobacco.

The third is thus endorsed, *Lo. Conway, Rece: Julii 11. 1644. The consideration about execution of Martiall Law.*

May it please your Grace:

THe Deputy Lieutenants and Captaine *Alcocke* did send me a fierce Alarme from *Carlise*, desiring me to send them five hundred horse, because the *Scots* are within a few daies at *Dumfriese*, seven or eight thousand, with which Army they meane to fall into *Cumberland*, but I am slow in answering the spurre, because the advertisement of the Scotch preparations on this side are not such as that they may be much feared as yet: In my opinion the *Scots* will not come into *England*, but least they should goe against the rules of right reason, I doe provide as if they were coming: The horse are now come to the North part of *Yorke-shire*, into *Cleveland*, the foot about *Selby* were disorderly, and tooke out of Prison those that were committed; but now a Guard is set upon the prison, and they begin to be better in order.

One thing I will tell you, and shall desire that you will speake with my Lord Lieutenant in it: I did write to him of it, but I have not heard any thing from him, so that I thinke that in his sicknesse, beleeving that my Letter did only containe newes of *Scotland*, he did not reade it; the businesse is this; My Lord of *Northumberland* did write to me, that having had occasion to looke into the power he hath to give Commissions, the Lawyers and Judges are all of opinion that Martiall Law cannot be executed here in *England*, but when an enemy is really neare to an Army of the Kings, and that it is necessary that both my Lord of *Northumberland* and my selfe doe take a pardon for the man that was executed here for the mutiny; if this be so, it is all one as to breake the Troopes, for so soone as it shall be knowne there will be no obedience; therefore put some remedy to this by all meanes very speedily: there are now here in prison two men for killing of men, and the Provost Martiall for letting them scape out of Prison, although he tooke them againe: I doe forbear to call them to a Court of Warre, neither dare I tell the reason why I doe not, being often urged, but suffer them to thinke me negligent. I doe not thinke it fit that the Lawyers should deliver any Opinion, for

A a

Note.

if

Note.

if the Souldiers doe know that it is questioned, they will decide it by their disobedience, as the Country doth by the Ship-money, and with farre more dangerous consequence, for the Souldier may bring the Country to reason, but who shall compell the Souldier? therefore if it cannot be helped with a Commission of Oyer or Terminer, which must be only in the Officer or Officers of the Army, or in some especiall Commission of the Kings, such as he gives when Noblemen are Arraigned; let him then give under his owne hand a Commission for the Execution of Martiall Law, to him that will hazard his life and estate upon the Kings Word. Sir Jacob Aspley hath no Commission for the execution of Martiall Law, but if the fault deserve death, he is to advertise my Lord of Northumberland; this will absolutely undoe all: the Souldier must be punished by his Officer: If it would come to debate some may peradventure say, that for faults that deserve death the Souldier may be sent to the Goale to be tryed by the Iudges; this will take away the respect of the Souldier to the Officer, and there will presently be no obedience, or care, either in Souldier or Officer. I thinke that this doth so much concerne the King in the government of the Army, that if a Lawyer should say so here, if I had a Commission I would hang him, and so I thinke the King ought to doe others. I shall ever be

Note.

Newcastle, Iune 13.
1640.

Your Graces most humble and most faithfull Servant,
Conway and Kilulta.

To which I may adde this Letter of my Lord Conway to Secretary Windebank, concerning certain Intelligence of the Scots intentions to enter England, which he was to impart to the Archbishop.

Mr. SECRETARY,

Note.

MY time is very short, I now receive your Letter, I have within these two houres word brought to me, I pray you tell my Lord of Canterbury, that it is by that man I did write last to him, that I have sent into Scotland, and gave him sixteen pound; that the Scotch Army, as he doth assure me upon his life, and bids me hang him if it be not so, will upon Munday or Tuesday next come into England, that they will upon Saturday be before this Town, which they will take or here be broken; from hence they intend to go to Yorkshire, my Lord Lowden told him that he did expect that more then half the Trained Bands would joyn with them: in Yorkshire or upon the confines they mean to stay until some English Forces joyn with them; there was a man out of England lately with the Scots, to desire them to come in, and told them they did ill to stay so long, that if they had come in but six weeks ago, the English Army had not been raised: I doubt very much this Town cannot be kept; if a Citadell had been made according as I did advise, they would never have attempted it; If you have written to Sir Jacob Aspley, it will gain two or three dayes, but I do now write to him, least you have not; If any English forces joyn with them, they will give the Law: I have sent to my Lord of Northumberland their last Proclamation, I shall ever be

Newcastle,

Your most humble Servant,

Aug. 15. 1640.

Conway and Kilulta.

The Country will not drive their Cattle, they say that they know not where to have grasse, therefore they will onely drive them out of the way; where they march.

To which I shall annex this Warrant to the Lord Cottington, whereunto the Archbishops hand is first.

After our hearty commendation to your good Lordship, Whereas We understand there have been delays and difficulties in some places, in the execution of his Majesties late command, for putting in readinesse the Trained Bands, and

and other Forces of that County to march and to serve in the common defence in this time of publique danger, which delayes have been occasioned through some misapprehension, concerning the defraying of the charge of the Trained Men to the place of the service when they march. We have therefore thought good for preventing of further delay in matters of this importance, hereby do advertise your Lordships, that not only the Customes and Laws of this Kingdom do require, that in a time of actuall Invasion, every man ought to serve in the common defence at his own charge, but that the very Law of Nature doth teach and oblige us all thereunto without sticking or staying upon any terms or questions. And that it hath been the Custome and practice within this Kingdom both in ancient and modern times, (even but when a doubt or fear was had of an Invasion) is very manifest. But this present danger is past all manner of doubt, by reason of actuall Invasion of the Scottish Rebels with so great an Army, and the same so far advanced, that the whole Kingdom may soon be over-run, unless by a great power they be repelled and beaten back.

And whereas His Majesties Subjects of the North parts of this Kingdom do cheerfully hold together, and serve His Majesty in this great occasion at their own charge, both with their Bodies and Fortunes without trouble to His Majesty. We have therefore thought good hereby to pray and require your Lordships, to acquaint the Country with the sence of this Boord in this particular, and that We doubt not but His Majesties Subjects of that County, will in this occasion shew as much forwardnesse and zeal for the common safety wherein We are all so neerly concerned, as is either shewn now in the Northern parts, or hath been practised in any other time of danger heretofore in this Kingdom. Which We do hereby effectually recommend to your Lordships care, and bid your Lordship very heartily farewell.

From White-Hall the 16. of September. 1640.

Your Lordships very loving Friends,

W. Cant. Guil: London. Arundell and Surrey. Dorset.
Fra. Cottingham. Fra. Windebank. Tho. Roe.

To our very good Lord, the Lo: Cottingham, Lo: Lieutenant of the County of Dorset, and in his Lordships absence, to his Deputy Lieutenants.

After the Scots entrance into England, the Archbishop received this Letter of Intelligence from one John Rocket (mentioned in his * Diary) which lively sets forth their opinion of him.

* See the Breviate of his life, p. 23.

To the most Reverend Father in God, William Lord Archbishop of Canterbury his Grace, Primate and Metropolitan of all England, and one of His Majesties most Honorable Privie Counsell, At his Pallate this, &c. Lambeth.

Right Reverend Father,

Duty binds me to study your Graces health, and to frame my weake endeavours correspondent to your gracious pleasure, which is the accomplishment of my desire and joy, the only motive of my Intelligence: I therefore desire to acquaint your Grace, with what is dangerous to your person, and adverse to your happinesse; which is that I received from the Scots; of which I am Sole witnesse, and your Grace only made acquainted with, viz.

After the late Skirmish betwixt the English and the Scots at Newburne, my occasions urged me to return to Blaiden, (a Town betwixt Newburne and Newcastle, whether my journey tending; the Rebellious Scots tooke me upon Chesterton, the midd-way betwixt Durham and Newcastle) either for a spie, or a le-suit: And being had to Durham, was detained there for the space of four dayes, viz. from the 8. day of September till the 13. when being examined I fashioned my speech for their humours, and complied my self as neer as I could to their dispositions; with which at length they were affected, supposing me to be one

Note.

of their beloved Brethren; whereon great tokens of love and familiarity were moved, and private discourse for the space of five houres, relating such news, whereof they were knowing; wherein they vomited the venome of their malicious minds, and revealed the extremity of their wrath against your Grace: *Calling you Papist Priest, a new Bonner, a Superstitious, and proud Bishop, on whom if they might not revenge the Lords Quarrell, satisfie their minds, and cut off Superstition by cutting down your Grace the mighty son of Belial, and high Priest of Baal:* (For in such tearms they expressed their mischievous thoughts.) We hope, and know, we have some holy and zealous Brethren in England, who will take up our Quarrell against this raging Tyrant, and Bloud-sucking Wolf, the Archbishop of Canterbury; whom they hoped to heare flaine shortly (if not by themselves) by some people little suspected.

These things, or worse (right reverend Father) I heard, and I alone; which I could not retrain, but signifie to your Grace with all the hast I could: whereby you might avoid their rage, and crueltie; and your person might be preserved in safety in spite of all their envious Plots; flourishing in this Kingdome gloriously, for which earnestly and truly prayes

From Seth Bernard his house
in the Minster yard at York.

Your humble Servant in all duties
most ready, though unknowne,
John Rocket.

September 16. 1641.

This Letter is thus Endorsed with the Archbishops own hand, *Rece: Septemb. 21. 1640. From Mr. John Rocket a man whom I never saw. The hatred of the Scots against my Person and Life.*

I shall conclude with Mr. Alvyes Letter to him the then *Arminian and Superstitious Vicar of Newcastle*; Thus Endorsed with the Archbishops hand, *Rece: Octob. 19. 1640. Mr. Alvyes Case in and since his flight from Newcastle.*

To the most Reverend Father in God, William by Divine Providence, Lord Archbishop of Canterbury his Grace, Primate and Metropolitan of all England, and one of His Majesties most Honorable Privie Counsell.

Most Reverend and Right Honorable,

I Make bold to represent unto your Grace, the sum of that which I lately represented to His Majesty, in an humble Petition, that I am for the present Outed of all my Spirituall promotions, to the yearly value of 300. l. and have most of my moveable goods seized upon by the Rebels; being forced (upon some threatening speeches given out by them, that they would deale more rigorously with me then others) suddenly to desert all, and to provide for the safety of my Self, Wife, and seven Children by a speedy flight in the night time; now they would have dealt with me, they have since made evident, by their harsh dealing with two of my Curars, whom I left to Officiate for me in my absence, who have not only been interrupted in reading Divine Service, but threatned to be Pistold, if they would not desist from the execution of their Office.

And whereas I had lately purchased 60. l. per anum in Northumberland, and hoped to have been supplied that way in these calamitous time, till I might with safety return; they have since I presented my Petition to His Majesty, seized upon that also, and commanded my Servant to be accomptable to them for it; this is my case at this time.

His Majesties gracious Answer returned to my Petition, by Mr. Secretary Vane, was, That he would recommend me in special manner to your Grace, and it pleased His Majesty further to signify, that he had received good Intelligence from me, and that hereafter I should have a remembrance over and above for it.

There was a Letter found in Newcastle, superscribed to the Lords of the Scottish Army, which coming first to my hands, I presented to His Majesty: Another

Note.

ther Letter was sent me from a Merchant in *Newcastle*, which discovers the miserable estate of that Town; I shewed it to Sir *Henry Vane*: I my self also was commanded by His Majesty, to give in to the Lord Bishop of *Durham* a short relation of some remarkable passages of the Scots proceedings in, or near about *Newcastle*, which accordingly I did, and least any of them have not, as yet, come to your Graces hands, I have here inclosed them all: Thus with my prayers for the long continuance of your Graces health, and happy government of this Church, I humbly take my leave;

York Octob. 16.

1640.

Your Graces in all due observance
Eldard Alvey.

What else concerns the Archbishops activity and proceedings in the *Scottish Troubles and Wars*, you may read in the Articles exhibited against him to the Lords in Parliament by the Scotch Commissioners, and the House of Commons: But before I leave this subject, I shall onely give you a little more light how active the Papists were to concur with the Archbishop and Prelates, in setting on these *Scottish Wars, Troubles*, and what advantages they made of them.

Not long before the *Scottish troubles*, one *Francis Smith* a great Jesuit, discoursing with Mr. * *James Waddesworth*, and one Mr. *Taxley* in *Norfolk*, touching some points of Religion, used these speeches. *It is not now a time nor way for us to bring in our Religion by Disputes, or Bookes of Controversy, But IT MUST BE DONE BY AN ARMY, and BY FIRE AND SWORD.* This *Smith* usually frequented *Lambeth house*, and *Windebanks Lodgings*, with whom he was very familiar, and was no doubt a great stickler in raising the *Scottish Tumults*, and fomenting that war as well as other Jesuits: to further which and advance the *Catholick cause*, the *Queen-Mother of France* unexpectedly came over into *England*, and landed at *Harwich* about the 19. of *October, 1638*. This war was no sooner resolved on by the King, by the Archbishop and his confederations instigations, but the Popes *Nuncio* with the Priests, Jesuits, and Roman Catholicks of *England and Wales*, (all privy to the plot) assembled together in a kind of Parliament, or generall Counsell of State, at *London* in *Aprill, 1639*. In which Council (convened by the Queens command) *Con*, the Popes *Nuncio* late President, where (in imitation of the Bishops and Clergies forementioned Contributions to maintain this war) they all resolved upon a liberall Contribution towards it. To which end the *Queen* her self, Sir *Kenelm Digby*, and Mr. *Walter Mountague*, together with the Noblemen, Gentlemen, Priests, and Recusants assembled at *London*, writ severall Letters, to all Recusants in the severall Counties of *England*, and *Wales*, to excite them to a most liberall and free Benevolence towards the maintenance of this warre, appointing speciall Collectors publicly to gather in the same; (in regard whereof all Proccesse against Recusants, were stayed by His Majesties speciall direction, who was privy to this assembly and contribution, as is evident by his * answer to Mr. *Pulfords* Petition) The verity of this contribution of the Papists is most apparent by these ensuing Copies of their severall Letters, produced and read in the Commons House, * *January 28. 1640.* on which day, Sir *Kenelm Digby*, and Mr. *Mountague*, were brought upon their knees at the Commons Barre, for furthering this Collection with their Letters, which they there professed they did write and disperse onely in duty to the King to relieve him, he being at that time in great distresse for moneys.

See the Popish Royall Favourite. p. 31.

* See the Royall Popish favourite, p. 16.

* See the Diurnall, Occurrences, &c. p. 22. to 23.

The Queens Letter for the Levying of money.

Henretta Maria R.

WE have so good a beleefe of the loyalty and affection of his Majesties Catholike Subjects, as we doubt not but upon this occasion that hath called his Majesty into the Northern parts, for the defence of his Honour and Dominions, they will expresse themselves so affected, as we have
atwaies

*Note.**Note.**Note,**Note.*

alwaies represented them to his Majesty; so in this common consent, which hath appeared in the Nobility, Iudges, Gentry, and others to forward His Majesties service by their persons and Estates. *We have made no difficulty to answer, for the same correspondency in his Catholike Subj^{ts}, as Catholikes: notwithstanding they all have already concurred to this his Majesties service, according to the qualities whereof they are, when others of the same quality were called upon, for we beleeve that it became us, who have been so often interested in the solicitation of their benefi^{ts}, to shew our selves now in the perswasion of their gratitude. Therefore having already by his Majesty, by other meanes recommended to them this earnest desire of ours to assist and serve his Majesty, by some considerable summe of money freely and cheerfully presented: We have thought fit (to the end that this our desires may be the more publike, and the more authorized) hereby to give you Commission and direction, to distribute Copies under your hand of this testification thereof, unto those that have met in London by our direction, about this businesse, and unto the severall Collectors of every County. And as we presume the summe they will raise, will not be unworthy our presenting to the King, so shall we be very sensible of it, as a particular respect to our selves; and will endeavour in the most efficacious manner we can to improve the merit of it, and to remove any apprehension of prejudice, that any (who shall imploy themselves towards the successe of this businesse) may conceive; by this they may be assured, that we will secure them from all such objected inconveniences. And we are very confident, that this our first recommendation will be so complied with all, as may not onely afford us particular satisfaction, but also facilitation towards their owne advantages.*

Given under our signet at White Hall this 17. of April. 1639.

Sir Kenelme Digbies and Master Mountagues Letter, concerning the Contribution.

*Note.**Note.*

IT is sufficient already knowne to every one the extraordinary Graces and Protections we owe the Queenes Majesty, to whose favourable intercession we must ascribe the happy moderation we live under; so as we doubt not, but an occasion of the expression of our grates, will joyfully be embraced by every body which the present estate of his Majesties affaires, doth now offer us. *We have already by our former Letters endeavoured to prepare you to a cheerefull assistance of his Majesty, in his declared journey to the Northerne parts; for the securing of his Kingdome, and such other purposes as his Royall wisdom shall resolve of: That so you may really demonstrate your selves as good Subjects, as God and nature requires of you. Now Her Majesty hath been graciously pleased to recommend unto us, the expressions of our duties, and zeale to his Majesties service, by some considerable gift from the Catholiques. and to remove all scruples (that even well-affected persons may meeete with) she undertakes to secure us, and all that shall employ themselves in this businesse, from any inconvenience that may be suspected by their or our forwardnesse and declaration in this kind. It will easily appeare to every body how much it imports us, in our sence of her Majesties desires to presse every body, to straine himselfe even to his best abilities in his Proposition, since by it we shall certainly preserve her graciousnesse to us, and give good Characters of our devotion to the King and State; of whose benignity we have all reason to give testimonies, and to endeavour to produce Arguments for the prosecution and increase of it.*

Now for the best expedition of this businesse (which is the chiefe circumstance that importeth in it) we have thought fit to recommend it to your nominations of such persons, as shall in your opinions be agreed for the ablest and best disposed in every severall County, not only to sollicite, but to collect such voluntary Contributions as every bodies consciences and duty shall proffer: And we shall desire you to give us an account of what acceptation it finds with his friends, wch we cannot but

but expect very successfull, and answerable to the forwardnesse we meeete with here about London, for which we shall offer up our prayers to God.

Walter Mountague.
Ken. Digby.

The Copy of the Letter sent by those assembled in London to every shire.

THe inclosed advices and Motives being so ample, as you will perceive by perusing them; it will not be needfull that we enlarge our selves upon any particulars concerning the conduct of the businesse, which they direct the way in. This therefore serveth only to convey them to you (as we are intreated by those that have met here, and we have undertaken to do) and desire you to repaire immediatly unto those persons to whom they be directed, and to deliver the same unto them, *in the name of all the Noblemen, and Gentry, (together with our selves) assembled here in London, by the Queenes commandement, to set forward the worke.* And we pray you assure them in the most efficacious manner you can (ingageing all our credits for the truth thereof) *that it is the sence of us all both Ecclesiasticall and Lay Persons, that besides the discharging of their and our duties to God and the King, it mainly importeth the good of Catholiques to have their businesse take good successe.* Therefore intreat them to deale actively and efficaciously and speedily according to their advices and motives. We are so well perswaded of their devotion to put forward so pious a worke, that we doubt not but they will be as well satisfied in the needfulness of the thing, and be as ready to imploy themselves in it, receiving the assurance thereof and perswasions thereunto, onely from our hands, as if they came by all the most formall waies that can be imagined; which in a businesse of this nature cannot be expected. And although the advices and motives be directed only to Lay-Gentlemen, yet we desire you, (and have answered for you) that you will imploy your selves, and all those that depend on you, sincerely to sollicite and dispose all their mindes that you have relation unto, as powerfull as you can, to contribute cheerfully and bountifully upon this occasion; which is the first that ever we laboured in of this kind, so we hope in God it will be the last, there being no probability of so pressing and urgent a necessity to occur any more.

London, April, 1639.

Tours, &c.

The names of the Collectors for gathering the Recusants money.

Bedfordshire.	Master Church, Sir Robert Charnock, Mr. Robert Hewes.
Barkshire.	Mr. Anthony Inglefield, Mr. Tirrill.
Buckinghamshire.	Mr. Robert Dormer, Sir Edward Mansfield, Mr. Throgmorton Mr. Bringhurst.
Cambridglshire.	Mr. Henry Huddleston, Mr. Charles Paryed, Mr. Barker.
Cheshire.	Mr. Bidulph of Bidulph, Sir William Massey, Mr. William Stanley, Mr. Iames Poole.
Cornwall.	Mr. Victor, Mr. Burlacy, Mr. Trevelion.
Cumberland.	Sir Fran. Howard, Mr. Ioseph Porter.
Darbyshire.	Sir Fran. Willoughby, Mr. Avery of Halstop, Mr. Paole of Spinckill.
Devonshire.	Sir Edward Carey, Mr. Berry, Mr. Anth. Gifford, Doctor Chichester.
Dorsetshire.	Mr. Geo. Penny the elder, Mr. Geo. Arundell, Mr. Webbe of Lanford, Mr. Wells of Purbeck.
Durham.	Sir Ralph Coniers, Master George Collingweed, Mr. Edward Smith.

Mr. William

Note.

Note.

Essex.	Mr. <i>William Peters</i> , Mr. <i>Thomas Wright</i> , Mr. <i>Rich. White</i> ,
Glocestershire.	Sir <i>Iohn VVinter</i> , Mr. <i>VVakeman</i> , Mr. <i>Benidict Hall</i> , Mr.
Hertfordshire.	<i>Atkinson</i> .
Huntingtonshire.	Mr. <i>Price</i> of <i>Washingley</i> , Sir <i>Thomas Shelley</i> , Mr. <i>Thomas</i>
	<i>Cotton</i> .
Herefordshire.	Master <i>William Bodenham</i> , Sir <i>Iohn Wigmore</i> , Mr. <i>William</i>
	<i>Moore</i> , of <i>Burrop</i> , Master <i>Iohn Harpe</i> .
Hampshire.	Master <i>Iohn Arundell</i> , Mr. <i>George Penny</i> the yonger, Mr.
	<i>William Owen</i> .
Kent.	Master <i>Benjamin Wyborne</i> , Master <i>Clement Finch</i> , Master
	<i>Pettise</i> .
Lancashire.	Master <i>Bradshawe</i> , Sir <i>Cicill Crayford</i> , Sir <i>William Gerrard</i> ,
	Mr. <i>Molineaux</i> of the <i>Wood</i> , Master <i>Townly</i> of <i>Townley</i> ,
	<i>Anderton</i> of <i>Loftock</i> .
Lecestershire.	Sir <i>Fran. Englefield</i> , Mr. <i>Golding</i> .
Lincolnshire.	Master <i>Anthony Mounson</i> , Sir <i>Iohn Thimbleby</i> , Mr. <i>Robert</i>
	<i>Constable</i> .
London and Mid-	Master <i>Cape</i> , Master <i>Thomas Rox</i> , Master <i>Becket</i> , Master
dlesex.	<i>Richard Betham</i> , Mr. <i>Edw. Harp</i> , Mr. <i>Morgan</i> , Master
	<i>Jo. Chapperly</i> , Doctor <i>Kirton</i> .
Norfolke.	Master <i>Everard</i> , Mr. <i>Charles Walgrave</i> , Sir <i>Henry Beding-</i>
	<i>field</i> , Mr. <i>William Paston</i> .
Northamptonshire.	Sir <i>William Saunders</i> , Mr. <i>Io. Poulton</i> .
Nottinghamshire.	Master <i>Thomas Smith</i> the elder, Master <i>Thomas Smith</i> the
	yonger.
Northumberland.	Sir <i>William Fenwicke</i> , Master <i>Haggerston</i> , Mr. <i>Wishrington</i> ,
	Sir <i>Edward Ratleif</i> .
Oxfordshire.	Sir <i>Richard Farmer</i> of <i>Kiddington</i> , Mr. <i>William Stone</i> , Mr.
	<i>Ralph Sheldon</i> .
Rutlandshire.	Master <i>Nicholas Cripps</i> , Mr. <i>William Andrewes</i> , Mr. <i>Alcock</i> ,
	Mr. <i>James Digby</i> .
Shropshire.	Sir <i>Basill Brooke</i> , Master <i>Plowden</i> , Master <i>Iohn Har-</i>
	<i>rington</i> .
Somersetshire.	Master <i>Raino</i> , Mr. <i>Iohn Ewnis</i> the elder.
Staffordshire.	Master <i>Brooke</i> of <i>Lapley</i> , Mr. <i>Stanford</i> of <i>Perry-hall</i> , Mr.
	<i>Phillip Draycot</i> .
Surrey.	Master <i>Edward Cotton</i> , Sir <i>Richard Weston</i> .
Sussex.	Sir <i>Iohn Shelly</i> , Sir <i>Iohn Carroll</i> .
Suffolke.	Sir <i>Francis Monnocke</i> , Sir <i>Roger Martin</i> , Sir <i>Edward Sylward</i> ,
	Mr. <i>Thomas Beddingfield</i> of <i>Beddingfield</i> .
Warwickshire.	Master <i>Antho. Dormer</i> , Master <i>Thomas Morgan</i> , Mr. <i>VVilli-</i>
	<i>am Sheldon</i> , Mr. <i>Richard Middlemoore</i> .
Wiltshire.	Master <i>VVilliam Arundell</i> , the Lord <i>Baltimore</i> , Mr. <i>Edw.</i>
	<i>Stilling</i> .
Worcestershire.	Master <i>VVilliam Abingdon</i> , Master <i>VVilliam Sheldon</i> .
Westmerland.	Master <i>Anthony Ducket</i> , Master <i>Iohn Leyborne</i> , Master
	<i>Fleming</i> .
Yorkshire.	East Riding. The Lord <i>Dunbarre</i> , Master <i>Brigham</i> ,
	Master <i>Longdaill</i> .
	West Riding. Baronet <i>Vavesar</i> , Baronet <i>Gascoigne</i> , Mr.
	<i>Thomas VVaterton</i> , Mr. <i>Philip Hinegate</i> .
	North Riding. Master <i>Craythorne</i> the yonger, the Lord
	<i>Fairfax</i> , Master <i>Anthony Adennell</i> , Master <i>Law-</i>
	<i>rence Sare</i> .

Brecknorth

Brecknock.	Master Winter, Master Bevan, Master Maddocke.
Carnarvon.	Master Lewis.
Carmarden.	Master Towley.
Cardigan.	Master Lewis.
Glamorgan.	Master Turbervile the younger.
Denbigh.	Master Richard Floyd, Master Crew.
Flintshire.	Sir John Connaway, Master Pennat.
Monmouth.	Sir Charles Somerset, Master Morgan of Lantarnam.
	Master Morgan of Itton.
Mountgomery	Sir Piercie Harbert.
Merioneth.	
Pembrookshire.	Master Towley of Arnostill.
Radnorshire.	Master Thomas Crowther.

The Reallity of this Collection, will yet more clearly appeare to all the VVorld by the *Queens* owne Confession, in a Messlage sent by her to the *House of Commons*, to excuse her activity therein; together with her entertainment of a *Nuncio* from the *Pope* (*Signior Rossetti* being then *Nuncio*) whom she promised to dispatch out of the Kingdom with all convenient speed: In which Messlage (Recorded in the *Commons Iournall*) we have a clearer acknowledgement likewise of many premised particulars, prefaced with a specious *Court-Complement*, and many faire promises (since not very punctually performed) to Court the *Commons* into a good opinion of her Majesties reall affections and endeavours to remove all mis-understandings between the King and his people, and to do all good offices between them.

[*] A Messlage sent from the *Queenes* Majesty to the *House of Commons*, by Master Comptroller, Feb. 3. 1640.

* See the *Commons Iournall*, Feb. 3. 1640. Diurnall Occurrences of both Houses, p. 31, 32.

That her Majesty hath been ready to use her best endeavours for the removing of all mis-understanding between the King, and Kingdome.

That at the request of the Lords, who Petitioned the King for a Parliament; her Majesty at that time writ effectually to the King, and sent a Gentleman expressly to perswade the King to the holding of a Parliament.

That She hath since bin most willing to do all good offices between the King and his people: which is not unknowne to divers of the Lords, and so [*] shall ever continue to do, as judging it the onely way of happinesse to the King, her Selfe, and Kingdome.

* Quere how well this Clause hath ever since bin performed?

That all things be justly settled between the King and his people, and all cause of mis-understanding taken away and removed.

That her Majesty having taken knowledge, that having one sent to her from the Pope, is distastefull to the Kingdom, She is desirous to give satisfaction to the Parliament, within convenient time she will remove him out of the Kingdome.

Note.

That understanding likewise that exception hath bin taken at the great resort to her Chappell at Denmarke House, she will be carefull, not to exceed that which is convenient and necessary for the exercise of her Religion.

Note.

She further taketh notice, That the Parliament is not satisfied with the manner of raising money for the assistance of the King in his journey to the North, in the yeare 1639. at her entreaty, from the Catholikes: She was moved thereunto meerly out of her deare and tender affection to the King, and the example of other His Majesties Subjects; she seeing the like forwardnesse, could not but expresse her forwardnes to the assistance of the King.

Note.

If any thing be illegall, she was ignorant of the Law, and was carried therein onely

* Her raising out of a great desire to be assisting to the King in so pressing an occasion; but promiseth men, monyes, horse, Armes, to be more cautious hereafter, [*] not to do any thing but what may stand with the established Lawes of the Kingdome.

Ammunition in forraine Her Majesty being desirous to employ her owne power to unite the King and people; Parts to maintain a bloody her Servants as may be formerly; and this your respect she promiseth shall be repayed with all the good offices she can do to the House, which [*] you shall find with reall effects, Ireland and England; is a as often as there shall be occasion.

very reall performance of this promise. How sincerely and cordially her Majesty hath performed all these her Princely promises to the Parliament, Kingdome, King, and his people, her Actions both at home and in Forraigne parts, with our bloody Warres and Massacres since both in Ireland, England, and Scotland proclaime to all the World. God deliver us all from such Court-holy-water, such Popish Dissimulation, which may seeme commendable in Romish Catholikes; who hold [*] Equivocation lawfull, and that no faith is to be kept with Heretickes, as they esteeme all Protestants.

* See Master Hen: Mason of Equivocation, & Suius Concil. Tom. 3. p. 850. But to returne to our Papists activity in the Scottish Warres, to which this Message relates, it is very well known, that many if not most of the Captains & Officers employed in the last expedition, were either professed Papists, or persons Popishly affected, & how the Earle of Arundell (the General of the Army against the Scotts) together with his Lady, family, stand affected in Religion, and what active instruments they were to promote this Warre, you may read at large in † Romes Master-piece. Their Contributions towards this Warre were so large, and their assistance so chearefull, that some of our Episcopall Breachers (and * Mr. Squire of Shoreditch London by name) preached openly in his Pulpit: That the Papists were the Kings best Subjells, and better then Protestants for three reasons. First, their Loyalty, Secondly THEIR

LIBERALITY, having like Arauna, contributed like Kings to the King in his necessity: Thirdly, For their Patience: adding that they were the good Samaritans, who poured Oyle into the wounds of that man, (the King,) that was fallen among Theeves who wounded him, Especially the Irish Papists. And Andomarus Ioannes, Abbot of Wurtzburge in Germany in a letter of his to Secretary Windebancke, Dated 13. August 1639. (endorsed with Windebanks owne hand) writes, that his Majesty had a sufficient tryall of the fidelity of his Catholike Subjects in this accident. I shall insert the whole letter, because it discovers Windebanks intimacy with this Abbot and other Papists, whose letters (inclosed under his own packet, to prevent intercepting) he usually dispersed to their Agents here.

Right Honourable,

THree Months agoe and more I wrot signifying to your Honour, that after I came from London, it being more then a quarter of a yeare, before I could reach the wished place I did aime at, to see the desolation of which, and generally of all the parts I did passe through, I was so disconsolated, that all be it, I oft thought to discharge my respective salutes to your honour, yet present cares and occasions did ever prevent my intention. Notwithstanding at last, I did take the boldnesse to intreat, that your Honour would let me know your commands, in discharge of which your Honour, God willing, shall finde me most solicitous and carefull. But least such my former letters hath miscaried, as severall to Sir Will:am Howard, and other honourable friends has done, I resumed the boldnesse to make a Briefe repetition of the same, letting your honor know, that I have found King James letter (of happy memory) which my Lord Hay then Embassador after his return to London, moved his Majesty to write to Prince Godefrid then Bishop of Wurtzburge, wherein his Majesty was pleased to give thanks to the Bishop for the favours done, as to himselfe. Moreover his Majesty was pleased to take * notice of us his poore Subjects commending us to the Bishops noble charity. I finde also Prince Godefrids answer to his Majesty, writ by occasion

NOTE-

of

of Abbot *Ogilby*, whom the Bishop did commend to his Majesty, intreating that at his request the said *Abbot Ogilby* might have free passage to see his native Country but of the which he had bene 40. yeares and more. The Prince who is now, does truly honour his Majesty and respect his Subjects, of the which my Lord *Arundell* about two yeare agoe being here received a worthy token, and likewise of this Bishops and Princes euerous respects, *Mr. Taylor*, who about three months agoe on his way to England in transitu comming hither, can give evident testimony both to his Majesty and to your Honour, which according to your promise made to me, I doubt not but he has already done. Last of all, my Lord *Craven* has reason to renound this Princes singular favours toward him, by whose meanes he has not only obtained freedom, but likewise being heere at *Wurtzburg* has received particular curtiesies and favours of his highnesse, which I doubt not, but at occasion his Lordship will declare at length to your Honour. At divers occasions being called to the company and Council of the principalls heere; as the best meanes to obtaine to peace, I use severall inductions, arguments and reasons for to advance and promoove the restitution of our Prince Palatinat; against the which albeit there be strong adversaries, yet further considerations may haply move their hearts to condescend thereunto. The Catholique Bishops and Princes thirst mightily for Peace, but higher powers and some Generalls and Commanders of Wars on both sides, for their privat ends, by practicall inventions, and factious collusions labour to the contrary, in the which they are like to continue, so long Germanie can afford them maintenance, of the which in most parts here, there be greater scarcity, and that at an extraordinary rate. Of the particular miseries and desolation of the most parts in Germanie, as likewise of other occurrences, if I did not perswade with my selfe that your Honour had every fortnight certaine information, I would write at length, but unwilling to impess your Honours more serious businesse, I abstaine from superfluous discourse. My Lord *Craven* desired me in this my letter to salute your Honour with all respect, as his singular good friend and Patrons Patron: he went from hence much of eight dayes agoe, after expedition of some busines in *Holland*, soon thereafter Godwilling he thinkes to see his wished Country, and honourable friends, amongst the which he esteemes your Honour most trusty, of which before mentioned curtiesies done to his subjects, if your Honour thinke that his Majesty will be pleased to take notice by writing a kind letter to the Bishop after advertisement, I shall send the aforesaid letters to your Honour. I heare for certaine that matters betwixt our Kings Majesty and Scotland are (God be glorified) composed and agreed, whereupon for conclusion of some Articles there is a Parliament Convocat at *Edinborough*, where the Kings Majesty is said to be for the present. In this accident I hope his Majesty has had a sufficient tryall of the fidelity of his Catholike Subjects, who in this or any other occasion, I am confident, by their true service will endeavour to deserve his Majesties love and affection towards them. For my owne part while as I live I will professe my fidelity to his Majesty, as my dread Sovereigne, obeying and honouring him above all Kings and temporall Princes on the earth. Praying God to multiply upon his Majesty heavenly and temporall blessings, with my best wishes for your Honours good health, and prosperity, I rest. In the Scots Abbacie at *Wortzburg*.

NOTE.

NOTE.

This 13. of August 1639.

A Postscript.

Your honours most humble servant and beardsman.

Audomarus Ioannes Abbas.

P.S. I humbly beseech your Honour to give order, that these inclosed safely be delivered: in the like or any occasion, I shall be alwaies most ready to serve your Honour.

These contributions, and this Assembly of the Papists 1639. with the Popes Nun does residence among us, were so publikely known, & the Papists grew so insolently bold thereupon, that the Apprentices and common people tooke notice of it, whereupon they scattered these two insuing papers in the streets of *London*, and pasted up some of them in publike places, from whence they were taken and carried to Secretary *Windebanke*, among whose papers they remained. The first was this.

Reasons

Reasons that Ship and Conduct-money ought to be had, and also Money, by the City of London.

First, for the setting up of Masse, and maintaining of Idolatry, as it is begun, but not brought yet (as was intended) to perfection, praise be to God, and the Scots, whom he hath made an instrument to prevent the same.

That the Popes Nuncio taketh and hath these five yeeres, taken great pains in perverting His Majesties simple Subjects, who herein is weekly at very great charges in sending to Rome for a cart-load of the Wood of the holy Crosse, and many old horses and dogs teeth and bones, with Indulgences and Pardons, which he selleth dear enough, but that cannot defray him and his great Train, for hee sendeth every weeke a Packet or two of all the affaires here to Rome, he must be well rewarded out of ship and conduct money, and of that which is expected to be lent by the City.

The Fryers of Somersethouse who do labour in distributing those reliques, and for many privat Masses, and for keeping of Bastards soute in Dunhill Alley, tenne in Drury Lane, besides twentie in Saint Giles in the Fields, must have money to keepe them and pay the Nur se, or else all is undone with them.

Sir John Winter (whose kindred were some of the chiefe projectors of the Gunpowder treason (and is now not better then his kindred) and my Lords Grace of Canterbury, now her Majesties Bishop, is and are great instruments, and specially the said Sir John, who with the Popes Nuntio doth keepe divers Bawdes for Fryers; Sir Thobias Matbew doth blow the Coales of dissention with Sir Kellam Digby, and Mr. Indimion Porter, all birds of a Feather, therefore we must needs goe against the Scotch for being not Idolatrous, and will have no Masse amongst them, yet Conduct and Ship-money must be had to go against them, to reduce them to some obedience.

The Queene Mother wheresoever shee hath beene, there could be no peace, or tranquility, yet ship and conduct mony must be had to keepe her and her Shagrags, who are now well clothed and must have new suits if the City lendeth money.

But it was not before now permitted talke of a Parliament to redresse these abuses nor to heate the Scotchs greavances, but ship and conduct money with that of the City which is the sineve wherewith we must go to War against them, and the Papists in the meane time do make a laughing stocke of us, and indeed the Capitaines and Leutenants must be all Papists, for none other will goe but them, and therefore they have the command of all the forces.

Note. Sir John Winter by his letter 30. August last to the Pope, desireth that his Holynesse would be pleased to make haft for Indulgences and pardons, for that God was somewhat favourable to the Catholike Religion which did daily increase in the Kingdome, and without doubt with his Holinesses helpe by prayers, would be planted here to maturity within two yeares.

All her Majesties servants, who doe suck the marrow of our estate, doe buy whole streets of houses in Paris & Lordships in the Country, and when they first came hither they were but poore beggers, & now they keep Coaches: what houses have they built in the Covent-garden, and what faire houses do they built in Lincoln In-fields? And the City must lend money to build them in other mens name.

And to hide all, the Papist will have the Parliament to be held at Yorke, and thereby to undoe this poore City.

The second Paper was, as followeth.

Gentlemen and others that are Christians assist us for the truth of the Gospell that is like to be extinguished, viz. The Popes Nuntio doth protest to make us all Roman Catholiques, the Ambassador of the Anti-Christ. Sir John Winter (whose kindred were of the Gunpowder Treason is his associate, and doth trust to worke that treachery upon us.

Sir Kellam Digby a maintainer of that Society is going to Rome, and the ship-money must defray him, as the Queenes Mother and the froggs of Hell in Somersethouse, Finis Cotanet opus:

For Wednesday next.

besides

Besides these papers, the Apprentices of *London* drew up, and presented this ensuing Petition to the Lord Major, and Aldermen of *London*, which was sent to Secretary *Windebanke*, and endorsed with his own hand.

To the Right Honourable, the Lord Major, and the Worshipfull Aldermen his Brethren :

The humble Petition of the Apprentices of London, whose Names are under written, in the behalf of themselves and others.

In all submissive manner sheweth:

THAT it is well known unto this Honourable Court, that there are many thousand Apprentices in this City, with whom their Parents, and friends have given some two hundred pounds, some more, some lesse sums of Money to Merchants, or other Tradesmen in *London*, who are bound for severall tearmes of yeares, to be trained up in their severall Callings. That at the end of their Apprentiship, they might exercise their Trades according to the Custome and Charter of the City of *London*. That by reason of the great number of Monopolies, Patents, and Impositions upon Commodities and Manufactures, the Trade of the City is so burthened, that to the Petitioners knowledge, divers of their Masters are not able to live of their Trades, to maintain themselves and their families. That many Factors and others have been made free by Redemption, together with the liberty that Forraigners use in this City; contrary to the Custome and Lawes in that case Ordained and Provided, whereby your Petitioners evidently perceive, that they are deprived of all hope to live by their calling, and that the freedome of this City will not be a benefit, but a burthen to them, unlesse some speedy course be taken for redresse. Further

C c

sheweth:

sheweth: That by the multitude of Papists, Priests, and Jesuits residing in and about this City, many weak in Learning, and young in understanding, are subject by their subtil delusions to be drawn away to Romish Religion. That many feares are upon us by reason of their audacious and insolent carriages, and demeanor in speeches, and their furnishing themselves with Armes, threatening the ruine of this City, which hath been famous for exercise of Trade and Religion.

May it therefore please this Honourable Court to take the Premises into due and serious consideration, and to be pleased to the future encouragement and lively-hood of the Petitioners (who are the inferiour members of this City, speedily to move the Kings most excellent Majesty, that the evils and feares afore specified may be removed, and others in your power may be redressed, that so your Petitioners may with cheertulnesse discharge their duties to Almighty God, his Sacred Majesty, and their respective Masters.

And your Petitioners shall be ever bound to pray.

Note.

About the yeer 1635. the Priests and Jesuits by means of *Windebanke*, *Canterbury*, and the Lord *Treasurer of England*, procured Mr. *Rook*, the searcher of *Dover* to be extrajudicially removed from his place, and two professed Popish Recusants, *Turberville Morgan* and *Charles Powell*, to be thrust into it, who held it for the use of Father *Leander a Benedictine*, and Father *Price*, Generall of that Order, the former once Chamber-fellow to the Archb. of *Canterbury* in *St. Johns* in *Oxford*, and sent over into *England*, to helpe the reconciliation with *Rome*, in which he was very active. By meanes whereof the Priests or Jesuits, Papists, and their Agents, had free Passage till this very Parliament, in and out of the Realm without search or molestation, conveyed their Intelligences to and from *Rome*, and other places with greater security, yea sent over divers Gentlemen and Gentlewomen to forraigne Monasteries, Seminaries, Nunneries without any obstacle, dreaming hereupon of nothing else but an absolute triumph over the Protestants, and a speedy extirpation of their Religion throughout all our three Kingdomes.

* The Royall Popish Favourite, p. 58, 59.

* See the Bre-viate of his life, p. 22.

While we ingaged in this civil war with *Scotland* by the Prelaticall and Popish party; these Conspirators prepared a great Spanish Fleet to invade us, and joyn with the Papists in *England* then in Arms (most of our Captains and Commanders being professed Papists) to cut all the Hereticks and Protestants throats, while embroyed in a civil war, and busied in murthering one another, as I have elsewhere manifested: But the admirable Providence of our ever gracious God secured us from their bloody designs, by stirring up the *Hollanders* miraculously to encounter and vanquish that puissant Fleet of Spaniards, notwithstanding all the assistance and protection they received from us; (at which the * Archbishop of *Canterbury* and Spanish Faction were exceeding angry and discontented) and by making a happy Accommodation betweene the King and our Brethren of *Scotland*, June the 17. 1639. before the Spaniards arrivall on our coasts, which was not till about the beginning of October: But this Parliament was no sooner called, but dissolved againe by the Arch-Bishops and Papists solicitations, and a new war resolved on with more vigour and violency then the former.

Hereupon Secretary *Windebanke*, the great Agent for the Arch-Bishop, Queen and Papists, writing to his Sonne *Tom Windebanke* (then at *Paris*, negotiating the

the Palsgraves enlargement) concerning the *Scottish* affaires, gives this direction to him among others,

TOm. &c. If you see Doctor Smith the Bishop of Calcedon there, who is a great confident of the Cardinall, he may be a fit instrument to make some discovery of the intelligence the Scots hold there, but this must be with great caution, &c.

Drury-lane, 12. Decemb.

1639.

Your very loving Father
Francis Windebanck.

Note.

It seems both the Secretary and his Son, had some interest in, and acquaintance with this Bishop, else they would not make use of him for their Intelligencer.

These Wars and the Papist forwardnesse to assist his Majesty in them, gave great encouragement (as it seemes) to Cardinall Barbarino to ingratiate himself further with his Majesty, as this Clause of Mr. John Graves his letter to the Archbishop (endorsed with his own hand thus, Recep. March 27. 1640. &c.) intimates.

May it please your Grace, &c. I humbly beseech your Grace to pardon these my presumptions, and this other Information which I shall assure your Grace, They have printed at Rome a Book of *Fastidius* a Britain Bishop, *De Virâ Christianâ*, which THE CARDINALL FRANCISCO BARBARINO INTENDS TO DEDICATE TO HIS SACRED MAJESTY. A Book of singular Devotion and Piety, and of great Antiquity, the Author being a Bishop in England, about 300. yeers after our Saviour: *Lucas Holstenius* a very learned man, hath the care of the Edition; but hath not, I thinke, as yet finished his Annotations upon it. For the Text, he and I compared the Manuscript (which is also very ancient) with the printed Copy, and I finde it exactly to agree, &c.

Ligorn, March 3.

Your Graces most obliged servant, Iohn Greaves.

Note.

Nay this War and the other designs of the Popish party, notwithstanding the second Treaty with the Scots, and the present Parliaments summons and meeting, did so elevate the Papists hopes in England; that Mr. Brudnell and Mr. Somerset, went purposely over into Italy in November 1640. to sue for Cardinalls Caps upon an expectation of a new creation of Cardinals; as the passages of these ensuing Letters writ to Secretary Windebancke from Rome (found among his Papers, and indorsed with his own hand) abundantly evidence.

Note.

Right Honorable Sir, &c. Mr. Thomas Sommerfet is safely arrived at Ligorn, upon his journey to Rome, I conceive to prosecute his own intentions.

The 3. of November,
1640.

Your honors most affectionat and
humble Servant, Iohn Wilford.

SIr, Mr. Thomas Sommerfet is at Florence, where Mr. Brudnell is also arrived. There are some hopes of a Creation before Christmas, the Pope being troubled with a Catarre, which argues a multiplicity of humors.

Novemb. 10. 1640.

Yours, Iohn W.

Right Honourable Sir,

THe Pope his Catarre arguing a multiplicity of humors dangerous in 74. yeers of age, gave occasion to his Physition to suggest so much to Cardinall Barbarino, and to him, to make serious instance with the Pope for a Creation, lest some sudden sicknesse portended by those Catarres, prevent him. This makes the pretendants expect the complements of their desires about Christmasse; and indeed there would not be much improbability in it, the creation importing the Pope and

Note.

Nephew so much; if the dispute about the nominated by the Crownes were ended. But as yet, nor France, nor Spaine, hath had promise of having Abbot Peretti or Mon Seignieur Massarini created; Mr. Somerset is come to Florence; upon his arrivall here, and his Negotiation, we shall see what hopes, either he or any others WHO AYME AT OUR ENGLISH CARDINALS CAP MAY PROMISE THEMSELVES, &c.

Novemb. 16.
1640.

Your Honors most affectionate and humble servant
John Wilford.

About this very time it seemes Mr. George Fortescue had some speciall Commission and imployment at Rome from hence, (it may be to succeed Sir William Hamilton in his negotiation there, or to sollicite a *Cardinals Cap*) as this Letter of his to Secretary Windebanke (found among his papers) imports.

Right Honourable:

Understanding by my Kinsman that your Honour desired light in two points concerning my selfe, I was glad of the occasion to present with these lines my humble service, and to assure your Honour, though unknown; I have ever upon all occasions professed my selfe a passionate servant of yours, and shall be ever most ready to doe your Honour all service. To those points:

Note.

I affirmed not, that I had leave of his Majesty to follow that particular businesse, for I my selfe knew it not, till I came to the City, where I met with my Commission and Instructions, not seen before.

Immediately at my arrivall here I addressed my selfe to Sir William, and carried my selfe with that obedience to his intimation, as in that passage I rather referred my selfe to Sir Williams report then to my owne relation, which so much would tend to my commendation.

Upon his intimation, I moved my Master to imploy some subject of his owne in that businesse, which very graciously upon my letter he hath done.

So that a *primo ad ultimum* I never medled in that businesse.

For my coming to Rome, I might very well conceive no place forbidden me, his Majesty giving me so faire a leave to serve his Highnesse.

Neither hath the License which his Majesty gave me to travell, any restriction at all.

In these I presume your Honour will discover with what resignation I have carried my selfe all along, and with what obedience to his Majesties pleasures, though so suddenly made knowne unto me, and without any command at all.

As in these, so desire I in all, to give your Honour a true account of my actions, which God willing shall be ever most suitable to an obedient Subject to his Majesty, a most zealous Patriot to his Country, and to your Honour a servant most ambitious of your command.

And shall I understand that my Letters shall be agreeable to your Honour, I shall make bold to present them sometimes, with the respect of

Rome this 11. Oct.

Your Honours most humble and most obedient Servant,

1640.

A Postscript.

Geo: Fortescue.

Note.

The Physicians having given notice to the Cardinall of the increase of the Popes Catarrs, the Cardinall thinks seriously of the new creation of Cardinalls, in which it is thought the Kings shall have the Caps they desire.

This Letter needs no great Commentary, but clearly shewes that this Gentleman met both with a Commission and Instructions from hence at Rome, and was to doe some speciall service there.

About May 1640. Con the Popes second English Nuncio returning from England to Rome to be Cardinal, the Pope sent a Nephew of his, Count Roser to succeed him;

him; who being but yong and unexperienced, the Pope commended him by this special Bull, to the old active English Iesuit Sir Toby Matibey, (very intimate with the Archbishop, Windebank, Wenrworth, Lord Deputy of Ireland, the Earl of Arundel, and most great Lords and Ladies about the Court or city) as to his *Angle Guardian*, the copy whereof I found among Windebanks papers (written with his own hand) which intimates, that the Pope had very great hopes of reducing England to its ancient vassallage to him in a very short space, by the help of those female active *Amazons* and instruments who laboured day and night to effect this designe of his.

Dilecto filio Tobiae Matheo Societat. Jesu sacerdoti Urbanus Papa 8.

Dilecte fili salutem & Apostolicam benedictionem. Ardens animarum zelus quo jam a tot annis in vinea Domini laborando strenuum te militem exhibuisti, promeretur ut tua virtuti debitam laudem reddamus. Sane magna cura exultatione audivimus labores quos sustines ut sedis Apostolicae amplitudinem augeas, & quo caritatis zelo omnibus omnia fias, ut omnes lucrifacias. Docet certe te virum Apostolicum magni Apostoli exemplo doctum, ut Iudeis fias tanquam Iudeus, & iis qui jam sine lege, tanquam sis sine lege, dummodo Sedis Apostolicae dignitatem promoveas. Ideo cum in magnam Britanniam mittere statuerimus dilectum filium Comitum Rosseti, nostrum & sedis Apostolicae cum potestate legati & latere Nuntium, Iuvenem zelo Dei accensum, Apostolica sollicitudini nostrae satisfactum credidimus, si eum tua curae committeremus. Iussimus igitur ut tibi communicer Instructiones sibi datas, & a dilecto filio & Nepote nostro, Francisco Sanctae Reverendiss. Ecclesiae Card. Barbarino subscriptas, teque pro eo quo pro sede Apostolica zelo ardes rogamus, & in quantum opus est, tibi mandamus, ut predictum filium & Nuntium nostrum, in omnibus dirigas, moneas, instruas, lapsus & erroneos ejus, (qui per juventutem facile accidere possunt) corrigas (ut sedis Apostolicae decor inviolatus permaneat) & ut denique in omnibus ei te Angelum custodem praebas. Magnam certe spem concepimus predictum filium & Nuntium tuis consiliis adiutam, non parvos, in Ecclesia Catholica fructus producturam. Labora igitur dilecte fili, opus fac Evangelistae, Ministerium tuum imple, Catholicos zelo Dei accende, ipsos conforta, sed praecipue Amazones illas quae (ut a dilecto filio Georgio Conneo audivimus) die ac nocte strenue decertant pro dignitate sedis Apostolicae. Non dissidimus de Domino, neque de potentia ejus, quia sicut occasione * unius feminae, auctoritas sedis Apostolica in Regno Angliae suppressa fuit, sic nunc per tot Heroicas feminas (illas imitantes quae a Galilea sequebantur Dominum) societatem ejus assidue sequentes, *BREVI* in eodem Regno restituenda sit. Adhorrare igitur illas ut opus ageressum viriliter prosequantur, & de sede Apostolica (quae devoti Feminis sexus peculiarem curam gerit) bene mereri pergant. Rogamus patrem Domini nostri Jesu Christi, ut tibi spiritum sanctum suum mittat, qui te in omnibus & per omnia custodiat, Apostolicam nostramque benedictionem dilecte fili, iterum atque iterum tibi impartimur. Datum Romae apud S. Petrum sub annulo Piscatoris, pridie idus Maii.

Note.

Note.

* See Romes Master-peece, p. 19, 20, 21.

Note.

Note.

* Q. Elizab.

Note.

About January, 1640. next following this Bull, there was this notable discovery of the Iesuits and Papists Practises made to the House of Commons, by one Brown a Popish Priest, which makes some mention of it, and I cannot pretermitt.

The voluntary Confession of Iohn Brown a Romish Priest, of the age of 72. yeers (a prisoner in the Gate-house) who being twice examined by a Committee of the Honorable House of Commons, did thereupon further explicate himself for the good of the Commonwealth, and ease of the House.

THE Honourable House takes notice of the Partie (who delivered this Petition) to be one of the most eminent in these Dominions of this Age, who hath read Divinity, Mathematicks, and Philosophy in the speciall Universities of Christendome; as Salamanca and Alcalá in Spaine; in Tholous and Avignon in France; in Rome, Venice and Genoa in Italy; and hath preacht in speciall Cities in these Kingdomes; and in presence of the French King at Paris, and in the Low Countries, at Antwerpe, Brussells, Dunkirke, &c. who desires to enforme concerning

Note.

concerning some speciall points for the Weale of this State, as himself hath observed above fifty yeers past, which are reduced to these Heads,

First, concerning the Iesuits, and danger they have done to these Kingdoms, labouring that the Oath of Allegiance might not be taken; And the wayes they use with their Penitents, and projecting of Monopolies, of the Ministers and Substitutes they use, and the way quite to roote them out of these Dominions.

Secondly, the reformation of some things in the *Queenes Court*; and of some persons which are fit to be removed.

Thirdly, the *Archbishop of Canterbury*, and of the great dammages done, partly by himself; and in his Court of High Commission.

Note.

Fourthly, of the manner whereby the *Pope* means to intrude himselfe into the Temporall Monarchy of these Kingdoms; and to eschewe all future danger in time coming: What persons are to be removed from hence, and that there should not be permitted any Resident to remain at *Rome* for the *Queen*, nor none here from the *Pope*, nor for foraign Princes (to stir sedition in the State) namely France and Spain.

Fifthly, that Roman Catholiques shall be stopt from going over Sea, with their goods and all.

Note.

First, concerning the first, the whole Christian world doth acknowledge the prediction which the Vniversity of *Paris* doth foresee in two severall Decrees they made, *Anno. 1565.* where the society of *Iesuits* did labour to be members of the Vniversity: *Hoc genus hominum natum est ad interritum Christianae Reipublicae et subversionem literarum*: that is, This society is erected to be the overthrow of Christendome and ruine of Learning, as wofull experience hath taught us.

They were the onely cause of the troubles, which fell out in *Muscovia*, when under pretence to reduce the *Latine Church*, and plant themselves and destroy the *Greek Church* (which is onely profess't in the Empire of *Russia*) the poor King *Demetrius* and his *Queen*, and those that followed him from *Polonia*, were all in one night murdered, by the monstrous usurper of the Crown, and the true Progeny rooted out.

They were the onely cause that moved the *Swedes*, to take Armes against their lawfull King, *Sigismund*, and chased him to *Poland*; and neither he nor his successors were ever able to take possession of *Sweden*; For the Iesuits intention was to bring in the Romish Religion, and root out Protestants. They were the onely cause that moved the *Polonians* to take Armes against the said *Sigismund*, because they had perswaded him to marry too Sisters, one after the other: both of the House of *Austria*.

They have been the sole cause of the Warre entered in *Germany*, since the year, 1619. as *Pope Paulus Quintus* did tell the Generall of their Order, called *Vicelous*, for their Avarice, pretending to take all the Church-Lands from the *Hussits* in *Bobemia* to themselves; which hath caused the death of many thousands, by the Sword, Pestilence, and Famine in *Germany*.

They have been the cause of civill Warres in *France*, during all which time moving the French King to take armes against his own Subjects the Protestants, where innumerable people have lost their lives, as the Seige of *Rocheil* (and other places) will give sufficient proof: For the Iesuits intentions were to set their society in all Cities and Townes Conquered by the King; and quite to abolish the Protestants.

They were the cause of the murder of the last King of *France*.

They were the only Projectors of the *Gunpowder-Treason*, and their Penitents the Actors thereof.

They were the only cause (namely Father *Parsons* that incensed the *Pope* to send so many fulminate Breeves to these Kingdomes, to hinder the Oath of Allegiance, and lawfull obedience to their temporall Prince, that they might still fish in troubled waters.

Their

Their damnable doctrine to destroy and depose Kings, hath been the cause of the Civil Wars, likely to befall these Kingdoms, if God (in his mercy) do not stop it.

They have been the cause of the Monopolies projected in this Kingdome, especially concerning Soape, the Forrest of Dean, and marking of * Butter Caske, where all the Parties were Partners, and Confederates of the Iesuits; as Sir *Bazill Brookes*, sir *Iohn Winter*, and a brother in Law of the said sir *Iohns*, that lived in *Worcestershire*; and Mr. *Ployden*, whose servant called *Baldwyn* (in my presence) about a yeare since did deliver to *Captaine Read* (a substitute of the Iesuits) a hundred pounds, to be given to a Iesuite who lived in his house.

* Granted to *Captaine Read*, chief Agent for the Iesuits. See *Romes* Master-piece, pag. 20, 21, 22.

They have their Lay Brethren which collect duely their Annuities and Rents, and play the Merchants, transporting Cloth & other Merchandizes of great value.

I doe know one, Brother in Law to *Captaine Read*, who continually Trades in Merchandizes, who is a Novice of theirs; and one *Cumbers* of *Lancashire*, who collects their Rents; and one *Grey* of *Barwicke*: they are protected by the *Spanish Embassadour*, and live at his house.

They have their Merchants in *London*, namely one *Evans* worth fifty thousand pounds, who meanes to make them his Heires, and dis-inherit his Kindred. Doctor *Beore* also is their Agent, and puts out this money to Interest.

This *Evans* (who was appointed to be Sheriffe of *London* last yeare) by their perswasion did goe out of *London*, and refused to accept of it, and by them was sent into the Country, and lived retired till *Michaelmas* was past, and escaped to be Sheriffe of *Middlesex*, and paid no Fine for refusing the said Office, being till the time was past in obscurity.

* *Captaine Read* a Scottish man, now Lieutenant Colonel in *Ireland*, (under Col. *Henry Bruce*) is also one of their Agents, and lets their buildings in Long Acre, and other parts of *London* for their use, especially the faire buildings in *Lincolns-Inns-fields*, inhabited sometimes by *George Gage*, and at his death left to my Lady *Gardner*; where the Iesuits ordinarily resorted. It is thought that Mr. *Newton* who built all those faire houses in *Queenes-street* is their Agent, for of himselfe he was never so able as to build the hundredth part of them.

* See *Romes* Master-piece, p. 27. to 25.

It is strange to see the stratagems which they use with their Penitents concerning to Oath of *Allegiance*; If they be poor, they tell them flatly (when they are demanded to take the Oath) that it is damnable and no wayes to be allowed by the Church; If they be of the richer sort, they say they may do as their Conscience will inspire them: And there be some of them that make no Conscience at all, to have it taken so oft as they are demanded.

It is no lesse strange to see, what great Treasures they have heaped up, and made four Colledges in *Flanders*, onely of Annuities of their moneys, and such houses as are now appertaining unto them.

Note.

From Mr. *Sackville* they got ten thousand pounds, and afterwards most miserably dismissed him, so that he was constrained to begge: And after great threatening, they allowed him of all his meanes, only a hundred pound per annum, during life. The like deceit they did use to the whole Regiment of my Lord *Vaux* in *Flanders*, which for the most part were composed of younger Brothers, who at their perswasions, sold their Lands and Annuities, and gave them their moneys; assuring them that they should lose nothing; and get all again: But when they came in their great necessities, and demanded it, they absolutely refused them; and so they saw the most part of those younger Gentlemen perish for want, in Hospitals.

Notes

The like they did with above two hundred Gentlewomen of good extraction, whom they seduced, and got from them their portions; the least having a thousand pounds (for lesse they would not take) and when they came to *Flanders*, they were committed to the charge of Mistresse *Mary Ward*, who forced them to labour with their hands, and live in great misery with bread and water: And at last (like galloping Nuns) made thirty of them to take their Journey to *Rome* and *Naples*, and there to teach young Children: When it came to the Popes knowledge,

Note.

knowledge, he made a thundring Bull against them, either to enter into a Monastery, or else within fifteen dayes to depart the Territories of *Rome*, and within forty dayes all *Italy*; but afterwards this Bull was retracted.

The Colledge of Saint *Omers* is no lesse memorable, which was erected by *Pope Gregory* the thirteenth, and partly indowed by the King of *Spain* with great meanes: The *Iesuits* nevertheless (insatiable cormorants) have by their allurements, got great wealth from *England* under pretence to nourish some Students, which in time might labour in this Vineyard; some by Testament, others by Donation, have left meanes to bring up, some two, some three, and payd twenty five, and thirty pounds *per annum*. But since, they are not willing to undergo the toil to take it yeerly, but have enticed the Donators to give them, some three, some four, and some five hundred pounds; and in my knowledge they got in this manner for nourishing above two hundred; so that they have extorted and got great sums of money from this Kingdome, to the great prejudice of the State.

Note.

The wise State of *Venice*, foreseeing their ambition to creep into the knowledge of their Government, and to Conquer high Territories by tricks, unlawfull means, and sleights: By Order of their great Councell, they were adjudged to be banished for ever their Dominions, and never to return thither till they had the consent of the whole Senate, which is impossible to be obtained, although the French King and the *Pope* have laboured sundry times, yet in vain. And also the said State did declare, That whosoever should speake in their favour (for their re-establisshing) should be degraded of his Honor, and his Posterity after him, and loose all his goods; and the like should befall to them that send their children to their colledges.

Would to God such Lawes were made in these Dominions, severely to punish the Parents for sending their Children to *Iesuits* Colledges: And to conclude, they should be expelled from all humane society, as unfit to be dealt with, for their equivocation and mentall reservation; never telling the truth, being mortall enemies to all charity, and the true fore-runners of Antichrist, oppugning all verity, and taking all for themselves without Communication of good to others: And as for those that are beyond Seas in their Colledges, it were more then necessary, to make a Decree, that within a short time prefixed, they should return to their Native soil, under pain of perpetuall banishment; and their Parents to lose their goods and estates. As also to enquire and learne who they be that do live now at *Doway*, and *St. Omers* under them, and their Parents be brought in question, which may easily be done with small charges; sending two or three over into those parts, who by degrees may know the speciall of them: I omit their juggling with the *Emperor*, King of *France* and *Spain*, and other Potentates, and with the *Popes* themselves, as they have publicquely confest.

Note.

Secondly, not to be tedious, I come to the second point: The reformation of some things in her Majesties Court, is so necessary for the quietnesse of the State, as nothing more; and therefore labour to remove all impediments that may happen.

Note.

It is to be observed, that a great part of the unquietnesse of this State comes from thence; and of some persons about Her Majesty not fit to remain there; For it is known, Her Majesty doth nothing but as she is acquainted with, which she after delivers to the King, and he to the Councell, and when there's any crossing, there arises Larres and unquietnesse.

The actors of those are *F. Phillips*, her Confessor, & the superior of the *Capuchins*.

Note.

This last, in times past, was one of the Knights of *Saint John of Jerusalem*, a most turbulent spirit, and one sent by *Cardinall Richliæ*, to be a spy at this Court for the *French Faction*, who labours by all means to breed dissentions.

For the *French* (as I have read in *Cardinall D'Ossats* Epistles) aime at nothing more then to make a schism betwixt the *English* and *Scots*, that this state may be weakned & not able to do them harm, the more easily to conquer these kingdoms.

This unquiet spirit at all occasions, hath access to Her Majesty, and acquaints Her with all he thinkes fit for the *French Faction*, and when he thinkes it a hard

a hard businesse, then doth he entice *Father Phillips* to present it. This man being of a quiet and meeke nature (yet a great Favourite of *Cardinall Richliens*) Doth acquaint her Majesty with the businesse, and she the King, and obtains by opportunity things which are not fit and convenient for the State.

Note.

Father Phillips, is guided altogether by a *Scottish Grey Fryar*, (who by degrees hath intruded himselfe to be a Clerke of her Majesties Chappell) and he goes by the name of *Master Wilson*, but his true name is *William Tompson*, a Doctor of Divinity, and a most furious and unquiet spirit, and by a nick-name was called *Cacka-fugo* that fire; He rules altogether *Father Phillips*, inso much as he fears him, and dares not disobey him. He rules all the busines which concernes the two Kingdoms, and the most part of the matters for *Rome*.

By his perswasion, *Father Phillips* hath plac'd many unfit persons about her Majesty; He was the only Agent in promoting Sir *John Winter* to be her Majesties Secretary; (he being most addicted to the Lord *William Howards* Daughter) and so got into that place.

He was also the cause that *Signior Georgio Conne* (late Agent of the *Pope* his brother) was admitted to be extraordinary Servant to the Queen; A man altogether unworthy of that place, and a most scandalous person, having at this present three wives alive, as after shall be related; Sundry Priests by his means (to *Father Phillips*) have been admitted to be the Queens extraordinary Servants; Some, by some supposed office or other, as one *Master Laborne*, & *George Gage* (brother to *Colonell Gage* beyond Seas, in *Flanders*) both Oratorian Priests; the one of the *French Faction* very seditious; the other of the *Spanish*; (for his brother is in the King of *Spains* service.) Both these under pretence of some service to the Queen, the one extraordinary Sewer (as I believe) and the other under the name of a Cup-bearer.

NOTE

There is also one *Penricke*, brother to him who is now left Resident at *Rome*; this *Penricke* alias *Jott-Signeur*, is sworne extraordinary Servant to her Majesty; a sworne *Spaniard*, and Intelligencer for *Rome*: In respect his brother is Agent for her Majesty; there being many other which I cannot remember at this time. One *Francis Maitland* alias *Quashes* a *Scottish Fryar* Mendicant, and hath an hundred Crowns yearly as her Majesties Pensioner; a very fire-brand Intelligencer at *Rome*, *France*, *Flanders*, and *Spaine*, with *Lyddington*, *Colonell Symps*, *Chambers*, and *Penricke* at *Paris*. All these, and sundry others, have Protections of the Queens Majesty (who are all factious and turbulent spirits) by *Father Phillips* means, and this *Wilson*s instigation, fit to be removed.

NOTE

Father Phillips his servant, called *John Belsaur* a *Scot*, rules all the rest, and guides *Father Phillips* at his pleasure, and obtains many things not lawfull.

It is not expedient at this present, to remove *Father Phillips* from her Majesty, it will irritate her greatly, but remove all those that incense him: he is a very good man, and of a sweet disposition, but easily perswaded, by Sir *Toby Matthewes*, Sir *John Winter*, *Master Walter Montagne*, who are of the *Cabbinet Councell*.

Thidly, concerning the Bishop of *Canterbury*; It is most notorious, hee hath bin the speciall cause of the troubles in *Scotland*, and jarres betwixt them and the *English*. For when he went to the North with His Majesty, he being of a high and lofty spirit, remarking the government of the Church of *Scotland*, began his Innovation by setting up of Altars, Episcopall Robes, and Organs, which were not seene since the birth of King *James*, more than eighty yeares before in that Kingdom; with which they were much incensed. Inso much that when the common people, upon a Sunday perceiving His Majesty to go on foot from His Pallace of *Holy Rood House*, to the Church at *Edenborough*, and so to return, and all His Nobles with Him; My Lords *Grace* and the Bishop of *Ely* were seen to go in their Coach; they exclaimed on them and layd, *How dare you presume to go so, when our Sovereigne goes on foot; You are the Ragges and servants of the Pope*.

NOTE

That same time he did move his Majesty to make that Church a *Cathedrall*, and appoint a Bishop where was never any before; and so the people were more & more stirred up.

NOTE

At his returne from thence, he moved His Majesty to erect a *High Commission* in all the Bishopricks of that Kingdome, by vertue of a Proclamation which he extorted from His Majesty in August (If I be not deceived) some five years ago; wherein was Ordered, that here in England the Bishops Courts should have no Subordination to any other Courts, no not to His Majesties owne Councell, but should proceed without any dependency, not so much as to use His Majesties Arms in their Seales, but their owne, and so deprive His Majesty of His Supremacy, which was never done since the Raigne of King Henry the Eighth.

So soone as he had obtained that of His Majesty, he in all haste sends this Proclamation to all the Bishops of Scotland, who being blowne up with pride (following the Archbishops footsteps) began to erect a *High-Commission* Court in their Diocesses, and called to it the Gentry and Nobles, punishing them for trifling things; and fining and confining them to the farthest part of the Kingdom, from Galloway to Cathnes, neare three hundred myles. A cruelty never practised in Scotland before in any Age.

Note. Nay, they became so insolent, being made *Privy Councillours* (by the Archbishops sollicitation of His Majesty,) And the Archbishop of Saint Andrews, being made great Chancellor of that Kingdom (never practised this three hundred years) that in open Councell Table they gave the lye to the Peers of the Land; Namely, to the Earle of Argile; which affront was done by one *Sedeferse* now Bishop of Galloway, and resident at this present in London, where began the fire to appeare, which before this was but smoake.

The Nobles, Gentry, and Commons made a league, which they called a Covenant, and combined together for the rooting out of Bishops, and Conservation of their ancient Liberties, upon which is ensued a million of miseries, putting both the Kingdomes to excessive charges, exhausting the Kings Coffers, and oppressing the people.

Note. I believe, If my Lord Archbishop were mecerly questioned, it would be found, he stirred up His Majesty to make up his Army two severall times, which hath bin the occasion of the utter ruine of two Shires, Northumberland and the Bishopricke of Duresme, which losse will not be repaired in an hundred years.

These firebrands Bishops of Galloway and Rosse, who are Clyents to Canterbury, and altogether guided by him; it is more than expedient that they and other Incendiaries were given to the Scots Commissioners to betryed by their Parliament. But I believe Rosse will flye to Ireland, where His Majesty hath given him a Bishopricke: And Galloway will be forced to hide himself in some Island and shake off his Robes, or become a Pedler in Poland, as his Father was before him.

One Sandall, a Clerke of the Rolls told me, he saw my Lord Sterling, Secretary of Scotland, (Agent at Court for the Bishops) viewing very narrowly the Rolls, to see the originall Institutions of the *High Commission*; which he would not have done, had he not bin informed by my Lords Grace.

I may not omit to let you know, how of his large liberality, he hath given to those fire-brand ministers (refuges in this Kingdome) at sundry times, large and profuse charity, which he would never have bestowed on the poore Clergy of his Diocesse.

I come to his Government, wherein he hath bin like to a *Camelion* of divers colours; now punishing of Roman Priests, but poore ones; for the fattest he protected and cherished without all measure; As Father *Leander* Superior of the *Benedictines* Master *Flanders*, and Master *Price*, after *Leanders* death; and Master *Gascorne*, and the whole Order of the *Jesuits*, as hereafter shall be related.

The poore Recusants for going to heare Masse, or only upon suspicion, were cruelly used by him; but the chiefe he tenderly loved and feasted, as Sir *Kenelme Digbie*, and others, to what end you may conjecture.

Afterwards he tooke a fit to punish severely *Anabaptists*, *Familiists*, and *Brownists*, sometimes one, sometimes another; He followed the steps of Cardinal Wol-

sey, and intended, (because he could not be Pope at Rome) to be a Patriarch: in these Kingdoms; To which end ('tis well known) he did so credit and grace Father Leander (afore said) cherishing him above the rest, giving him his care at all times, remaining here at London publicly till his death; and after him Price, and Gascoyne afore-mentioned. NOTE.

At the comming of Father * Leander, he began to looke chearfully upon Recusants; His old then began he to erect Altars, to take away the Communion Table, to make all kneel when they took the Sacrament, to be all uncovered at Divine service, to stand up at the reading of the Gospell, bow at the name of Iesus, and to consecrate an old Church a new, as that of Saint Gylles, with many other Arch-tricks, that he might be in the Popes and the Queenes favour, and so continue in his Majesties good liking. Then began he to use rigour against Puritan Ministers, calling them into his high Commission, some for Symony as Mr. John Ward, and others of Suffolk, some for contradictting the Bishop of Norwich; others for Heresy, as one Doctor Everd, Chaplin to the Earle of Holland.

Then began he to practise his Excommunications and aggravations against Sir Robert Willoughby (Sonne in Law to the Bishop of Worcester) and Mr. Hope a Scottish man, Cup-bearer to his Majesty, for contemning his Citations. In the end, such were his Actions, that he is an Admiration to the whole world for Inconstancy. At the last he became soe outrageous, as were never any of his Predecessors, conventing before him the Bishop of Lincolne; whose heavy hand and Dragon-like wrath hee felt many yeeres, being in Prison in the Tower of London.

Soe was Bishop Goodman soundly whipt, for refusing to subscribe to his Canons, being laid in the Gate-house; so that he became the wonder of this Age.

Noe lesse wonderfull hath hee beene in his Vatican at Lambeth, sitting in his Gracefull Throne, compassed with Bishops, Deanes, Archdeacons, Doctors, Proctors, Notaries and Registers, guarded with a multitude of Tipstaves, from all Prisons in and about London, besides a hellish Guard of Promoters, in his Tribunall sitting in his Corner-Cap, Lawne sleeves and Rotchet; No Pope is so glorious on most festivall dayes, as his Grace is on Thursdays in tearme time.

'Tis a petious thing worthy of consideration to see, what Injustice is don in that Court by his owne knowledge; and what extortion and exaction is used by his Officers. There is not a more corrupt Court in the world, wherein Innocency is punished, & publique sinnes countenanced; the greatnes of the extortions of that Court cannot be expressed; some are a whole yeare before they can be heard, & at the last for a fatherly Benediction, are remitted to Sir John Lambe and Doctor Ducke, I will instance in two parties.

The Lady Willoughby spent in suit itt lesse then two yeares (as shee related to me) five hundred pound; and above, and all tended, that her Husband should weare a white sheete at the Church doore. When [God knowes] her selfe deserved no lesse; For Doctor Ryves assured me, she was declared innocent by Bribery.

The other was Mr. Stapleton, Nephew to the Earle of Kingstone, who claimed a certaine Lady to be his Wife, having married her before two witnesses, and used the formall words of Matrimony; And leene by the said witnesses lye together in naked bed; yet by force of money he was divorced from her, having spent in the suit, in Charges only, three hundred pounds.

In like sort Francis Conne [brother to Signiour Georgio Conne] now Cup-bearer extraordinary to her Majesty, was convented at the high Commission, for having married one Mistresse Steward, his Country Woman in Scotland, and had married another, (one Mistresse Wiseman) in England, with whom he cohabited here in London.

The Scottish Woman claymed him, but she being poore and none to protect her, after two yeates suite he was declared to be Wisemans husband, money was his Cause for him selfe assured me, it cost him in gifts, feasting his Advocates and Clerks, above 150. pounds. What intollerable Injustice was this, it being notoriously knowne that the Scottish Woman was his wiife?

The chiefe Extortioners are, the Registers of the Court, *Stephen Knight*, and his companion (Brother in law to *Sir John Lambe*).

When his Grace foresawe, the Parliament would call them in question, he presently deposed them, and made the said Knight principall Proctor in his Court, who fearing to be questioned for the same misdemeanours fled with his whole Family to *Normich*, and there bought of that Bishop the Registers office, and so is like to continue his accustomed trade of extortion, except this Honourable Court call him coram to answer his innumerable oppressions which are to be seene in the Registers booke of the high Commission.

He hath two bonds of mine, and two letters of Attorney made by me to him; His ordinary course was this; to take for every one twenty shillings, for that he should have had but two shillings sixpence, which extended to a great summe in the yeare; And out of Terme he had Fees for six Clerkes, and so many Promoters, which went throughout England, plaging the poore, and enriching themselves and their Matter Knight.

Likewise, the other extortioner was *Bonnyragge*, the greatest Knave in the Country; For money he would doe any thing; He carried in his Pouch a number of Citations, and when he pleased for money dismissed any one; *A Master Quasbet*, *Mr. Smith* the Iesuite, and *Mr. Fisher* of the same Order; And one *Cutbert*, a lay brother of theirs, of whom I spoke before; A great number of lay persons Reculants, whom I know have beene dismiss by him, some for forty shillings, some for twentie shillings, but the least was ten shillings: Of a great part of Anabaptists, and Brownists, some that were poore he imprisoned; But the rich for money escaped, as themselves will depose. It is fit this *Bonnyragge*, and also the Bishop of Londons Pursivants be called in question, with many other of his Promoters, and under Officers; As *Arthur Haffe* living in *Saint Peters* street in Westminster.

4

NOTE.

I come now to the fourth point concerning the Popes aspiring to the temporall government of these Kingdomes, and the manner how he proceeds, which I will clearly set downe.

NOTE.

You shall be informed what his Ambition was, seeing himselfe exalted to *Saint Peters* Chaire, being before *Cardinall* protector of the *Scottish Nation*. And which is ominous; the two former Popes *Clement the eight*, and *Paul the fifth*, his Predecessors, having beene in *minoribus* protectors of *Scotland*. He thought to do something more to reduce both (under one King) to the *Romish Church*. And as *Clement the seventh* had by his miscarriage beene the Cause of this disorientation, from the obedience of the sea of *Rome*, he might be the meanes of their reconciliation. Wherefore he was no sooner made Pope but the same day with his owne hand (a thing not accustomed) he writ a letter to King *James*, of good memory, shewing his election & promotion to *Saint Peters* Chaire and offering his correspondency with his Majesty; at the same instant he nominated Signior *Georgio Conne* a *Scottish* youth (who was Schoole fellow with his Nephew Signior *Francisco*, afterwards *Cardinall*) who should informe him of all important businesse of *England* and *Scotland*.

This Signior *George*, was a very faire youth of some fiftene yeares of age, and of a faire disposition, having also access to his Holinesse. (you may understand my meaning for in minority being Legat in *Polonia* hee was much suspected of incontinency.) And as soone as any *English*, *Scottish* or *Irish* Runagates came to *Rome*, he went to their lodgings in the Popes behalfe, and brought them of his Holinesse Bread, and Wine, and other rarities, as *Boligman*, *Sausages* and other dainties; letting them see all the Antiquities of *Rome*, and their Churches, though they were not of their Religion, and feasting them on the Popes charge. when they visited the seven Churches, as the Lord *Craven* and others; And now the Pope with his politique braine, began to ex-cogitate the meanes, to have correspondency with the King; by fortune there was at *Rome* a *Hollender* expert in drayning of Lands, to make the *Marish* grounds pasturable and arable; who having got access to his Holynesse. Informed him, that all the *Marish* grounds in the champaigne of *Rome*, which was above six miles) might be drained and made profitable.

The

The Pope [for his profit] gave great care, and understanding by this man the meanes to effect it in a short time, that he needed great store of men to worke, and that of all Nations the English were most expert, The Pope presently takes hold thereof, apprehending it, as a fit occasion to treat with our K. wherefore he sends hither the *Hollander* in post halt, by whom *Signior Georgio* writ to sundry of his friends, viz. to some of the *Queenes Court*, by whose meanes [at last] he got access to his Majesty signifying from whence he came, and the great profit which would redound to this Kingdome, if he would permit some two thousand Familyes of his People, with their Wives and Children to goe and inhabit there, and after, successively more, For he had gotten promise of the Pope, that they should not be troubled, but use their consciences without any vexation at all: More, this *Hollander* signified to his Majesty, the great Commodity it would be to the trade in those parts, for transporting from hence, Cloth, pewter, lead and other Commodities, and from thence Wines, Rayfins, Oyles, Capers and other fruits, with a great quantity of Allome.

Note.

The businesse is remited to the Councell to consider, if his Majesty might have correspondence with the Pope, as a temporall Prince, as he hath with other Princes and States, (who are not so potent) as *Holland Venice Florence, &c*? After mature deliberation it was concluded, he might, for the causes prementioned.

Note.

The *Hollander* returnes with speed to *Rome*, shewing how well he had dispatched, together with His Majesties Declaration, and Order of the Councell, with Letters and answers of sundry persons to *Signior Georgio*, whom hee had feasted at *Rome*, and knew of the *Queenes Court*, being his Countrymen.

Then was it thought fit by those about Her Majestie, to begin the Treaty, and to breake that holy Ice for the Popes honours sake; then was nominated Sir *Robert Douglas* (Cousin Germain to the Marquesse *Douglas*) an ancient friend to Father *Philips*, and *Signior Georgio*; a discrete Gentleman, who had much travailed, and was expert in the *Italian, French, Spanish, and Germain* languages, A Courtier, yet modest and discrete.

Note.

But the *Cardinall Richleau* must be the man, who should have the honour to direct him, and to be sent by him to begin the correspondence betwixt his Holines and the *Queene*, (for in all this businesse the King must not bee mentioned) from whom with many Letters, this Gentleman goes to the Court of *France*; where after few dayes hee is dispatcht by the said *Cardinall*, with money to make his journey and beare his charges at *Rome*, where gratioously hee is accepted of the Pope, his Nephew, and others of the Popes Cabinet Councell.

There hee remained above one yeare, and after a good viaticke was dismissd, and returned to *London*, with a few gifts (but small ones) to her Majestie, Father *Philips*, and others of that Function; As some *Meddalls Rosceres, Agnus Deus* and Pictures.

NOTE.

After this Gentlemans departure from *Rome*, was presently sent hither an *Oratorian Priest* called *Signior Georgio Panzano*, under pretence with a Breve from his Holinesse, addrest to the Clergie, secular and regular, and Lay-Catholikes of the two Kingdomes of *England* and *Scotland*; The substance of that Breve was, That his holinesse was verry sorry, for such jarres and divisions* between the secular and the Clergy, to the great prejudice of the Catholike Church, and for that respect (having a Fatherly care of Soules, in these Kingdomes of *England* and *Scotland*) he had sent expressly, that Reverend Father, *Georgio Panfano* one of his Family to compose and reconcile them if he could.

* See the Popes Nuncio. See here p. 100. 106. 112.

This man at *Paris*, quits his Priests Robes, and drest himselfe in secular Apparell; his shaven Crowne is covered with a monstrous Periewig: he writes to Father *Philips*, who is to bee the *primum mobile* and director of all, who sends to him at *Paris*, as to an *Italian* Gentleman desirous to see the Kingdome; A passe was delivered him to *Gallie*, where he hires a baryne and brings with him two *Raggamuffian* young boys, and one Interpreter, who was presently sent backe to save charges.

At his first comming to *London* he lodged at the *Italian Ordinary* in the Strand;

D d 3

but

but shortly (being disturbed by much resort of persons of great quantie which repaired to him) he tooke Chambers, in one Signior Germynes Houle (a Lombard by Nation) living then neere to the Newexchange, as you passe to the Covent Garden: this Agent had sundry meetings with the superiours of the Regular Order, but to those meetings the Jesuites would not come, though called and oft desired by the Popes Agent; At last it was concluded, they should not meddle with any Court businesse, they should speake honourably of the King and Queene, and be sparing to discourse of the Oath of Allegiance; yet never to undertake that it was altogether unlawfull.

This Agent returned having negociated his principall businesse, which was to have
 * See the * Signior Georgio (the Popes best friend) to bee sent hither, which her Majestie ob-
 Popes Nun- tained of the King, with great importunitie. Panfano having remained here, about two
 cio. yeares, and having had his Viaticum and good presents from her Majestie, and Catho-
 likes of the better sort, went away; In whose place succeeded Signior Georgio, bring-
 ing with him a great Breve, declaring him to be Apostolicall Nuntio; and in his
 company, the Lord Don Luces brother, and his Pedagogue, one Connigham, Nephew
 to Sir David Connigham, his Majesties receivor in Wales.

This Nuntio, (but styled after inter-Nuntio, for not incensing the States) comes
 See the Pops hither in May, and finding her Majestie at Homeby in Northamptonshire, repaying
 Nuncio, and thither, he was presently admitted, and then likewise gained audience of the King.

To the Queene, hee presents rare gifts, some reliques of Saints, meddalles, a few of
 Romes Ma- Gold and Silver, with the Popes picture stampt on them, and other trifles of small valew;
 ster-peece. In leu whereof, shee sends to the Pope, a great quantity of scarlett to vest his Holi-
 nesse, his Nephew, and the other Cardinals of the English Faction; Hee receives
 an hundred for one.

Here, he visits the great Ladyes and Gentlewomen of the Court; Hee stayes all
 the Progresse at Northampton; returning to London, tis worthy of consideration
 to observe his carriage day and night, courting of Ladyes and Gentlewomen.

In Terme time, all the Gentry of both Sexes, yea and poore women of any fashi-
 on that had scarce means to bring them to London, and were come thither to bee cu-
 red of the Kings evill, must likewise visit him.

Such were his comportments here, that I am ashamed to relate them. His night-
 See Romes lie Conversation abroad, and Conventicles with Ladyes; Sir John Winter, Her Ma-
 Master- jesties Secretarie, Sir Ioby Matthew, Sir Kenelme Digby, and Master Walter Moun-
 peece. tague, were his Cabinet Councell; This last aspyring to bee Cardinall after Signior
 Georgio's death.

Yea, hee was so impudent and shamelesse, as to visit one of the greatest Ladyes of
 the Kingdome alone, who being found by her Husbond, and demanded by him, what made
 him so bold, he was in feare to have beene precipitated out of the Window; This his own
 Secretary told me: Two houres before day (In Winter) his manner was to visit La-
 dyes and Gentlewomen, and to enquire of them how they slept that night. After
 three yeares and two months, impatient to stay any longer (aspyring to a Cardi-
 nalls Hat) laden with great store of Jewells and Gold (which he got, partly of the mo-
 nies which Recusants lent to the King, to assist him in his Northern expedition; and
 partly given him by Ladies and Gentlewomen, amounting to above ten thousand pounds)
 he returned to Rome, spitting his lungs; But the truth is, he was soundly payd with
 the French disease: A brave instrument to reduce this Realme to the Roman Religion!

Note.

Hee was very lavish and prodigall in his gifts, spending many thousand pounds,
 fitter to have beene bestowed on his poore kindred, and beggerly Parents in Scotland
 who had scarcely to nourish them.

The Jesuites likewise collected from their Penitents, and got (at least) two parts of
 that money to themselves.

Note.
 * See Romes
 Master-
 peece.

To returne to the Pope, so soone as he had Intelligence, that his Ganymede and
 Creature was received with such honour, he thought he had got already, the tempo-
 rall Monarchy of great Brittain, making his Eldest * Nephew Francisco protector
 of

of England, Scotland, and Ireland, and erecting a particuler Congregation for the mat-
ters of these Kingdomes; whereof his said Nephew was President, and two other Car-
dinalls joyned with him, and a new Secretary; and other Prolates of that Court, his
Councillours.

See Romes
Master
peece.

Hee gratiouſly entertained Maſter *Walter Mountague* keeping him in his Pallace,
and ſending him abroad in his *Nephewes Coach*; And others of any note, as my
Lord of *West-Meath* an Irish Baron, and others.

Hee made *Signior Georgio* Patriarch of *Jerusalem*, an Honour without any Re-
venew.

No leſſe was his pride puſt up, when *Sir William Hamilton* (brother to the Earle of
Abercorne, and Cozen to the *Marqueſſe Hamilton*, was ſent Ambaſſadour from our
Queen to that Court; whoſe carriage was like to *Signior Georgio's* here, carrying clo-
thed in mans apparell thorough *England, Scotland, France, and Italy*, his ſweet heart
Eugenius Bonny, a daughter of the Yeoman of His Majesties Wine Celler.

After *Signior Georgio*, he ſent hither a new Nuntio, *Count Roſſetti*, a Noble man
of *Ferrara*, but of better carriage, then his other deceased, whom hee intended to
make *Cardinall*, in leiu of the other deſunct.

Note.

As ſoone as *Walter Mountague* heard of *Signior Georgio's* death, he ſent his Chap-
laine *Pott* to *Rome*, with Letters from Her Maſteſty, intreating his Holynesse to make
him *Cardinall*; The Popes answer was, he would gladly condeſcend to that motion, If ſhe
would oblige her ſelfe to make an eſtate to him for his maintenance conformable to a Car-
dinall; So was it daſht; And ſo will all correſpondency bee hereafter with that
Court, by the wiſe and grave Councell of the Parliament. So that Maſter *P. ricke*,
Agent in that Court for the Queene be called backe; And a certaine Knight, of the
Order of *Saint Iohn of Ieruſalem*, (whom *Count Roſetti* intends to ſend hither, to
keepe correſpondency) be likewiſe diſmiſt from hence; which done, all that Project
will end in ſmoake; Alwayes provided, that Maſter *Mountague*, *Sir Toby Matthew*,
Sir Kenelme Digby, *Sir Iohn Winter*, be removed and barr'd from going to *Rome*, or
to any of his Holineſſe Territories; Nor yet to *Italy*, for feare of ſedition, and keep-
ing correſpondency with their associates.

Note.

I heard a French Gentleman of good worth ſay, that hee had ſeene a Breve from
Rome, with this Inſcription, *Tobia Mattheo Sacerdoti ſocietatis Ieſu* which is, *To Toby*
Matthew Priſt of the Order of *Ieſus*; wherein (inter alia) was, *Confirma Amazonas*
illaque ſtrenue laborant in vinea pro Chriſto. Firſt, *Confirme* thoſe *Amazonian Court*
Ladies (that is) thoſe brave Catholike *Catamountaines* of the Popiſh faction, that labour
luſtily for the advancement of Popery.

Note.

Touching the fifth point, in my Iudgement, *Roman Catholikes*, eſpecially thoſe
that have lands and goods, ſhould bee ſtopt from going over Sea; In reſpect by the
ſelling and Mortgaging of their Lands, the money is transported to forreigne parts,
and there ſpent, whereby the Kingdome is depauperated, His Maſteſtie looſes his
yearely pay for their Recuſancy; the Shires where they remained are diſabled to
pay ſo much ſubſidies as formerly in time of their Reſidence; And finally the poore
looſeth much by their abſence.

5.

This voluntary Relation of this ancient Intelligent, *Popiſh-Priſt* (which I finde
to bee generally true and reall, by other Letters, and Intelligence, and concurring
with the Plot diſcovered to the Archbiſhop and King Himſelfe in my *Romes Ma-
ſter-peece*, in moſt particulars touching the *Jefuites*, *Scottiſh troubles*, *Popes Nun-
ciores*, and other Instruments of his here nominated) gives much luſter and confir-
mation to many of the premies and ſome enſuing paſſages; therefore I could not
well omit it, though it be ſomewhat tedious.

But to proceed: the 2d. intended Civill War againſt the Scots ceaſing contrary to
the Prelates expectations, through the overruling providence of God, both in the
rude Common Souldiers, who reſuſed to ſerve under their Popiſh Commanders
(ſome of whom they murdered) declayming againſt the Biſhops, breaking down
their

their New-Rayles, Altars, Crucifixes, in diverse places, and in sundry of our Nobles who Petitioned His Majestie for a Parliament, and New Treaty with the Scotts together with the Generall opposition of Ministers and people against the new *Canons* and, &c. *Oath*, which put a period to this Warre without blood-shed: hereupon there were sundry New desperate Plots, Conspiracies, Councells entred into by the Popish and Prelaticall party to undermine this Parliament soone after it was first Assembled, and imbroyle all our Kingdomes in New Civill Warres and distractions more dangerous then the former; of which I shall give you a short hint, out of the *Commons Journall*, and some other papers, letters, examinations which have come unto my hands.

* Diurnall
Occurrences
p. 36.

NOTE

February 10. 1640. There were foure Gentlemen of the House of Commons, went up to the Lords * to discover a great designe on foote among the Papists in *England, Ireland, and Wales*. That there were in *Lancashire* one thousand five hundred, in *Ireland* eight thousand Papists in Armes, and many thousands in *South-Wales*, and *North-Wales*, well payd and provided for by the Earle of *Strafford*, Earle of *Worcester*, and others; and did use frequently to goe to Masse at the sound of the drum.

There was also a great Nobleman in *Wales* that bought up all the Provisions hee could, kept Corne enough for three yeares, and got all the Arms he could, and had a strong Commission to furnish whom hee would: And there was also a Letter brought to the house, as from Secretary *Windebanke* in the *Queenes* name, to have all the Papists fast every Saturday for the good successe of that designe. Whereupon there was also this day an order made, that all Iudges in the next Circuits at the Assizes, should put the Law in execution against Iesuites and Priests, and make returne of the proceedings herein to the Parliament.

* The Diurnall
Occurrences
p. 42.

Upon this occasion, *February 22.* There was a Message from the Lords for a Conference with both Houses for the disbanding of the *Irish* Army, and the removing of Papists from the Court and the English Papists in the *Queenes* house-hold.

* The Diurnall
Occurrences.
pag. 93. 94.

* *May 5. 1641.* There was discovered to the House of Commons a strange conspiracy in agitation, against the whole body of the Kingdom, for the landing and bringing in of a *French* Army, to which our *English* Army should be joyned, which were all to meete by the 22. of this Moneth, whereupon the House sent out diverse warrants for Master *Henry Perry*, Colonell *Goring*, Sir *John Suckling*, Master *Henry Jermyn*, and others as conspirators therein, to appeare before the House of Commons the next day.

There was also intelligence given to the House of Commons of 1400. barrells of Powder that were prepared in readinesse, and loaden by stealth, to bee carried away by the appointment of the Conspirators, upon which the Commons appointed some of the House to make further enquiry thereof.

Hereupon most of the parties upon this discovery fled into *France*, and had passes to transport them without search from the King.

* The Diurnall
Occurrences
pag. 102.

May 14. There was a Report in the Commons House of a *Jesuite*, That should say (it being noised the Parliament House was on fire) *the time was not yet come, but it would bee so ere long*; and of another that should say, *there would bee many fatherlesse Children in London very shortly*: upon which there were more warrants sent out for the attaching of those *Jesuites*.

Ibid. pag. 106

May 19. There was one *Newton* a Priest an English man, which belonged to the Spanish Ambassadour, committed to the Gate-House, also a Message was sent to the Lords, desiring that the French Letters might bee stop't this weeke, as they were the last, and viewed by a Committee, which was accordingly done, the Committee reporting they had both weekes received intelligence of diverse dangerous plots in agitation against the State, but they have not as yet made a full report in disclosing of the same.

Ibid. pag. 113
114.

Vpon this danger from Recusants, the Committee appointed to provide carefully against their future attempts, *May 29.* presented their resolutions to the House
That

That if any man entertained a Popish servant knowing him to bee so, and lodged him but one night, he should be imprisoned without Baile, or mainprize, during the Kings pleasure; But if hee knew it not, for the present, if upon after knowledge of it, if he keepe him in his House a moneths time, he should not only bee imprisoned, but be fined according to the contempt. Likewise if any man married a Reculant, and had issue by Her, his Children should not onely bee Christened after the manner of the Church of England, but they should be also brought up in the Protestant Religion. In the willing neglect of which, they were not onely to bee imprisoned, but fined for their contempt.

Also if any man knew where any Armor Powder or other Ammunition which belonged to any Reculant was kept and gave not notice to the next Justices of Peace thereof, but concealed it, they likewise to bee imprisoned, without Bayle or mainprize, and fined for their contempt.

After this *May 2.* one *Sanford* was committed to prison by the House, for inticing a young Gentlewoman to goe beyond Sea to bee a Nun: And Master *Presston* and Master *Allen* committed, for refusing both the Oath of Allegiance and Supremacie. Ibid. pag. 117.

June 10. 13. 16, &c. The Conspiracy of Master *Iermyn* and the rest out of diverse Letters and examinations was reported to the House to consist of these particulars. Ibid. p. 121.
 1. To bring in a French Army, and to surrender *Portsmouth* into their hands. 2. To seize upon the Tower of *London*: 3. To bring in the Northern Army to *London* to overthrow the Parliament, to support Episcopacy (the Bishops and Episcopall Clergy being to maintaine 2000. Horses for this purpose) and uphold the Kings Prerogative and Revenew to the full as it was formerly. 4. To keepe the Irish Army on foote from being disbanded, till the Scots were first disbanded. 137. 140. 151. 153, 154.

June 24. 1641. There was a Conference at a Committee of both Houses managed by Master *Pym*, consisting of diverse heads, whereof the fourth head was touching the *Queenes most Excellent Majestie* which contained diverse particulars.

1. **T**hat His Majestie, may be pleased by advise of his Parliament, to perswade the *Queene* to accept some of the Nobility, and others of trust into her Majesties service, into such places as are now in her disposall.

Diurnall Occurrences
near the end.

2. That no Iesuite nor none of other Orders, what Country men soever, whether French or Italian, be received into Her Majesties service nor any Priest of His Majesties Dominions, English, Scottish, or Irish, and that they be restrained from coming to Court.

3. That the Colledge of Capuchines at *Somerset House* may be dissolved, and sent out of the Kingdom: these two last mentioned concerning the *Queene*, Priests, I. suites and Capuchines, for these particular reasons.

1. Publike danger, and scandall of this Kingdome, and peace of the Kingdome.

2. Dis-affection of some of these wicked conspirators is expressed in two Letters, which Letters were here read openly.

3. A particular Letter of Father *Philips* there also read.

4. Because of the Priests, Iesuites, and the Colledge, there are diverse great quantities of gold transported frequently.

4. The fourth particular that concerneth the *Queen*, is upon speciall occasion of his Majesties absence: That their Lordships will bee pleased to joyne with us to advise the King, that some of the Nobility and others of qualitie, with competent Guardes may be appointed to attend the *Queens* person against all designes of Papists, and of ill affected persons, and of restraining resort thither in his absence.

5. The fifth Head concerneth the Kings Children; that some persons of publike trust and well affected in Religion, might be placed about the Prince, who may take care of his education.

education, and the rest of his Children; especially in matters of Religion and liberty.

NOTE.

6. The sixth Head concerned such as come into the Kingdom, with Titles OF BE-
ING THE POPES NUNCIO, that it may bee declared, that if any man
come with instructions into this Kingdome, from the Pope of Rome, he shall be in case of
high Treason, out of the Kings Protection, and out of the protection of the Law. And
there is notice upon very good grounds, that Count ROSSETI (The Popes Nun-
cio) doth yet continue in the Kingdome, AND YET RESORTS UNTO
THE COURT: (notwithstanding the Kings former Promise to the Houses, to
send him hence.)

Diurnall Oc-
currences, p.
160, &c.

A little after Father Philips the Queenes Confessor writ a very Se-
ditionous Letter to Mr. Mountague into France, intercepted, and produced
to bee read in the House of Commons, by Master Pym, the 25. of
June 1641. to this effect, to stirre up the French against
the PARLIAMENT.

NOTE.

This good King and Queen are left very naked; the Puritans if they durst, would
pull the good Queen in pieces: Can the good King of France suffer a Daughter of
France his Sister, and her Children to be thus affronted? Can the wise Cardinall endure
England and Scotland to unite, and not be able to discerne; in the end it is like they will
joyne together and turn head against France? A stirring Active Ambassabour might
do good servite here; I have sent you a Copy of the Kings Speech on Saturday last,
at which time he discharged his conscience, and was advised to make that speech by
the Earle of Bristoll, and the Lord Sey, but I believe there is a mistake in the wri-
ting, and that it should have bin the Lord Savill. This Speech did much operate
to the disadvantage of the Earle of Strafford for the Commons were much there-
by incensed and inflamed against him; and this brought forth the next day being
Monday, a Protestation which was taken in both Houses of Parliament; of the
same nature, but rather worse than the Scottish Covenant.

The Londoners who are very boysterous, came upon Munday 5 or 6000. and
were so rude, that they would not suffer the Lords to come and go quietly and
peaceably to their houses; but threatned them, that if they had not justice, and if
they had not his life, it should go hard for all those that stood for him, following
them up and down and calling for Justice, justice.

There was in the House of Commons, fifty six that denied to passe the Earle of
Straffords Bill, their names were taken, and they were fixed upon posts in divers
parts of London, and there was written over the head, these are Straffordians, the
betrayers of their Country.

By this meanes it came to passe that the Lords and Iudges were much affrighted,
and the most of his friends in the Lords House forsooke him all; the Popish Lords
did absent themselves, the Lord of Holland and Hartford were absent, so was Bristol
and others; Savill and the Duke onely stucke close and faithfully to him, and some
few other Lords. God knowes the King is much dejected, the Lords much affigh-
red, which makes the Citizens and House of Commons shew their heads: some
have braved little lesse than to unthroned His Majesty, who if hee had but an ordi-
nary spirit, might easily quash and suppress these people. Our good Queen is much
afflicted, and in my conscience, the Puritans if they durst would teare her in pieces;
this cannot be for the honour of France, to endure a Daughter of that Nation, and
her Children, should be thus oppressed and affronted.

NOTE.

The Earle of Holland is made Generall of the Army, whither he is gone down;
the E. of Newport Master of the Ordnance, Belfore Lieverenant of the Tower hath
proved an arrant Traytor to the King, who commanded him upon his Allegiance
to receive a Captain and 1000 men into the Tower, which he most traiterously re-
fused

NOTE.

refused to doe. One clause is omitted which should have bin placed in the middle of the Letter, which was to this effect: That there was a Report in London, that the Parliament House was on fire, whereupon there was more than 1000 people very suddenly gathered together, whereby you may easily perceive the heighth and violence of the peoples affections, *May 6. Anno Dom. 1641.*

There was another Letter sent from one *Robert Phillips*, one of the *Queenes Priests* (supposed to *Master Mountague*) to this effect; You may expect some company with you ere long, *Crofts*, *Suckling*, *Piercy*, *Iermaine* are gone; all things here are in great uncertainties, *Protestation* is made, and taken by both Houses, much like, but much worse than the *Scottish Covenant*. I sent you some money by *Mr. Iermaine*; but now that he is gone, I make some doubt whether he might be mindfull of you to take it with him. I have spoke to the *Queen* about your occasions, and will do what I can, though I am not able to undertake much.

Your loving friend,
FRAN: PHILIPS.

Hereupon *Father Philips* was sent for by a Messenger to appear before a Committee that afternoon to be examined about it.

Ibidem p. 254

The Messenger coming to *White-hall*, and finding him, acquainted him therewith, who sayd he would go in and cate something, and come presently and goe with him.

But by a backe door he went and acquainted the *Queen* with his sending for; and after some stay came and told the Officer that he had bin with the *Queen*, who had commanded him that he should not go till she had spoke with the *King*, and that he would obey her command before the *Parliament*. Which being related to the *House of Commons*, they were much distast at it, and sent another Warrant to apprehend and bring him forthwith the next day as a delinquent.

There was a so a Warrant sent by the *Serjeant at Arms* for the *Popes Nuncio*, and to bring him likewise before the *House*, but he was not to be found. The next day, the *King* sent a Message to the *Commons*, promising that the *Popes Nuncio* should be presently sent away out of this Kingdom. Presently hereupon, the Officer was again sent with a Warrant to apprehend *Father Philips*; and waiting for him at *White-hall*, complaint had bin made (as it seemed) to the *King* about it, and the *Lord Chamberlain* at the *Kings Command*, sent for the Officer to examine him; by what Authority he came within the Verge of the Court, to Attach any one; who shewing his Warrant, desired he would trust him with it to shew the *King*, which the Officer did; And the *Lord Chamberlain* soon after returning, gave this answer; That His Majesty would satisfie the *House* about it, if *Philips* did not appeare. But in the afternoon, the sayd *Philips* appeared before the Committee, and was examined, and commanded to attend the *House of Commons* the next day. After which *Father Philips* was committed prisoner to the *Tower*, and these Articles of Impeachment drawn up against him; most of them comprised in *Brownes Relation*.

NOTE.

The Impeachment and Articles of complaint against *Father Philips the Queens Confessor*, lately committed to the *Tower*, by the Honourable and High Court of PARLIAMENT.

Ibidem p. 400. to 411.

That the sayd *Father Philips* hath bin observed to have bin a great cause, both in himselfe, and his Adherents, of a great part of the unquietnesse of this State.

1.

He with *Parsons* and other their Assistants were the onely cause, that the *Pope* was stirred up to send *Brevies* to these Kingdoms of *England*, and *Scotland*, and to hinder the oath of Allegiance, and lawfull obedience of the subjects to our Gracious King, that so they may still fish in troubled waters,

2.

Note.

3. The damnable Doctrine, which he and other Iesuits have taught, to destroy and depose Kings, hath bin the cause of the civill Wars, like to be the fall of these Kingdomes, if God in his mercy did not prevent it.

4. They have bin the cause of the Monopolies projected in this Kingdome; especially concerning the Forrest of Deane, and marking of butter Caske, where all the parties were partners and Confederates with them; as *Sir Basill Brooke*, *Sir John Winter*, and a brother in Law of the sayd *Sir John*, that lived in Worcester-shire, and *Master Ployden*, whose servant named *Baldwin*, hath bin seen to deliver to *Captain Read* a substitute of the Iesuits, an hundred pounds at a time, to one Iesuite that lived in his house.

5. *Father Philips* hath bin a great Actor with the superiour of the *Capuchions*, who is a most turbulent spirit, and was sent hither by Cardinall *Richlieu* of France, to be a Spye at this Court for the French Faction, and hath therefore laboured by all means to breed dissentions; for the French Aime at nothing more than to make a Schisme betwixt the English and the Scots, that this State might be so weakned, and made unable to withstand them, that so they might have an opportunity to Conquer these Kingdoms; these unquiet spirits having access to her Majesty, may importune things not fit for the State.

6. The sayd *Philips* hath bin guided by a *Grey-Fryar*, who by degrees hath intruded himselfe to be a Clerke of her Majesties Chappell, and Chaplain Extraordinary in time of Progresse; who when he is out of London, goeth by the name of *Master Wilson*, but his true name is *William Tompson* Doctor of Divinity, as some Iesuites have affirmed, but a most furious spirit and unquiet; and therefore by a Nick-name, is by some called *Cacafugo*, that is as much as if in English you should say, Shit-fire; by whom *Father Philips* hath bin so led, that he hath bin very officious to perform whatsoever he would have done. These two have ruled all the busines concerning the two Kingdoms on the Popish parts, and for the most part of Rome also.

7. The sayd *Father Philips* hath placed many unfit persons about her Majesty, *Sir John Winter* to be her Majesties Secretary, *Seignior Georges Comme* late Agent of the Pope his Brother, was by his means admitted to be servant Extraordinary to the Queen, a man altogether unfit for that place, a most scandalous person, having three wives all now alive.

8. Sundry persons by the sayd *Father Philips* have been admitted to be the Queens servants Extraordinary, by some supposed office or other: as *Master Labourne*, *George Gage* (brother to Colonell *Gage*) both Oratoriant Priests; the one of the French Faction very seditious, the other of the Spanish, whose brother is now left Resident at Rome: for therby his Master *Sr. William Hambleton* late Agent at Rome: *Penricke* is sworne servant Extraordinary to her Majesty, who is a sworne Spaniard and Intelligencer for Rome, in respect his Brother is Agent here, by *Father Philips*: These and many others who are factious and turbulent spirits, have by *Father Philips* his means received Protection from the Queens Majesty.

9. The sayd *Philips* hath been much ruled by *Sir Toby Mathewes*, *Sir John Winter*, and *Master Walter Mountague*.

10. He was very forward with his Complices, for the breaking of the Ice to begin the Treaty here for the Popes honours sake; and when *Sir Robert Douglass*, and *Seignior Georgio* were nominated, whom he thought most fit, Cardinall *Richlieu* was thought fittest to be the man, who should direct him to begin the correspondence betwixt the Pope and the Queen; and therefore he was sent to France with many Letters, and from thence he was dispatched for Rome by the Cardinall, where he was received with great respect, and after a viaticke, he was dispatched again for England with some few small gifts, Pictures, Crosses, *Agnus Deies*, and such like Popish stufte to *Father Philips*, and other of that Function.

11. The sayd *Father Philips* was the chiefe Agent in correspondency with, and bringing in of *Seignior Georgio Panzani*, the Oratorian Priest, by whose direction, this Priest

Priest being at Paris, left wearing of Priest's clothes, and went in the habite of a Gentleman; and because he had a shaven Crowne therefore he wore a Perriwigge, and *Father Philips* directed all those that sent to him, to write to him as to an *Italian Gentleman*, desirous to see these Kingdomes, and by *Father Philips* his direction he afterwards came hither; who did here continue for the space of two years, practising great and dangerous Innovations from place to place; and then having dispatched his businesse, returned to Rome, with great Presents from the Catholikes of the greater sort.

Whereas it hath pleased God, to blesse us with a hopefull Prince, to the comfort of our King and Kingdome: Yet the sayd *Father Philips* hath attempted to traduce his tender yeares to Popery. But God hath prevented him of his purpose, and let us pray to God to preserve that Royall Race from Popery, and the whol Land from all Innovation; that our Gracious King may Rule Gloriously, and the whole Land live in peace, to the honour of God, and comfort of us all, *Amen*.

Father Philips during his Imprisonment in the Tower, was visited by many Jesuits, Priests, Papists, who refused to take the oath of Supremacy, some whereof were committed; and many suspected persons who had taken by Lodgings neere the Tower (with an intention to surprize it, as was feared) were apprehended and restrained.

* July 13th. 1641. The Commons were informed of the Queenes intention to passe beyond the Seas, under pretence of going to the *Spaw* for her health, and carrying over the Lady *Mary* into *Holland*. Whereupon the Houses being jealous of some ill designes to be acted by her against the Realme in Forraigne parts, appointed a speciall Committee of both Houses to attend His Majesty and the Queen at White-hall; and to present them with reasons against their intended journey, which they accordingly presented to the King the 15th of July, and the next day to the Queen her Selfe.

* Ibid. p. 284.
285, 286, 287.

The Reasons were these.

1. There is a great cause to doubt, least the Papists have some designe upon her Majesties journey, because the House hath been informed, that divers of them have sold off their Lands to a good value, and used other means to get ready money. 2ly. It is observed, some of them have been very diligent, gathering great quantities of gold. 3ly. It is informed, that more than an ordinary number of Papists are gone beyond Sea already, and those of the better sort.

Note.

2. The great number of English fugitives now beyond the Seas, who by their late designes and practises are knowne to be full of malice to the State, and will no doubt seeke all opportunities of access to her Majestie, and as much as they can labour to infuse into her Majesty, such evill Councells, as may trouble the peace of the Kingdome, whereof at this time there is more danger, because the affaires of the Kingdome, are not yet fully settled, and upon disbanding of the Army, all parts will abound with Souldiers, and such others as will bee apt to be provoked to tumults and seditions; and especially in the time of the Kings absence in Scotland.

3. That the House of Commons have received information of great quantity of treasure in Jewells, Plate, and ready mony packt up to bee conveyed away with the Queene, not only in such a proportion as the present occasions, with due respect to her Majesties honour may seeme to require, but a farre greater quantity: and that diverse Papists and others, under pretence of Her Majesties goods, are like to convey great summes of monyes, and other treasure, beyond the Seas, which will not onely impoverish the State, but may bee employed to the fomenting of some mischievous attempts to the trouble of the publike peace.

Note.

4. That as it will be great dishonour to the State, if Her Majestie should not bee attended and furnished suitably to her quality, so it will be a very heavy burden in this time of great necessity, and occasions of other publike charges, if she should

be provided in so royall a manner as shall be fit for her Majesty, and the Honour of the King and Kingdome.

5. That because we understand by Sir *Theodore Mayer*, that the chiefe cause of her Majesties sicknesse, and distempers proceed from some discontent of her mind, The House of Commons have thought good to Declare; That if any thing within the power of Parliament may give Her Majesty contentment, they are so tender of her health, both in due respect to His most Excellent Majesty and Her Selfe, that they will be ready to further Her satisfaction in all things, so far as may stand with that Publike to which they are obliged.

6. That the Commons conceive it will be some dishonour to this Nation, if Her Majesty should at this unseasonable time go out of the Kingdome, upon any griefe or discontent received here: And therefore we shall labour by all good meanes to take away and prevent all just occasions of Her Majesties trouble, in such manner as may further Her content, and therein Her health, which will be a very great comfort and joy to our selves, and the rest of His Majesties loving Subjects.

* See the Breviate of the Archbishops life. p. 25.

But notwithstanding all these Reasons, the Queen (though she seemed satisfied for the present) continued in Her resolution, and on Febr. 11th following, went from *Greenwich* towards *Dover*, and from thence into *Holland* with Her Daughter the Princessse *Mary*.

What ill offices she did there against the Parliament, Kingdome, by furnishing the King with Monyes, Ammunition, Armes, Horse, Men and Commanders, to raise and carry on a civill War against the Parliament, and His Protestant Subjects, Selling and Pawning the Jewels of the Crown, &c. is so well knowne, I shall not relate it; and what ill offices of like nature she is now like to do against them in *France*, upon Her late Voyage thither, time will ere long more fully discover.

* Diurnall Occurrences p. 310. 339.

Before the Queens first departure hence, in *July 21. 1641.* There was a Petition read in the Commons House, in behalfe of the Lay-Papists of *England*, wherein they made Protestation of their fidelity to the Crowne and Kingdome, and desired a mitigation of the severity of the Lawes against them: but nothing was done therein. *August 12. 1641.* The Queen Mother (who had formerly desired a Guard to secure her against the feared tumults of the people, and that being denied, supplies of money to transport her hence) departed from *White-hall* towards *Italy*, her Native Countrey, attended by the Earle of *Arundell* and his Lady, who never returned since. After this, upon the 28. 30. and 31 of *August* and in *September* following, upon the disbanding of the Irish Army, the Spanish Ambassadour moved the King for foure thousand of the Irish to serve his Master, which the King condescended too, and engaged himselfe by promise to grant. But the Lords and Commons upon serious debate, considering the evill consequences of it, and fearing some dangerous design against the State, and our Religion to be couched under it, denied to condescend thereunto, for these two principle reasons which they gave to the King and Spanish Embassadour: First, for that the Spaniard was an Assistant to the Emperour against the Palgrave, and in keeping the Lady Elizabeth from being settled in her inheritance, so that to assist him, would bee to turne the points of our owne swords against our selves. Secondly, That they are contrary in Religion to us, and that to assist them is not only matter of Conscience, but it would bee of evill president if it should bee granted: Whereupon it was moved, that no Officers should serve the Spaniard, without leave, and that no Marchant nor Master of ship should transport any Ammunition of War to them, under penaltie and confiscation of the same, and displeasure of the Parliament.

* Ibid. p. 351. to 364.

You have heard before what a labouring and plotting there was to keep the Irish Army from disbanding, and to give a new occasion of assembling them to some parts of *Ireland* under pretence of transporting them into the Low Countries, or *Spain* to serve the Spaniard; but no doubt, the true reason was to execute that horrid bloody Massacre and designe of surprising *Dublinc Castle* and all other Forts of *Ireland*, by the

the popish party in one day, which was formerly plotted, and intended to be put in execution the 23. of Octob. 1641 but that it was in part prevented by a timely discovery of it the very night before *Dublin* Castle should have been surpris'd by those Popish conspirators.

How, & by whom this horrid execrable conspiracy was plotted, contrived and executed, you may read at large in *The Rise, and progresse of the Irish Rebellion*, in *Doctor Jones his booke of Examinations*, and sundry other Treatises of this subject set forth by Authority of Parliament, whereunto I shall only annex such supplymentall evidences concerning the Rebellion which have come unto my hands, omitted for the most part, by them.

Among Secretary *Windebankes* papers I found this ensuing subscribed by *Daniel Oneale* about the yeare 1640. which hath some relation to this Irish Rebellion.

Owen O Neall, by his Majesties permission about five yeares agoe, raised a Regiment of 30. Companies, wherein there were 3500. men; by reason of the stop of supplies since, the Regiment is become so weak, that it is scarce 1000. strong: His humble request is, that being his Regiment was raised by his Majesties leave, and that he intends, it for his Majesties service when he has occasion for him, (to performe which He ingage my life and reputation to his Majesty) his Majesty would be graciously pleased to grant him a recrute, of 50. men to every Company, which he thinkes will purge the Kingdome rather then impoverish it, and will enable him to come strong upon any summons to his Majesties service.

NOTE.

NOTE.

Daniell O Neille.

This *Owen Neale* as this writing Manifests, about the yeare 1635. raised a Regiment of 3000. men for the service of the Kings Majesty when he had occasion for them, which he transported into *Flanders* to serve the King of *Spain* for the present: which *Daniel Oneale* petitions, 1640. might be recruited, to enable him to come strong upon any summons to his Majesties service: This *Owen Oneal* was made acquainted with the Irish Rebellion, and particularly sent to by the Lord *Maguire* and other the Conspirators to ayde & assist them with Armes and men, which he promised to send them before the Rebellion was fully concluded, as the Lord *Maguire* himself, confesseth, as you shall see anon: which compared with the *Examinations* following, & those published by *Doctor Jones*, and *Daniel Oneales* activity to keepe on foot the Irish Army and bring the Northren Army against the Parliament; will sufficiently evidence, that *Oneale* had some Rebellious designs both in the raising & recrute of his Popish Regiment, to be acted within *Ireland* and his Majesties Dominions upon occasion.

That this conspiracy was ploted and agreed on in the generall, and discovered, if not to his Majesty, yet at least to Secretary *Windebanke* above a yeare before it brake forth, is manifest by this letter found, among *Windebankes* Papers thus directed.

To the Kings most Excellent Maiesty.

The King is abused.
The Law is wrested.
It slayes the Innocent.
It acquites the guilty.
Tis like a spiders Webbe.
It catches the smalle.
The great ones breake through.

It

It is as it is Justly feared, *concessum Latrocinium*. I wonder the world is so eclipsit in understanding as not to certifie and prevent that, that mult of necessity ruine ere long the Common-wealth, but your Majesty may let them rest, they bring in profit to your Exchequer, or Coffers, but at last they will shake the foundation of your Monarchie, and their owne weight will make them shrink under their owne burthen, their supporters being not able to beare up their bodies.

Note.

I love and honour your Majesty so much that I would have discovered an intended Plot, which I doubt this next Summer will be put in execution against the State of our Kingdome of Ireland, but that I am sworne the contrary. I was requested (after many deepe Protestations and injunctions not to make it knowne) to be an actor in the designe, I refused it, and tooke time to consider: your Majesty with your learned Councell, may finde out and prevent the ensuing perills.

I have this day poysoned my selfe at the Kings Bench Barre to prevent the malice of Judge Ioanes, and of you Judges, whom as I shall Answer at the dreadful day, would unjustly have deprived me of life, had not my selfe prevented him; he hath done this, not for any benefit to the weale publike, but upon particular revenge; he only aimed at my blood and life. I beseech your Majesty to give him my carcase to eate also: a corrupter Judge I suppose the Kingdom hath not any: Roberies, Murthers and all manner of villany shall passe by him undiscerned let him be but bribed, otherwise the Inocents must suffer, and so have I.

What the party was who writ this Letter, I cannot certainly determine; but certaine it is he was some Souldier dwelling in Ireland at first, who should have been an Actor in the Irish Rebellion, & was charged under an Oath of Secrecy, not to reveal it, above a yeare before it brake out, this letter being written in 1640. before Windbankes flight, and Judge Jones his death. The party who writ it was (it seems) examined; concerning this Plot, as appears by these heades of his examination indorsed in another hand on the backe of the Original, viz.

* This Tyrone was Owen O'neal that had the Regiment.

Roch, a Priest that lived in Develin, & a Bishop called Barnwell, would command him to Tyrone in Flanders, and he should be an Actor in the designe, THAT SHOULD FREE THE PAPISTS IN IRELAND. We may TAKE DEVELIN BY AN ANSLAT, as easily as kisse a mans hand. The Kingdome is so secure, and the Souldiers so base, AS IT IS AS EASIE TO TAKE THE KINGDOME. The Souldiers are but hirelings for 13. pound a yeare, and so they serve all their men, and scarce pay them, but you shall be better used. Goe into England, get up your debts. AND WEE WILL IMPLYOT YOU. Stanley and others have beene ill used AND GIVING THEIR SERVICE TO VS, HAVE RELEASED THEMSELVES OF THOSE ENEMIES, SO MIGHT HEE Doe,

* This Barnwell was a man very Active in this Conspiracy, as appears by Maguires confession following.

The Examination and confession indorsed on the Letter informes us of these particulars: 1. That the Plotte mentioned in the Letter, was to surprise Dublin; and the Kingdome of Ireland too: The very plot the Rebels intended, & deavoured afterwards to put in execution: 2ly. that the end of it was to free the Papiests in Ireland: 3ly. That they thought this Plot was as easie & feasible as to kisse a mans hand. 4ly. That one Roch, a Priest in Develin, and a Bishop called Barnwell, were the parties who acquainted him with the Plot (under an Oath of secrecy) & would have engaged him in it. 5ly. That Tiroen (to wit Owen O'neal) the man who raised the Regiment of 3500. men & desired a Recrute in the former paper) was the person to whom he should be recommended in Flanders, to be a principal actor in this Plot, being there enabled to raise men, Armes, and traine up the conspirators to the use of Armes without suspicion or noise better then in any other place. 6ly. That they had then drawne Standley and other Souldiers to their party. Seventhly that all this was confessed and discovered in manner aforesaid, above a yeare before this Rebellion brake out.

The

That this Plot was thus laid and discovered before hand to *Owen O Neale* in Flanders, will appeare by this examination taken upon Oath in Ireland.

The Examination of Henry Mac Cart taken before Sir Gerrald Lowther Knight, Chiefe Justice of His Majesties Court of Common Pleas, and Sir Robert Meredeth Knight, Chancellor of His Majesties Court of Exchequer, of His Majesties Privie Councell of the Kingdome of Ireland; by direction of the Right Honourable the Lords Iustices and Councell, the 12th. day of February, 1641.

WHoe being sworne and examined saith; that about nine yeares since he this Examinant left the Kingdome of Ireland, and went into Flanders, under the command of *James Fitz-Garret*, of Ballysonan, in the County of Kildare, and at his said Captaines landing in Flanders, he and his company were put into the Regiment of *Owen Roe O Neale*, Colonell under the Cardinall, where this examinant served for about two yeares of the said time, under the said Captaine *Fitz-Garret*, and then was transferred under the command of Captaine *Conn O Neale* in the same Regiment, and afterwards was preferred by the said Colonell *Owen O Neale*, to be his *Major Domo*. which Office is of the nature of Steward of his House, and after was by the said *Owen*, made *Quarter-master* of his Regiment, in which imployment he this examinant remained untill he was sent into this Kingdom by the said Colonell *Owen O Neale*. And this examinant saith, that Sir *Phelim Roe O Neale* had sent a Table with a Character from this Kingdome of Ireland, unto Col. *Owen O Neale* into Flanders, the which Table was lost at the siege of Ayre. And for the losse of which Character he this examinant heard the said Colonell lament much, saying; That all the great Townes, Ports, Provinces, and remarkable places, and persons in the Kingdome of Ireland had their particular names deciphered in that Table. After which time the said Colonell received from Captaine *Conn O Neale*, Nephew unto him the said *Owen*, one other Table of Characters of the like contents. And the said Captaine *Conn* was sent from Flanders into England about Lent last by the said Colonell, to obtaine leave for the raising of men in this Kingdome of Ireland, under pretence of carrying the said men so to be raised into Flanders. The true intention of the raising of those men being to set on foot the Rebellion in Ireland, which hath since accordingly been done; and the said *Conn* having spent about six weekes in England returned into Flanders, upon pretence of furnishing himselfe with money, for the raising of the said men: but before he the said *Conn* returned backe for England, the said Colonell *Owen* being on a journey unto the siege of Ayre, there repaired unto him *Hugh Mac Phelim Birne*, now a Colonell, among the Rebels of this Kingdome of Ireland, who formerly had been a Captaine in *Tirones* Regiment in Spaine, and the said *Hugh* remained with the said Colonell *Owen* about foure and twenty houres, most of which time they spent in private conference, in which discourse he this Examinant overheard the said *Hugh* say: We are to adventure our lives for the succouring of a scabbed Towne of the King of Spaines, where we may happily lose our lives, and we can expect no worse then death if we goe unto our owne Country and succour it. And the said *Hugh* leaving the said Colonell in his journey towards Ayre, went unto *Dunkirk*, and from thence into England, and soone after at the Campe of Ayre there came unto the said *Owen* an Irish Fryer, one of the *O Neales* disguised, who after much private conference with the said Colonell for about six dayes, the said Fryer departed thence for England, together with Captaine *Edward Birne*, and Captaine *Bryan, O Neale*, a kinsmans of the said Colonells, and a Captaine of his Regiment, and now in Ireland amongst the Rebels. And at the said Captaines departure from the Collonell, he the said Col. presented him

Note.

with a case of Pistolls, and shortly after the afore-mentioned Cap. Conn O Neale was againe sent into England, and from thence he the said Captain Conn wrote into Flanders, unto the said Col. Owen, that Hugh Mac Phelim Birne, Captaine Brian O Neale and the aforefaid Fryer were gone to Ireland. And that he the said Conn had received a Letter out of Ireland from President Rosse (by which name in their Table of Characters is understood Sir Phelim O Neale) and that the said President Rosse went very well on in his businesse, by reason that Brabant and Valous were fully satisfied to joyn together (by which Brabant and Valous are understood in the aforefaid Table of Characters, Vlster and Leinster) And did further write at the same time, that he the said Conn expected Lewis Lanois his comming into England (by which Lewis Lanois in their Table aforefaid is understood Daniel O Neale, brother to the said Conn now in restraint in England, and for whom he had stayed, and was in feare of staying over-long lest he should be entrapped) And desired his Vncle the said Col. Owen O Neale, to send some one from him unto the said President Rosse into Ireland, with his resolution and instructions what to doe, which the said President daily expected, which Letters were sent from the said Conn unto him the said Owen into Flanders by a speciall Messenger : At which time one Byron Mac Phelim Birne came out of England unto the said Colonell Owen, and stayed with him a few daies, and had conference with him, and so returned back for England ; and after in October last the said Col. Owen O Neale sent one Art. Mac Ginnis a Fryer, being his Nephew, into England, who at Dunkirk met with a Iesuit, who as this examinant was told was a sonne of the Lord Viscount Netterfield which came thether with him into England, and so for Ireland. And this examitant further saith, that in November last, newes came unto the said Colonell Owen O Neale, that there was an enterprize to be made on the Castle of Dublin for the taking of the said Castle by the Lord Mac Guire, Mas Mahone, one of the O Neales and others ; which Plot being discovered, the said Lord Mac Guire, Mac Mahone, O Neale and others were imprisoned. And that nevertheless the Irish had raised a great company of men, and possessed themselves of the Newrie, Dundalke, Ardmagh, Monaghan, and severall other Country Townes. And that they had taken prisoners the Lord Calfield, the Lady Blaine, and her Children, and that their numbers did daily encrease. And being demanded how they could have the said Newes so soone in Flanders, answered, that they had that and most of the Newes of Ireland, out of England ; and that it was notable to observe, with what speed and certainty the Irish in Flanders received the Newes of Ireland out of England: upon receipt of which News, the said Col. was in a great rage against the discoverer, and said he wondered how or where that villaine should live ; for if he were in Ireland, sure they would pull him to peeces there. And if he lived in England, there were footmen and other Irish men enough to kill him. And he further saith, that the said Col. Owen acquainted the generall Francisco de Melloe, with the said News, who told the said Colonell that he had understood as much before. And thereupon the said Col. desired License to depart for Ireland. And likewise that he might have Armes and Ammunition to carry thither with him: Whereunto the said Generall Answered ; That the said Col. should not want either Armes or Ammunition, or any thing else that he could furnish him withall ; if he the said Colonell were sure of any Port where they might be safely landed in Ireland. And thereupon the said Generall advised the said Colonell, to send one of trust into Ireland without Letters, to be informed there, which were the safest and best way Ports in Ireland where Armes and Ammunition might be landed ; and to direct that some Fryer or Priest might for that purpose be sent back into Flanders, to certifie them of those Ports ; and likewise that some person of speciall trust should be sent into France, Rome, and to the Emperour to negotiate with them, and to desire their assistance for the Irish in defence of their Religion: Hereupon the said Col. designed for that negotiation, one Ever Roa

Titular

Note.

Note.

Note.

Tituler Bishop of Downe: And by reason that he this Examinant, and the speciall employments which he had under the said Col. and the trust reposed in him by the said Colonell, were knowne unto the said *Conn O Neale*; and divers other of the Rebels now in Ireland. He the said Col. chose this Examinant to send into Ireland, with the said Message and these instructions. That he this Examinant should repaire unto *Sir Phelim O Neale, Conn O Neale, Brian O Neale, and Hugh O Birne*, and to acquaint them that he the said Col. was purposed to come from *Dunkirke* for Ireland with all expedition, and to bring with him three Ships, wherein should be three or foure hundred Commanders and Officers, with Munition and Armes for Horse and Foot for the supply of such companies of Souldiers, as were or could be raised in Ireland by those of the Catholike League, for the prosecution of the warre there next; that he the said Col. expected to be forthwith advertised and advised from them in Ireland (by some Fryer or Priest to be sent from thence for that purpose) what Port in that Kingdome he should land in. And directed the sending of the aforementioned *Ever Roe Titular Bishop of Downe* into France unto Rome, and the Emperour to sollicite their Aydes for the defence of the Religion in Ireland. And likewise further advised that the Lords and great Commanders of the Catholique League in that Kingdome, should by all meanes avoyd to fight any battaile with the English or Kings Army, untill the said Colonells arrivall in Ireland, and they were better furnished with Armes and Munition: And that in the meane time and untill his comming, if there were any Noblemen and Gentlemen in Ireland who would not joyne with them in this warre, they should Proclaime the said parties unnaturall Members of that Nation and Kingdome, and enemies unto that Religion. And also that the Goods and Lands of those who would not joyne with them, should be given unto him or them of that House or Family who would accept thereof, and joyne with them. And also that untill his comming, and untill they were better furnished with Armes they should not give the Kings Army any meeting in the day time, but should set upon them in their Quarters by night, when they were wearied by marching abroad in the Country, or upon other occasions. And another of this Examinants Instructions was, to perswade them by all meanes that they should not mistrust or doubt of his comming, for he would be with them ere long, and that he had taken a great Oath, that if he could not obtaine leave, Munition and Armes from the Generall, yet if all failed he would adventure him and his whole estate in that service, and that if he lived he would assuredly be with them within ten weekes, and would bring with him Miners, Capons and Cannoneers, and such other instrument as should be necessary for them. And that he did wonder although there were no Miners there, that his Country-men did not imploy and set on worke such persons as digged for Iron, Mine, or Coales. And further that the Lords and Commanders of the Catholique League in Ireland should send one *Patrick Heggartie* a Fryer, who had spent much time in Scotland to sollicite for them there. And to put the Scots in mind that they were for the most part discomded from the Irish, and that the Irish never drew any of their blood. And therefore that they should not offer the Irish any injury: But keepe themselves quiet in their owne Country, not helping the one part or the other. Another of this Examinants Instructions was, to perswade the Lords and great Commanders of the League, that they should hold firme, and not be deceived by the faire promises of the English or of the State in Ireland, as *Tirone* and *Tircunnell* were, who after they had submitted were forced to fly the Kingdome, and many others beheaded, and others restrained in the Tower of London untill they there dyed and lost their Lands; and that they should not doubt of succour. And further saith, that he was directed by his said Colonell to impart these Instructions and Message unto such Lords, Commanders and Gentlemen in Ireland; as the said *Sir Phelim O Neale, Conn O Neale, Brian O Neale, and Hugh Birne* should direct and advise him unto. And that at his departure from his said Colonell, he the said Col. called for a Glasse of Wine, and

Note.

Note.

Note.

Note.

Note.

Note.

Note.

dranke the health of the said Captaine Hugh Mac Phelim Birne, who he said was designd Governour of the Fort of Duncannon in the County of Wexford. And this Examinant further saith, that he being directed with a Letter in December last, from his Col. unto one Brian Birfield a Fryer, and resident at Dunkirke, for the helping of him this Examinant, that he the said Fryer would make a Journey forthwith unto Col. Owen O Neale, and from him unto Col. Preston, to labour the joyning together of the said Colonells to goe into Ireland, to further with all the force and aide they could make, the prosecution of the present Warre there. And further saith, that in his this Examinants Voyage from Ireland (he with a Fryer in his company) was landed at Dover before Christmas last; where they the said parties remained for three weekes, no examination or notice being taken of them there. And from thence the ship being bound for the Port of Waterford, the same landed him this Examinant and the Fryer at the Port of Youghall, about the beginning of Iannary last, where they were brought before the Earl of Cork, and by his Lordship sent by sea unto the City of Dublin. And further this Examinant saith, he conceived that the said Col. Owen may be easily surprised in his passage for Ireland, if he be laid for with good advisement. The said Owen purposing to come with his Men, Munition, and Armes unto Bergam, within a mile of Dunkirke, which place he intends to gaine for his Garrison; and to carry in Lighters the said Armes, Munition and Men as secretly as he may by night unto the Ship at Dunkirke, without shewing himselfe there: And his pretence will be that he is employed into Spaine. And the said Col. purposeth to bring with him all the Irish Mariners which may be had about Dunkirke, where there are stores; and in speciall one Captaine Donnell a sea Captaine, and so to come for Ireland, either by Dover, or if he see cause by the North of Scotland.

Note.

And this Examinant further saith, that he this Examinant durst not refuse to go into Ireland with the said message, and instructions, for fear of his said Mr. Collonell Owen O Neale, well knowing of his severity. But this Examinant intended to discover the same when he thought he safely might: And he saith, that he doth not know or hath heard of any other that was sent from his Collonell into Ireland of this message besides himself; but beleeveth that some Messenger might be sent from Col: Preston unto the Lords of the Pale, and other Commanders in the Province of Lemster, as well as he was sent by his Col: unto Sir Phelim o Neale and those of Ulster; he also saith, that the principall Commanders and Captaines of the Irish in Flanders, are these whose Names are under written, viz. Owen o Neale, Col: Patrick Dovel Serjeant, Major Conn o Neale Captain, Bryan o Neale Captain, which Conn and Bryan, are now in Ireland, Commanders with the Rebels; the rest of the Captains that are now in the Low Countries, of the said Col: Owen o Neales Regiment, are these, viz. Melaghlin o Moore, Griffen Cavanagh, Donnogh Laler, James Dillon, Stephen Delahord, Nicholas Dalton, George Hoverden, Richard Bourke, Gerrald Fitz-Gerrald, Dermot Con-seden, Neale o Neale, Iohn o Neale, Henry o Neale, Conn mack, Neale o Neale, Bryan Roe o Neale, Iohn Donnelle, adjutant, Maurice o Hean, adjutant, Henry Neale, son to the said Col: Owen, Captain of a Troop of Horse, David Brown, Col: to the said Captain, Edmund Loughram, Auditor in the the same Regiment.

Captaines of particular Companies, not of any Regiment, viz. Col: Preston, William Butler, Maurice mac Donnell, James Geffry, and one Captain, Taylor.

Henry mac Carton.
Gerrald Lowther.
Robert Meredith.

BY this examination it is clear, that o Neales Regiment in Flanders, (consisting for the most part of Irish Papists) was purposely raised to train up the Irish in

in Armes there, without any noise or suspicion to surprize the Forts in that Realm, and make a generall Massacre of the Protestants there, when they should finde a fitting opportunity; and that *Owen ô Neale* in *Flanders*, and *Daniell ô Neale* his Brother in *England*, (who was in extraordinary favour with *His Majesty* and the *Queen* at Court, and one in *Mr. Iermyns* conspiracy) were two of the principall contrivers, and abettors of this conspiracy, in which all the Irish, Popish Bishops, Priests, Friars, Iesuits (and scattered like Frogs in severall Popish Kingdoms and Seminaries) were very active.

I shall onely adde to this, That *William O Conner*, an Irish Priest, servant to the *Queen-Mother*, who lodged at one *Mistris Scarless* house in *Coven-Garden*, and thitted his habit very often to disguise himself, coming to one *Anne Hussey* an Irish Gentlewoman, a little after Easter, 1640. with another Irish man in his company, having a long gray coat, & a sword girt close to his side, to her lodging; and going with her thence to *Mistris Prinocks* house in the *Strand*; she demanded of *O Conner*, who his companion was? who answered, he was one of the number of 7000. that were in privat pay, AND IN READINES TO AYD THE CATHOLICKS, AND TO CUT THE PROTESTANTS THROATS THAT SHOULD RESIST THEM; and that he was one who played on the Flute to the Drum. After which, about the end of July, 1640. he came to her foresaid lodging, and said, *He came upon great occasion, and in great haste, and he must immediatly return back, for he had three Letters from the Queen-Mother, to deliver to three Ambassadors, the Spanish, the Venetian, the French, TO SEND TO THE POPE, FROM WHOM, OR FROM HIS LEGATE, WE MUST KNOW WHEN TO BEGIN THE SUBDUING OF THE PROTESTANTS: That they must first BEGIN TO CONQUER ENGLAND BEFORE IRELAND.* Being demanded by him, *How, or in what manner will they begin with England? And when will it be?* He replied, *When the King goes to Scotland.* To which she answering, *There was no hopes of the Kings going to Scotland;* He replied, *Ile warrant you he doth.* He further added, *That he had long been employed by the Queen-Mother in her businesse with all the Princes of Christendom: That they had some designe to cut off and kill the King: adding, That they would kill an Heretick at any time, for the advancement of the Mother-Church of Rome; and swore by Saint Francis and Saint Dominick that he would do it: He further said, He was bound to keep the Queen-Mothers secrets; and that he would be burnt in fire before he would reveal them.*

Note.

Note.

All this she discovered soon after to the Lords of the Councell, by whom and by severall Iustices of Peace, she was examined upon Oath, and produced Letters of this Priest, written to her with his own hand; whereupon, he was Committed close Prisoner to the Gate-house. where he yet remains unproceeded against. After this she attested it in the Parliament House upon Oath, before the Rebellion brake forth, and witnessed it since upon Oath at the Archbishops Tryall; who said she was mad when she attested it at the Councell Table, demanding of her, *how she durst speak any thing of this Nature of the Queen-Mother? and telling her she was set on and hired by the City of London to do this, and Commanded her to be Committed:* But she producing the Priests own Letter, and he confessing it to be his own hand before the Lords; she was sent onely to one of the Sheriffs of *Londons* house, and there secured, till released by the Parliament.

Note.

About the time of this discourse, the Earl of *Worcester* a great Papist, and very powerfull in *Southwales*, bordering next to *Ireland*, procured a Commission from His Majesty for to be Lord Lieutenant and Commander in chief of all *Southwales*, (as the Lord *Herbert* his Son an Arch-Papist, hath been since the Rebellion brake forth) as appears by this Minute, an Originall draught of a

Letter

Letter under Secretary *Windebanks* own hand to the then Lord Chamberlain, signifying as much.

Note.

HIS Majesty being well inclined to employ the Earl of *Worcester* in some particular service best known to himself in South-Wales, being most confident of his Loyalty, Duty and good affection to His Person and Service; hath thought fit to acquaint Your Lordship therewith, considering the great Power and Interest Your Lordship hath in those parts, and hath commanded me in his Name to signify his pleasure to Your Lordship, that you give speedy and effectual order, to all Your Principall Officers, Tenants, and Dependents, and such others as have relation to you; that as soon as the said Earl shall produce any Commission or Authority from His Majesty, for the performance of any service in those parts, they fail not, to obey His Lordship in all such things as by vertue of such Power given by him and His Majesty he shall require and Command. This His Majesty expects Your Lordship shall do with expedition, to the end, Your Officers there may be the better prepared whensoever the said Earl shall exercise any such Commission from His Majesty; that so His Majesties service may not suffer. His Majesty hath already signified His pleasure to the Lord President of the Marches to this effect, who hath yielded all obedience and conformity thereunto, and His Majesty is confident that in that Your Lordship and those who have Relation to you will give place to none.

Note.

This commission was ordred to be brought into the Commons house as dangerous.

But the happy unexpected Treaty and assembling of this Parliament, frustrating the intended Massacre and Designe of subduing the Protestants in *England* for the present; the Plot in *Ireland* still proceeding, and was to be put in execution on the 23. of *October*, 1641. on which day, all the Forts and Towns in *Ireland* should have been surpris'd at an instant by the Popish Rebels, and most of the Protestants destroyed; and accordingly that very night *Charlemont* Fort was on the 23. of *October* at night surpris'd by Sir *Phelim O Neale*, a principall actor and conspirator in the Rebellion; who there took the Lady *Calfield* prisoner, and murdered the young Lord *Calfield* her Son: And at that time Sir *Phelim O Neale* himself and other of his companions told her, That *Dublin* castle and city, and most other Forts of *Ireland* were surpris'd by their confederates the Papists; that the Tower of *London* was taken by their party, and the Archbishop of *Canterbury* released thence; (a good signe he was their friend:) that *ENGLAND*, and the Protestants there, were then, or would be very shortly in the same, or as bad a condition as *Ireland*, and Protestants there were; and some of them said, that their party had taken *Edenbrough* castle: All which was attested upon Oath by the Lady *Calfield*, and her Gentlewoman Mistris *Mary Woodrofe*, at the Triall of *Mac Mohan* in the Kings Bench, in Michaelmas Term last: where this was likewise attested upon Oath, That ALL THE PAPISTS IN *ENGLAND* WERE PRIVY TO THE PLOT IN *IRELAND*, and intended the like in *England*, which we have since experimentally found to be true. Divers other Forts were the same day and soon after surpris'd by the Irish Rebels, and above one hundred fiftie two thousand Protestants there destroyed in the first four months of the Rebellion, as the Rebels themselves certified the Pope upon inquisitions of their number taken upon Oath.

* Attested on Oath at *Mac Mohans* triall by Sir *William Stenart*, Sir *William Cole*, Sir *William Hamilton*, Sir *Charles Coor*, Sir *Arthur Lofrus* and others.

But notwithstanding those their successfull proceedings in other parts, yet through the admirable Providence of God, they were prevented of the main part of their design; the surprising of *Dublin* Castle, the chief strength and Magazine of that Realm; which had they gotten, they had in very few dayes been Master of the whole Kingdom: For the very night before the Castle should have been surpris'd, the Plot was discovered to the Lords Iustices of *Ireland* by *Owen Connelly*; whereupon, that design was frustrated, and the Lord *Maguire* and

and *Hugh Macmahone*, two principall men in the Conspiracy, who came purposely to surprise it, with other their Confederates taken Prisoners; whose Examinations and Confessions, together with the Lords Iustices Letter to the Earl of *Leicester*; discovering the manner and proceedings of this Conspiracy; I shall here insert.

I shall begin with the Relation of the Lord *Maguire* himself, written with his own hand in the Tower, and delivered by him to Sir *John Conyers* then Lieutenant, to present to the Lords in Parliament, because it is the fullest.

Being in *Dublin* Candlemas Term last was 12. moneths, the Parliament then sitting, Mr. *Roger Moore* did write to me, desiring me that if I could in that spare time, I would come to his house (for then the Parliament did nothing but sit and adjourn, expecting a Commission for the continuance thereof, their former Commission being expired, and that some things he had to say to me, that did meerly concern me; and on receipt of his Letter, the new Commission for continuing the Parliament Landed; and I did returne him an answer, that I could not fulfill his request for that present, and thereupon he himself came to Town presently after, and sending to me, I went to see him at his Lodging, and after some little time spent in salutations, he began to discourse of the many afflictions and sufferings, of the Natives of that Kingdom, and particularly in those latter times of my Lord of *Straffords* Government, which gave distaste to the whole Kingdom) and then he began to particularize the suffering of them that were the more ancient Natives, as were the Irish; how that on the severall Plantations they were all put out of their Ancestors Estates, all which sufferings he said did beget a generall discontent over all the whole Kingdom in both the Natives, to wit, the Old and New Irish, and that if the Gent. of the Kingdom were disposed to free themselves furtherly from the like inconvenience, and get good conditions for themselves for regaining their Ancestors (or at least a good part thereof) Estates, they could never desire a more convenient time, then that time (the distempers of *Scotland* being then on foot,) and did ask me what I thought of it; I made him answer, that I could not tell what to thinke of it, such matters being altogether out of my Element; then he would needs have an oath from me of secrecy, which I gave him, and thereupon he told me, that he spoke to the best Gentlemen of Quality in *Lemster*, and a great part of *Conaght*, touching that matter, and he found all of them willing thereunto, if so be they could draw to them the Gent. of *Ulster*, for which cause said he, I come to speak to you; then he began to lay down to me, the case that I was in then, overwhelmed in Debt, the smalnesse of my Estate, and the greatnesse of the Estate my Ancestors had, and how I should be sure to get it again, or at least a good part thereof; and moreover how the welfare and maintaining of the Catholique Religion, which he said undoubtedly the Parliament now in *England* will suppress, doth depend on it, for (said he) it is to be feared, and so much I hear from every understanding man, the Parliament intends the utter subversion of our Religion; by which perswasions he obtained my consent, and so demanded whether any more of *Ulster* Gent. were in Town? I told him that *Philip Rely*, Mr. *Torrilagh ô Neal*, Brother to Sir *Phillim ô Neale*, and Mr. *Cosloe*, *Macmahone*, were in Town: so for that time we parted.

The next day he invited Mr. *Rely* and I to dine with him, and after dinner, he sent for those other Gent. Mr. *Neale*, and Mr. *Macmahone*, and when they were come, he began the discourse formerly used to me, to them, and with the same perswasions formerly used to me, he obtained their consent: And then he began to discourse of the manner how it ought to be done: Of the feazibility and easiness of the attempt, considering matters as they then stood in *England*, the troubles of *Scotland*, the great number of able men in the Kingdom (meaning *Ireland*,

Note.

Note.

Note.

Note.

land, what succours they were (more then) to hope for from abroad, and the Army then raised all Irishmen, and well armed, meaning the Army raised by my Lord of *Strafford* against *Scotland*. First, that every one should endeavor to draw his own friends into that act, and at least those that did live in one Country with them; and when they had so done, they send to the Irish in the Low-

Note.

Countries and *Spain*, to let them know of the day and resolution, so that they be over with them by that day, or soon after, with supply of Armes and Munition as they could, that there should be a set day appointed, and every one in his own quarters should rise out that day, and seize on all Armes he could get in his County, and this day to be near winter so that *England* could not be able to send Forces into *Ireland* before May; and by that time there was no doubt to be made, but that they themselves would be supplied by the Irish beyond Seas, who he said could not misse of help from either *Spain* or the *Pope*, but that his resolution was not in all things allowed. For, first it was resolved, nothing should be done, untill first they had sent to the Irish over Seas, to know their advice, and what hope of successe they could give, for in them, as they said, all their hope of reliefe was, and they would have both their advise and resolution before any further proceedings, more then to speak to, and try Gent. of the Kingdom, every one as they could conveniently, to see (in case they would at any time grow to a resolution) what to be, and strength they might trust to: Then Mr. *Moore* told them that it was to no purpose to spend much time in speaking to the Gent. for there was no doubt to be made of the Irish, that they would be ready at any time: And that all the doubt was in the Gent. of the Pale; but he said that for his own part, he was really assured when they had risen out, the Pale Gent. would not stay long after, at least that they would not oppose them in any thing, but be Newters, and if in case they did, that they had men enough in the Kingdom without them. Moreover he said, that he had spoke to a great man (who then should be namelesse) that would not fail at the appointed day of rising out to appear, and to be seen in the Act; but that untill then he was sworn not to reveal him: And that was all that was done at that meeting; onely that Mr. *Moore* should the next Lent following, make a Journy down into the North, to know what was done there; and that he also might inform them what he had done, and so on parting Mr. *Philip Rely*, and I, did importune Mr. *Moore* for the knowledge of that great man that he spoke of, and on long entreaty, after binding us to new secrecy, not to discover him untill the day should be appointed, he told that it was the Lord of *Mayo*, who was very powerfull in command of men in those parts of *Conaghe* wherein he lived; and that there was no doubt to be made of him, no more then was of himself: and so we parted.

Note.

The next Lent following, Master *Moore* according to his promise came unto *Ulster*, by reason it was the time of Assizes in severall Countiees, there he met only with Mr. *Rely*, and nothing was then done, but all matters put off till the May following, where we or most of us should meet at *Dublin*, it both being Parliament and Terme time; in the meane time there landed in *Ireland* one *Neall O Neale*, sent by the Earle of *Tyrone* out of *Spaine*, to speake with their Gent. of his name and Kindred, to let them know that he had Treated with *Cardinall Richelieu* for obtaining succour to come for *Ireland*, and that he prevailed with the *Cardinall*, so that he was to have Armes, Munition, and Money from him on demand to come for *Ireland*, and that he only expected a convenient time to come away, and to desire them to be in a readinesse, and to procure all others whom they could to be so likewise; which message did set forward the proceedings very much, so that Mr. *Moore*, Mr. *Rely*, my Brother and I meeting the next May in *Dublin*, and the same Messenger being there too, it was resolved that he should returne to the Earle into *Spaine* with their resolution, which was; that they would rise out 12. or 14. daies before or after *Alhollan-*
tide,

side, as they should see cause, and that he should not faile to be with them by that time; there was a report at that time and before, that the Earl of *Tyrone* was killed, which was not beleevd, by reason of many such reports formerly which were found to be false, and so the Messenger departed with directions, that if the Earles death were true, he should repaire into the Low Countries to Colonell *Owen O Neale*, and acquaint him with his Commission from the Earl, whereof it was thought he was not ignorant, and to returne an answer sent by him, and to see what he would advise, or would doe himselfe therein: But presently after his departure the certainty of the Earles death was knowne, and on further resolution it was agreed that an expresse Messenger should be sent to the Colonell to make all the resolutions known to him, and to returne speedily with his Answer, and so one *Toole O Connelly* a Priest (as I thinke Parish Priest to Mr. *Moore*) was sent away to Colonell *O Neale*; in the interim there came severall Letters and Newes out of England to Dublin, of Proclamations against the Catholikes in England, and also that the Army raised in Ireland should be disbanded and conveyed into Scotland; and presently after severall Colonells and Captaines landed, with directions to carry away those men, amongst whom Col. *Pluncket*, Col. *Birne*, and Captaine *Breim O Neale* came, but did not all come together, for Col. *Pluncket* landed before my coming out of Towne, and the other two after: wherein a great feare of suppressing Religion was conceived, and especially by the Gent. of the Pale, and it was very common amongst them, that it would be very inconvenient to suffer so many men to be conveyed out of the Kingdome, it being as was said very confidently reported, that the Scottish Army did threaten, never to lay down Armes untill an vniformity of Religion were in the three Kingdomes, and the Catholike Religion suppressed; and thereupon both Houses of Parliament began to oppose their going, and the Houses were divided in their Opinions; some would have them goe, others not, but what the definitive conclusion of the Houses was touching that point I cannot tell, for by leave from the House of Lords I departed into the Country before the Prorogation: but before my departure I was informed by *John Barnawall* a Fryer, that those Gent. of the Pale (and some other Members of the House of Commons) had severall meetings and consultations how they might make stay of the Souldiers in the Kingdome, and likewise to arme them for the defence of the King, being much injured both of England and Scotland then (as they were informed) and to prevent any attempt against Religion: and presently after I departed into the Country, and Mr. *Relly* being a Member of the House of Commons stayed the prorogation, and on his coming into the Country sent to me to meete him, and I came to his house, where he told me that he heard for certaine that the former Narration of *Barnawall* to me (for I did acquaint him with it) was true, and that he heard it from severall there: also was *Emer Mac Mahone* (made privie formerly to all our proceedings) at Mr. *Tellies* lately come out of the Plea, where he met with the afore-named *John Barnawall*, who told him as much as he formerly told me; and moreover that those Colonells that lately came over, did proffer their service and industry in that Act, and so would raise their men under colour to convey them into Spaine, and then seixe on the Castle of Dublin, and with their Armes there to arme their Souldiers, and have them ready for any action that should be commanded them, but that they had not concluded any thing; because they were not assured how the Gent. of the remote parts of the Kingdome (and especially of Ulster) would stand affected to that Act, and that assurance of that doubt was all their impediment. Then we three began to thinke how we might assure them of the assistance and helpe of Ulster Gent. It was thought that one should be sent to them to acquaint them therewith, and they made choise of me to come, by reason as they said that my Wife was allyed to them, and their Country-woman, and would beleevue me;

Note.

Note.

Note.

Note.

trust me sooner then other of their parts, they or most of them being of the Pale, and so (without as much as to returne home to furnish my selfe for such a journey (*Volens nolen's*) they prevailed, or rather forced me to come to Dublin to conferre with those Colonells (and that was the last August was twelvemonth) comming to Towne I met Sir *James Dillon* accidentally before I came to my Lodging, who was one of those Colonells; and after salutation he demanded me where my lodging was, which when I told him, and parted; The next day being abroad about some other occasions of my owne in Towne, I met him (as he said) comming to waite on me in my Chamber, but being a good way from it, he desired me to go into his own Chamber being near at hand, and then began to discourse of the present sufferings and afflictions of that Kingdom, and particularly of Religion, and how they were to expect no redresse (the Parliament in England intending, and the Scots resolving never to lay downe Armes untill the Catholike Religion were suppressed, then he likewise began to lay downe what danger it would be to suffer so many able men as was to go with them to depart the Kingdome in such a time, neither (saith he) doth their other Gent. that are Colonells, and my selfe affect our owne private profit so as to preferre it before the generall good of the Kingdome; and knowing that you are well-affected thereunto, (and I hope, said he, ready to put your helping hand to it on occasion) I will let you know the Resolution of those other Gent. and mine, which is if we are ready to raise our men, and after to seaze on the Castle where there is great store of Armes, and arme our selves there. This was the first motion that I ever heard of taking the Castle, for it never came into our thoughts formerly; nor am I perswaded never would, if it had not proceeded from those Colonells, who were the first motioners and contrivers thereof for ought knowne to me; and then to be ready to prevent and resist any danger that the Gentry of the Kingdome like thereof and helpe us, for we of our selves neither are able nor will doe any thing therein without their assistance: I began according to the directions that was sent with me to approve of the Resolution, and also to let him know how sure he might be of the assistance of those of Ulster; then he told me that for my more satisfaction I should conferre with the rest of those Colonells themselves, as many as are privie to the Action, and accordingly a place of meeting was appointed that after-noon, and on the time and place appointed there met Sir *James* himselfe, Colonell *Bourne*, and Col. *Plunket*, and that former discourse being renewed, they began to lay downe the Obstacles to that enterprise, and how they should be redressed.

Note.

Note.

First, if there should warre ensue, how there should be money had to pay the Souldiers.

Secondly, how and where they should procure succour from forraign parts.

Thirdly, how to draw in the Pale Gentry.

Fourthly, who should undertake to surprize the Castle, and how it should be done.

To the first it was answered, That the Rents in the Kingdome every where, not having respect whose they should be, due to the Lords and Gentry thereof, should be collected to pay the Souldiers; and moreover they might be sure (nay that there was no doubt thereof) to procure money from the Pope, who gave severall promises formerly to my Lord of *Tyrone*, (in case he could make way to come into Ireland) to maintaine six thousand men yearly at his owne charge, and that notwithstanding that my Lord of *Tyrone* was dead, yet that he would continue the same forwardnesse now. To the second it was answered by Colonell *Bourne*, that helpe from abroad could not faile them, for (said he) Colonell *O Neale* told me that he had or would procure in readinesse, (I doe not remember which of those the Colonells spoke, or whither he spoke positive, that Col. *O Neale* had the Armes, or would procure them) Armes for ten thousand men.

Note.

Note.

And

And moreover (said he) I make no great question that if we send into Spaine we shall not misse of Ayde; for I being in London the last yeare, in the *Scots* troubles, I was in conference with one of the Spanish Ambassadors there then, and talking of their troubles then a foote, he said, that if the Irish did then rise to, and send into Spaine, their Messengers would be received under Canopies of gold; these last words he told me, and some one man of those that were present privately, whose name I cannot call to mind, (neither well remember I whether he spoke to them all or no.) Then it was thought that when they were both in Armes for defence of the Catholike cause, they would be succoured by the Catholike Princes of Christendome. To the third it was Answered by Colonell *Pluncket* that he was as morally certaine (for those were his words) as he could be of any thing that the Pale Gentry would joyne with them, and assist them; for he said I have spoke to severall of them since my landing in the Kingdome, and I finde them very ready and willing, and withall I have at London spoke to some of the Committees, and particularly to my Lord of *Gormonstone* to let them know his resolution, and they approved of it very well, and withall they knew of the former consultations by those Gentry, told me by *Barnewall*: For it was said but very secretly, that the King did in these termes say to Mr. *Nicholas Pluncket*, one of the Irish Committee then in England, that if they would stick to him, he would stick to them; this I heard I thinke from the said *John Barnewall*, but in truth I am not sure whether from him or no, but certaine I am that he from whom I heard it did confidently report it: All this was not done at the first meeting, but at three or foure meetings, and so on the last meeting it was resolved to the last doubt touching seizing the Castle; That Colonell *Pluncket* and Col. *Barne* should undertake that taske because they were nearer to it then any other, and also seize on all the Forts, Garrisons and other places where they thinke any Armes should be, and in particular London Derry, which should be undertaken by those of Ulster. And then there was a set day appointed for the execution thereof, that was the fifth of the ensuing Septemb. (this being the latter end of August, or the beginning of Septemb. Anno 1641. I doe not know whether) and every one should make provision to rise out that day, and they were named that should first succour them that should take the Castle with men presently, namely sir *James Dillon*, who did undertake to be with them within three (or at the most foure daies with one thousand men, and so much more should come to them out of the North, for those two Colonells did not intend to use above one hundred men in the surprisall, whereof they were to have twenty good able Gentlemen; for they made account that having the Castle, they with the Artillery would master all the Towne untill they were releved by men from the Country; and because there was a doubt made, how all this could be done in so short a time, they did appoint that all that were there present should not fail to meet again there the 20. of September, to give an accompt of all things aswell hopes as impediments, and if on that interview all things should happen to be well, that they go forward, or if otherwise, to prolong the Execution of it to more convenient time, and so we parted, every man into the Country, about his own taske, and I in my way home, came to Mr. *Rellyes* house, and there I received a Letter from Sir *Phelim ô Neale*, that his Lady was dead, and to be buried on the Sunday following; this being on the Saterdag, and desiring mein all kindnesse to come to the buriall; and Mr. *Relly* having received another Letter to the same effect, would needs have me go thither, (whereunto I was very unwilling, being weary withall, nor provided to go to such a meeting) aswell (said he) to prevent any iealousy from the Ladies friends, as also, to confer with Sir *Phelim* touching all these proceedings, (for neither he nor I did ever speak with Sir *Phelim* concerning those matters before) but to his Brother *Tirlogh ô Neale*, and coming thither, we found Captain *Bryan ô Neale*, lately come out of the Low-Countries,

Note.

Note.

Note.

Note.

sent over by Col: *o Neale*, to speak to and provoke those of *Ulster* to rise out into Armes, and that he would be with them on notice of their day; the same day or soon after it: and it was asked of the said Captain, what aide he could send or procure, being but a private Collonell, or where he could get any? he replied that the said Col: told him, that he had sent to severall places that Summer to demand aide, and in particular to *Cardinall Richelieu* into *France* (to whom he had sent twice that year) and had comfortable and very hopefull promises from them, and especially from that *Cardinall* on whom he thought the Collonell did most depend, so that there was no doubt to be made of succour from him, and especially when they had risen out, that would be a meanes to the *Cardinall* to give aide: We did the more credit him in regard of the former Treaty between the said *Cardinall* and the Earl of *Tyrone*, as formerly is said; for my own part, I did and do beleieve that the Col: doth depend on *France* for aide, more then on any other place, aswell for these reasons, as also that *Ever Macmahone* formerly mentioned told me, that presently after the Isle of Rees enterprize (he being then in the Low-Country, did hear for certain that the Earl of *Tyrone* together with the Collonell did send into *France* to the Marshall of *France* (that was generall of the French Forces at the Isle of Ree) to deale with him for procuring of aide to come then for *Ireland*, and that he received an answer from the said Marshall, that he was most willing and ready to contribute his endeavors for his furtherance therein, but that for the present he could not answer my Lords expectation, by reason that the King had warres in Italy, which he thought would be at an end within half a year or little more, and then my Lord should not doubt of any thing that he could do for his assistance, but those continued a great deal longer, so for that time that enterprize failld: So after the Buriall was done, I gave these Gentlemen knowledge of what I had done at *Dublin*, and how I was to retire thither, and then they began to think how to surprize *London-Derry*, they being near it, but could not then agree in the manner; and so Sir *Phelim* desired me to take his house in my way going to *Dublin*, and that I should have a resolution to carry with me touching *London-Derry*, and thereon I parted home; but soon after came to *Dublin*, to the afore appointed meeting with those Collonells: But first, I took in my way Sir *Phellim o Neales* house to be certain what he had done; and his answer was, that he knew that matters could not be put in execution by the 5. of October, as was appointed, and that they would make another longer day for it, and that he would provide for the taking of *London-Derry* by that day; and so I came to *Dublin*, to give an accompt of that was done, and also know what further should be done: I was not two houres in my lodging, when Mr. *Moore* came to me (who knew of what was done by those Colonells formerly from Col. *Burne*, and told me that the Messenger sent to Colonell *Neale* was come with answer, desiring us not to delay any time in rising out, and to let him know of that day before-hand, and that he would not faile to be with us within fourteen daies of that day with good ayde, also desiring us by any meanes to seaze the Castle of *Dublin* if we could, for he heard that there was great provision in it for Warre, and Mr. *Moore* moreover said, that time was not to be over-slipped, and desired me to be very pressing with the Col. to goe on in their resolution; but on meeting the Col. with them they were fallen from their resolution, because those of the Pale would doe nothing therein first, but when it was done they would not faile to assist us; Col. *Plunket* did affirme, and so by severall meetings it was resolved on by them to desist from that enterprize for that time, and to expect a more convenient time; but before that their resolution Sir *Phelim O Neale*, and the afore-said Capt *Brion O Neale* followed me to *Dublin* (as they said) to assist and advise me how to proceed with that Colonell (but neither they nor Mr. *Moore* would be seene therein themselves to those Gent: but would meet me privately, and know what was done,

Note.

Note.

Note.

Note.

done at every meeting, alleading for excuse, that I being first imployed in that matter, it would not be expedient that they should be seene in it. And moreover they would not know to be in the Towne but by a few of their friends, untill they were in a manner ready to depart the Towne, at least as long as I was in Towne, for I left them there : But when I made them acquainted with their determination of desisting from that enterprize, they thought it convenient that we should meet with Mr. Moore, and Col. Burne, to see what was further to be done concerning the former intention of their owne, and accordingly we did send to them that they should meet us, and on that meeting it was where was only Sir Phelim, Mr. Moore, Colonell Burne, Captain Neale and my selfe ; after long debate it was resolved, that we with all those that were of our Faction should goe on with that determination that was formerly made, concluded to, to rise out ; moreover to seize on the Castle (as the Collonells were purposed, for if it were not for their project and the advise sent by Col. Neale, we would never venter to surprise it, neither was it ever thought on in all the meetings and resolutions between, before that those Collonells did resolve on it ; but by reason that the other Gent. that were privy to these proceedings were not present, the certainty of the time, and the manner how to execute it, was put off to a further meeting in the country, and this was resolved in Dublin on the Sunday at night being the 26. or 27. of Septem. and that meeting was appointed on the Saturday following, at Mac Collo mac Mohones house in Farney in the county of Monaghan, and thereupon we all left the Town, onely Sir Phelim stayed about some other his private occasions, but did assure his being there at that day ; and by reason that at that meeting the Gent. of Leinster could not be, considering the remotenesse of the place from them, it was thought fit that Mr. Moore should there meet to receive the finall resolution, and should acquaint them therewith ; and in the mean time Colonell Burne, who had undertaken for Col. Pluncket, should inform them all of the intention conceived, and dispose them in readinesse against that day that should be appointed ; on Saturday I came to Mr. Mac Mohones house, there met onely Mr. Mac Mohone himself, Captain Neale, Ever Mac Mohone, and my self, (and thither that same day came the Messenger that was sent to Col. Neale, and did report the Colonells Answer, and advise verbatim, as I have formerly repeated from Mr. Moore) and by reason that Sir Phelim his Brother or Mr. Philip Rely that were desired to meet, did not meet, we stayed that night to expect them, and that night I received a letter from Sir Phelim, intreating us by any means not to expect him untill the Munday following, for he had nor could dispatch some occasions meerly concerning him, but whatsoever came of them, he would not fail on the Munday, and the next day after receipt of the letter being Sunday (by Mr. Moores advise) we departed from Col. Mac Mahones house, to prevent (as he said) the suspicion of the English there (many living neare to Longhrosse in the County of Ardmagh to Mr. Torilagh O Neales house, not Sir Phelims brother, but sonne to Mr. Henry O Neale of the Fires) sonne in Law to Mr. Moore, and left word that if Sir Phelim, or any of those Gent. did come in the meane time they should follow us thither, (whether only went Mr. Moore, Captain O Neale and my selfe) and there we expected untill the Tuesday subsequent, before any of those did come : On the Tuesday came Sir Phelim and Ever Mac Mahone, all the rest failing to come, Mr. Mac Mahones wife was dead the night before, which was the cause that he was not there, but I gave his assent to what should be concluded to win therein, and execute what should be appointed him, and then we five, viz. Sir Phelim, Mr. Moore, Captaine O Neale, Ever Mac Mahone, and my selfe, assuring our selves that those Gent. absent would both allow and joyne to what we should determine, did grow into a finall resolution, grounding all or most part of our hope and confidence on the succour from Col. Neale, to seaze on the Castle, and rise out all in one day, and the day was appointed

Note.

Note.

Note.

Note.

pointed on the 23. of that moneth (this being the fifth day of September, having regard therein to the day of the weeke whereon that day did fall, which was the Saturday, being the Market day, on which day there would be lesse notice taken of people up and downe the streets ; Then began a question who should be deputed for the surprisall of the Castle, and then Mr. Moore said he would be one of them himselfe, and that Col. Burne should be another, and what other Gent. of *Leinster* they could procure to joyne with them ; and seeing the Castle had two Gates, the one the great, and the other the little Gate, going down to my Lord Lieutenants Stables, hard by which Stable without the Castle was the Store-house for Armes, they of *Leinster* would undertake one Gate, and that should be the little Gate, and the Gate should be undertaken by those of *Ulster*, and (said he) of necessity one of you both (meaning Sir *Phelim* and me) must be there for the meere countenance of that matter, it being the glory of all our proceedings, and all that his speeches were well liked of all present, but Sir *Phelim* would be exempted from that imployment, and so would I, but then all of them set on me, desiring me to be one, alleading for reason that their proceedings and resolutions were very honourable and glorious, it being for Religion, and for to procure more liberty for their Country, as did (say they) of late Scotland, and that in taking the Castle consisted all the glory and honour of that said Act, all which should be attributed to them which should be imployed therein, and so by consequence all or most part to be there, being (as they said) the chiefe in that enterprize, and more, Sir *Phelim* said, that he would endeavour to take or procure others to take LONDON-DERRY the same day, and if he should be away that place would not be taken : with these, and many other perswasions they obtained my consent, and then the Captaine offered himselfe ; they began to thinke what number should be imployed in that Act, and they concluded on two hundred men, a hundred from each Province for those States which they seaze on : of which number Sir *Phelim O Neale* should send forty with an able sufficient Gentleman to conduct them, and likewise Captaine *Neale* twenty, Mr. Colonell *Mac Mahone*, Mr. *Relly*, ten more, and I should bring twenty two. Then began a doubt how they should raise those men, and convey them to Dublin without suspicion ? and it was answered, that under pretence of carrying them to those Colonells that were conveying souldiers out of the Kingdome, it might safely be done ; and to that purpose Sir *Phelim O Neale*, Mr. *Moore*, and the Captaine had severall blanke Pattents with deputations to make Captaines to those Colonells, which they sent to those Gentry that should send men to Dublin : for the more colour they be thought of what was to be done in the Country that day, and it was resolved that every one privie to that matter in every part of the Kingdome should rise out that day, and seaze on all the Forts and Armes in the severall Counties, to make all the Gentry Prisoners, the more to assure themselves against any averse fortune, and not to kill any but where of necessity they should be forced thereunto by opposition (and that those that were appointed for taking the Castle should observe) and in particular the Gentry : all their Army in *Ulster* to take that day London Derry, which Sir *Phelim* did undertake, and *Knockfergus* which they thought Sir *Henry Mac O Neale* would doe, and to that end Sir *Phelims* brother *Terlagh O Neale* should be sent to them ; and the Nurie, which should be undertaken by Sir *Conne Kenish*, and his Brothers, for whom Sir *Phelim* (in regard they were his Brothers in Law, his deceased Lady being their Sister) did undertake : Moreover it was agreed, that Sir *Phelim*, Mr. *Relly*, Mr. *Collo Mac Mahone* and my Brother should, with all the speed they could after that day, raise all the forces they could, and follow us to Dublin, but to arme the men and succour us, and defend and Garrison the Towne and Castle, and likewise Master *Moore* should appoint *Leinster* Gentry to send like supply of men. Then there was feare of the Scots conceived, that they should presently oppose themselves, and that

that would make the matter more difficult, and to avoyd which danger, it was resolved on not to meddle with them, or any thing belonging to them, and to demeane themselves towards them as if they were of themselves, which they thought would pacifie them from any opposition, and if the Scots would not accept of that offer of Amity, but would oppose them, they were in good hope to cause a stir in Scotland that might divert them from them, and I beleieve the ground for that hope was, that two yeares before, in or about the beginning of the Scots troubles, my Lord of *Tyrone* sent one *Torilagh O Neale* (a Priest) out of Spaine, and that this I take it was the time that he was in Treaty with Cardinall *Richelieu* to my Lord of *Argile*, to treat with him for helpe from my Lord, for him to come into Ireland as was said for Marriage, between the said Earle and my Lord of *Argiles* Daughter (or Sister, I know not which) and this Messenger was in Ireland, with whom Mr. *Torilagh O Neale*, Sir *Phelims* Brother had conference from whom this relation was had : that said Messenger went into Scotland, as I did heare from the said Mr. *Neale*, or from *Emer Mac Mahone* afore named ; I know not from which of them; but what he did there I could never heare, by reason that my Lord of *Tyrone* was presently after killed: They were the more confirmed therein, hearing that my Lord of *Argile* did say (neare on the same time as I ghesse, and when the Army was raised in Ireland as I thinke) to a great Lady in Scotland, I know not her name, but did heare that she was much imbarcked in the troubles of that Kingdome; then she questioning how they could subsist against the two Kingdomes of England and Ireland, that if the King did endeavour to stir Ireland against them, he would kindle such a fire in Ireland as would hardly or never be quenched : And moreover, they knew my Lord to be powerfull with the Islanders, Red-shankes in Scotland, whom they thought would be prone and ready to such Actions, they for the most part disceded out of Ireland, holding the Irish Language, manners still, and so we parted. The next day being Wednesday, from Lough Rosse every man went about his own task, and so when I came home I acquainted my Brother with al that was done, and what they had appointed him to doe, and did like according as they appointed me, send to Mr. *Relly* to let him know as much, and the 18. of the same moneth I began my Journey to Dublin, and when I came to Dublin (being the day before the appointed day of putting that resolution in execution there, I met with Captaine *Conn O Neale*, sent out of the Low Countries by Colonell *O Neale*, who was sent after the Messenger sent by us formerly to the said Colonell, was by him dispatched with his Answer) to encourage us in our resolution, and to speedy performance, with assurance of succour, which he said would not faile of the Colonells behalfe, and for the more certainty of help from him, and to assure us that the Colonell had good hopes to procure ayde from others; he said, that it was he himselfe that was imployed from him to Cardinall *Richelieu* twice, that some men who gave very faire promises to assure the Colonells expectation, with which he said that the said Colonell was really with himselfe assured of the Cardinalls ayde; and that he was likewise commanded by the Colonell upon our Resolution of the day to give notice thereof to him, and that he would be within fourteen daies over with them with ayde, but he landed nine or ten daies before, and meeting with Captaine *Brian O Neale*, who made him acquainted with what was resolved, he did write all the matter to Col. *O Neale*, so as he was sure of his speedy coming; and so that Evening he and I came to meet the other Gentry, and there were met Mr. *Moore*, Col. *Burne*, Col. *Plunket*, Captaine *Fox*, and other Leinster Gentry, a Captaine I thinke of the *Burnes*, but I am not sure whether a *Burne* or *Toole*, and Captaine *Bryan O Neale*, and taking an accompt of those that should have been there, it was found that Sir *Phelim O Neale*, Mr. Col. *Mac Mahone* did faile of sending their men, and Col. *Burne* did misse Sir *Morgan Kennanaugh* that had promised him to be there;

Note.

Note.

Note.

Note.

but

but he said he was sure he would not faile to be that night or the next morning in Town, and of the two hundred men that was appointed there was only eighty present, yet notwithstanding they were resolved to goe on in their resolution, and all the difference was at what time of the day they would set on the Castle; and after some debate it was resolved in the after-noon, and the rather hoping to meete the Col. there then, for they said, if they should take the Castle, and be enforced by any extremitie for not receiving timely succour out of the Country (having them they could not want) and so parted that night, but to meete in the morning to see further what was to be done; and immediatly thereon I came to my Chamber, and about nine of the clocke Mr. Moore, and Captaine Fox came to me and told me all was discovered, and that the City was in Armes, and the Gates were shut up, and so departed from me, and what became of them or of the rest I know not, nor thinke that they escaped, but how and at what time I doe not know, because I my selfe was taken that morning.

To this I shall adde his Examinations taken before the Lords Iustices of Ireland, and since in England.

The Examination of Connor Lord Magwire, Baron of Eniskillin, taken before us, Charles Lord Lambart, and Sir Robert Meredith Knight, Chancellor of his Majesties Court of Exchequer, the 26. day of March 1642. by Direction of the Right Honorable the Lords Iustices and Councell.

Note.

Note.

WHo being Examined saith, That about the time when Mr. John Belkew came out of England with the Commission for the continuance of the present Parliament, Roger Moore, in the said Moores Chamber in the house of one Peter de Costres of this City, acquainted him this Examinant; that, if the Irish would rise, they might make their own condition for the regaining of their own Lands and freedome of their Religion, at which time the said Moore also acquainted him this Examinant, that he had spoken with sundry of Leinster who would be ready for that purpose, and withall told him this Examinant, that he was assured a good part of Conaght would do the like, and thereupon moved this Examinant to joyn likewise with them with all he could make, unto which motion he this Examinant yeilded. And the next day following, there was a meeting in his the said Moores Chamber aforesaid, where were Col: Mac Bryan, Macmahone, Tirlagh o Neale, Philip mac Hugh o Relie this, Examinant, and Roger Moore, where discourse was had of that businesse, yet nothing concluded on, save that Roger Moore and the rest should go and prepare their parties: And this Examinant further saith, That about May last, he this Examinant, Roger Moore, Philip o Relie, and Roger mac Guire, this Examinants Brother, dispatched a Priest, one Toole o Conley, who lived in Leinster, unto Owen o Neale into Flanders to acquaint him with the businesse concerning the Generall Rebellion then in preparation, which said Priest returned about a Moneth before the time appointed for execution thereof: And the answer which the said Priest brought from the said Owen o Neale was, that he would (within fifteen dayes after the people were up) be with them with his best Assistance and Armes; and it being demanded why he said Owen should bring Armes considering the Castle of Dublin was to be taken and the Armes therein. This Examinant answered, that they so provided for Armes, that they might not want any in case they could not take the said Castle, whereof they doubted: And this Examinant acknowledgeth, That the Castle of Dublin, was to have been surpris'd by himself, Captain Bryan o Neale, Captain Con o Neale, Captain Macmahone, one Owen o Relie, Roger Moore, Hugh Macmahone, Col: Plunket, and Captain Fox; and likewise further acknowledgeth, that Hugh mac Phelim, Captain Con o Neale, and Bryan o Neale, brought

brought from Owen δ Neale out of Flanders, the very same Message which the said Priest brought: And this Examinant further saith, That he was told by Roger Moore, that a great Man was in the Plot, but he might not name him for the present: And at another time, and during the sitting of the Parliament; the last Summer, he this Examinant was informed by one John Barnwell, a Franciscan Fryer then resident in this City, that those of the Pale were also privy unto the Plot (meaning the present Rebellion) and lastly saith, That of those persons who came to attend him this Examinant for the surprise of the said Castle of Dublin only Cohonough Maguire, was privy unto the businesse in hand, and that the last meeting (when the day appointed for execution thereof was resolved on) was at Logh Rosse, where were present only, Ever Macmahone Vicar Generall of the Diocese of Clogher, Thomas mac Kearnan, a Fryer of Dundalk, Sir Phelim δ Neale, Roger Moore, and Bryan δ Neale.

Note.

Charles Lambart. Rob: Meredith. Concordat cum Originali. Ex. per Paul Harris.

Memorandum, That this within written being shewed and read unto the within named Lord Maguire, and himself having perused the same, his Lordship did acknowledge the same to be true in all things, saving, that he doth not now acknowledge that Barnwell told him, that those of the Pale were privy to the Plot; neither doth acknowledge, that Cohonagh Maguire was privy to the Plot, before his coming to Dublin.

This Examination and acknowledgement, was made and taken the 22. day of June, 1642. Anno Regni Caroli Regis *deremo ditum*, before us.

John Bramstone. Thomas Malet.

In the presence of Io. Conyers. W. Ayloffe. Nath. Finch.

The Examination of Cornelius Maguire, Lord Baron of Eniskillin in Ireland, taken before Isaac Pennington Esq; Lieutenant of the Tower of London; and Laurence Whitaker Esq; two of his Majesties Justices of the Peace, for the County of Middlesex, the first day of October. 1644.

HEE denieth the receiving of any Letters or Messages out of England before the Rebellion, nor did he ever hear of any. He saith he, was but a mean Instrument in the design in Ireland: He confesseth, he intended to Seize upon the Castle of Dublin, and the Magazine there, and keep it till they had redressed some grievances, which they purposed to propound to the Parliament there: One whereof was, to have a Toleration of the Roman Catholike Religion. He confesseth that he came accidentally to Phillip Rellies house as he came up to Dublin; and as he remembreth, Mr. Macmahone was then there, and that his intention of coming up to Dublin, was to put the aforesaid design in execution, and that then and there, they had speech about that design; but remembreth not the particulars: Which design was to be put in execution the 23. day of October in that year, and that he was taken there that very day, being Saturday upon search made for him, carried before the Lords Justices, examined, committed and sent over into England.

He saith further, that he made his escape out of the Tower of London, upon Sunday the 18, of August last, about foure of the clock in the Morning.

Laurence Whitaker. Isaac Pennington.

The Examinations of Hugh Macmahone, taken at Dublin in this conspiracy, since condemned of High Treason in the Kings Bench, and executed as a Traytor at Tiburn the last Michaelmas Term, I concur in substance with the L. Maguires: and here follow in their order of time.

The Examination of Hugh oge Macmahone of Connagh, in the county of Monaghan Esq; aged 35. yeares, or thereabouts, taken before the Right Honourable, the Lords Justices and Councell.

THE said Examinant saith, That he thinkes here will be trouble this day throughout all the Kingdom of Ireland, and that all the Fortifications of

Note.

H h

Ire-

Note.

Ireland will be this day taken as he thinkes : And he saith, that he thinkes that it is so far gone by this time, that all *Ireland* cannot help it : He saith that he was told this by Captain *Bryan ô Neale*. He saith that Captain *Bryan ô Neale*, and Captain *Hugh Birne*, were designed for surprising the Castle of *Dublin* ; and that if he, this Examinant were one for surprising the Castle of *Dublin*, those two Captains were principall therein. He saith the place of meeting was to be at the Examinants Lodging. He saith that twenty prime men out of every County in *Ireland* were to be at *Dublin* this last night concerning that matter ; and that they were to consult of it this Morning at the Examinants Lodging : Their Weapons were to be Swords and Skenes, and that the Captains that were raising men in the Irish Countries, were they that should send men hither to second the businesse. He saith, when they had *Dublin*, they made sure of the rest, and expected to be furnished with more Armes at *Dublin*. He said, I am now in your hands, use me as you will, I am sure I shall be shortly Revenged : And being demanded whither the Lord Maguire was one appointed to this businesse ; he at last said, he thought he was.

William Parsons.

R. Dillon. Ad. Loftus. I. Temple. Tho: Rotherham. Robert Meredith.

Hugh mac Mohone his Examination, the 22. of March, 1641.

Note.

HE saith, that Sir *Phelim ô Neale*, the Lord Maguire, and *Philip mac Hugh ô Relli*, were the first complotters and contrivers of the late Rebellion in *Ireland*.

Note.

* See the good effects of the Lo: Straffords ballancing the Irish Protestants with Papists in Parliaments here, p. 117, 118.

He further saith, that the said Sir *Phelim*, the said Lord Maguire, and the said *Philip mac Hugh ô Relli*, did tell him this Examinant, that all the parties who were * Parliament men at the Session of Parliament holden about May last, that were Papists, did know of the intended Rebellion in *Ireland*, and did approve of the said Rebellion.

He further saith, that *Philip mac Hugh ô Relli* did tell to this Examinant about May last at *Dublin*, that the Committee or Agents who were employed into *England* by the Parliament, would procure an Order or Commission from the King, to Authorize the Papists of *Ireland*, to proceed in their Rebellious courses, and that the said *Philip mac Hugh ô Relli*, did also tell him the same again in October last, in the County of *Monaghan*, a little before the 23. of October ; at which time this Examinant came to this Town.

Note.

He also saith, that Col: *Mac Bryan mac Hone*, upon a Wednesday being the 20. of October last, did at his own house tell to this Examinant, that the King had given a Commission to the Papists of *Ireland*, to seize upon all the Garrisons and strong holds in *Ireland*, and that this Examinant should see the said Commission at his coming to *Dublin*, and that Captain *Bryan ô Neale*, Grandchild to Sir *Turloe mac Henry* should bring this Examinant to the Agent, who was one of the Committees that did bring the Commission out of *England*, but the Agents name the said Col: *mac Bryan*, did not, or could not tell him.

He further saith, that his Nephew *Philip mac Hugh ô Relli*, about six dayes before the 23. of October last, being at his own house of *Balanecarrick*, did tell this Examinant, that the Lord Maguire would be at *Dublin* upon the 23. of October last, to take the Castle of *Dublin* ; and this Examinant did then promise to be there at the same time, to the same end and purpose, if he did see the Commission.

He further saith, that Captain *Brian ô Neale* meeting with this Examinant at *Finglas* neer to *Dublin*, upon the 22. of October, did tell this Examinant that there would be twenty persons out of every county in the Kingdom, to assist in the taking of the Castle of *Dublin*.

He saith further, that Art. *mac Hugh Oge mac Mohone* came in the company of this Examinant to this city of *Dublin*, to assist in the taking the Castle of *Dublin*.

He further saith, that *Collo mac Brian mac Mohone* did procure *Rory Oge mac Patrick mac Mohone*, to perswade *Patrick mac Art mac Mohone*, and *Patrick mac Owen mac Mohone*, *Ardell mac Patrick mac Mohone*, and two other *mac Mohones*,

bones, whose names he knoweth not, and Donogh ô Finely to come to Dublin, to assist in the taking of the Castle of Dublin, who were all apprehended in the house in Dublin, together with this Examinant.

Fr. Willoughby. Concordat cum originali. Exam. Paul Harris.

The said *Hugh mac Mohane* having heard this his Examination taken in Ireland the 22. of March last now read unto him, he doth acknowledge the same to be true in all parts, as the same is therein set down; save onely that by the Rebellion in Ireland, mentioned in the third line thereof, he meant and intended the Rebellion in Ulster, and the intent and attempt to take the Castle of Dublin: And saith, that *Sir Phelim O Neale* and the Lord *Maguire*, did not tell him that the parties who were Parliament men, did know of the intended Rebellion in Ireland, or did approve thereof; but saith, that *Philip mac Hugh O Rely* first in May 1641. covertly and afterwards on Munday next before the 23. of October last, did tell this Examinant in expresse words, and that the matter of the Rebellion, did first begin and proceed amongst the Parliament men in Ireland in the last Parliament there: And this Examinant saith, he is Grandchild to *Hugh* late Earl of *Tyrone*, and that this Examinant is of the age of 35. yeares or thereabouts, and was born at *Rusleigh*, in the County of *Monaghan* in Ireland: And this acknowledgement he made 24. Junii 1642. before us,

John Bramstone. Tho: Malet. Hugh Macmahone.

In the presence of *Io. Conyers. W. Ayloffe. Ralph Whitfell. Nath Finch.*

Jo. Glanvill, William Canstantine.

The Examination of *Hugh Macmahone* taken before *Isaack Pennington Esquire, Lieutenant of the Tower of London, and Laurence Whitaker Esquire, two of His Majesties Iustices of the Peace for the County of Middlesex, the first day of October. 1644.*

HE saith, that one *Philip O Rely* told him there was a Commission from the King sent into Ireland, and that their designe was to assure themselves of the Castle of Dublin till things were settled, and that 20. out of every Shiere in Ireland should joyne to seaze upon the Castle, and Magazine of Dublin, and the other strength of that Kingdome, till they might bring their designe to effect, which was to be assured of some demands which they were to make to the Parliament there; and that *O Rely* told him they had a Commission from the King to seaze, as he hath said, and told him also he saw a Warrant pretended to be under *Sir Maurice Eustace*, Speaker of the Parliaments hand to that purpose, and that it was an agreement amongst them that this seazing should be generall throughout the Kingdome as he was told. He saith, that it was one of his busiesses that brought him to Dublin to put this matter in execution, if it could be done in a faire way, and that *O Rely* told him all he hath said in the May before; and saith that *O Rely* being then in the County of *Cavan*, directed twenty to come up, out of the County of *Monaghan* to put this designe in effect, whereof this Examinant was one, and of that County only seven or eight came up to him; and saith, that the Lord *Magwire* came up to Dublin about the same time, about the same designe, and that five nights before he met with the Lord *Magwire* at *Philip O Rellys* house, at which time *Philip O Rely* related all this to this Examinant, and the Lord *Magwire* told him he was to goe to Dublin about that designe.

He saith, that the 18th. of August last, being Sunday, about four of the clocke in the morning, he did saw in pieces the Doore of his Lodging in the Tower, and with a bed-cord let himselfe downe, and having gotten over two walles waded through the ditch, and so escaped. *Lawr. Whitaker, Isaack Pennington.*

The Examination of *Hugh Mac Mahone*, taken the 20. day of Octob. 1644.

I. HE saith, that the Warrant which *Philip O Neale* told him of, was for the seazing of some strong Holds in his Country, which was the County of *Cavan*; remembreth not whose hand or hands were subscribed to it besides *Sir Maur. Eustacos*, and that the intention of that Warrant was, that the strong

H h 2

Holds

Note.

Note.

Note.

Note.

Note.

Holds of that County should be seized upon untill they of that County had satisfaction unto their demands and grievances, which were to be presented to the Parliament. He remembreth not the date of that Warrant, nor how long it did beare date before the discovery of the Plot: remembreth not who were acquainted with the Warrant besides *Orelly* and himselfe, saving only one *Hugh Orelly*, who was then present, when *Philip Orelly* shewed it to this Examinant; and *Philip Orelly* told him that the like Warrant was to goe into all Shieres of that Kingdom, and that it was to be accompanied with a Commission from the King or with other Copies of it; which he saith, he hath * since heard to be false.

* That is by some Oxford cavaliers since his escape out of the Tower: So he twice confessed it heretofore.
p. 238, 239.

II. He confesseth, he was at *Philip Orellyes* house five nights before the discovery of the Rebellion; and that he told him this, except that the designe thereof was resolved upon in the May before, and that the matter touching the seazing of the Castles of the Kingdome, was referred to a Committee of Parliament to be considered of; and saith, that the Lord *MagWire* met him that night at *Orellyes* house, with his wife and children; but denyeth, that the Lord *MagWire* heard any of the conference which this Examinant had with *Philip Orelly*, but only at this Examinants departure from thence in the morning, he said, he should meete this Examinant in Dublin: but upon better advertisement this Examinant saith, that at his taking leave of the Lord *MagWire*, this Examinant said to him; What if the matter be as *Orelly* said, and that we seaze upon the Castle at Dublin, how if the City stir? The L. *MagWire* answered; What should they stir for, when we * wil do no body no hurt? perhaps we may shoot off a warning-piece, when we have taken the Castle, in some voyd place, or some Chimnies to make a noise.

* This he feined since his apprehension after his escape the carriage of the Rebels in all other parts, and the Testimonies p. 241, 242, 243. contradicting it.

III. He knoweth not any thing.
IV. & V. He saith, he did discourse about that Plot with one *Rory Mac Mahone*, and *Kedman Mac Mahone*, but did not consult with them about it otherwise then by telling them, what *Philip Orelly* had told him; and that he was the first and last that ever told him of it, and he thinketh *Rory Mac Mahone*, and *Kedman* are still living, but where he knoweth not.

VI. He saith, that one *Art. Mac Mahone*, and two Boyes did accompany him to Dublin the 22. of October, of which boyes one was 24. or 25. yeares old, and the other 16. or 17. which *Art.* was also taken there and put in prison, and for the two boyes he knoweth not what became of them, and saith, that 8. persons came up after him out of the County of Monaghan, which were part of the twenty that were to be sent up out of that County; but remembreth not the names of any of those eight persons, and he spake not with any of them.

VII. He saith, that *Ockonelly* (as he remembreth) told him of the taking of Charlemont, or of some stir about it, but by whom it was taken or seized upon he knoweth not, if it were taken; nor knowes who was at the taking of it.

VIII. He knoweth the L. *Blaynes* house in the County of Monaghan, but knoweth nothing of the Fort of Mont-Ioy, nor whether there be such a place, or no.

IX. He knoweth not what Forts or places were taken in this rebellion.

X. He knoweth most of the parties named in this Inter; but denyeth that ever he had any discourse with any of them about the rebellion, more then that he told two or three of them what *Philip Orelly* had told him.

XI. He had speech with *Con Mac Bryan Mac Mahone*, so far as to tell him what *Orelly* had told him, but with the other man no speech at all.

XII. No speech with any of them.

XIII. He knoweth of no other encouragement given to him but that *Orelly* told him, that the King did say to *Pluncker*, sticke you to me, and I will sticke to you, and the Commission formerly mentioned which the Lord * *MagWire* said, was not true.

* Since his escape here, but confesseth it here before.
p. 231.

XIV. Knoweth no more then he hath said, but that *Mackennay* should come up from the County of Monaghan with twenty men, to be of the number of those that should seaze the Castle.

Isaack Penington. Lawrence Whitaker.

To

To these Examinations I shall adde this ensuing Testimony which will more fully discover the bloody intentions of those Conspirators against the Protestants and English in Ireland.

John Carmicks Testimony upon Oath to the Jury in Court at the Kings Bench in Westminster Hall, upon the triall of Hugh Oge Mac Mahon, Esquire the 18. of November, 1644.

That upon the 21. of October 1641. *Fergus O Hwen* one of the followers or servants of *Bryan Mac Gwire* Esquire, came to my Chamber in the Castle of Eniskillin, in the County of Fermanagh in Ireland, and after he intended to bind me to keepe secret a matter of great concernment, which he said he had to disclose unto me, and particularly to conceale it from Sir *William Cole*, and all other English-men: He discovered unto me that the Lord *Magwire*, and the above named *Hugh Oge Mac Mahon*, accompanied with sundry Irish-men of the Counties of Fermanagh and Monaghan, did take their Iournies out of the said Counties upon the nineteenth and twentieth daies of October, 1641. to the City of Dublin, with resolution and intent, to surprise and seaze upon his Majesties Castle of Dublin, and to murder *and kill his Highnesse Lords Justices, and Councill of the Kingdome of Ireland, and the rest of the Protestants there; and also to possesse themselves of the City of Dublin, and to put all the Protestants there likewise to the Sword, and that to that effect; there were other great men and others of the Papists of that Kingdom to repaire unto, and meet them in Dublin on Saturday 23. Octob. 1641. or thereabouts.

Note.

And that all the Castles, Forts, Sea-ports, and Holds that were in the possession of the Protestants in the severall Counties and Provinces, in the Kingdome of Ireland, were then also designed and resolved to be surprised and taken by the Irish Papists, and the Protestants in every of those Castles, Forts, Sea-ports and Holds, to be then also put all to the sword by the Irish Papists in Ireland, in their owne severall parts and limits, by men thereunto chiefly and particularly appointed by the contrivers thereof.

Note.

And especially this Castle and Towne of Eniskillin (with the rest) will also be taken, and all you that be Protestants in it put to the sword, whereof I give you this notice, advising you to get your selfe and goods out of this Towne and Castle with all expedition, and sell your stocke of Cattle, and whatsoever else you have in the Country, for any money that you can get for them; for I assure you these things that I tell you will come to passe before it be seven daies next after this day, and this Castle and Towne will be no place of refuge or safety for you; wherefore I desire and advise you againe, to get you hence, with all speed, for the warre against the English and Protestants will be universally raised throughout the Kingdome of Ireland, which if you finde not to be true (as I say) before it be full fourteen daies to an end, then I will give you leave to cut off my head. Whereupon I presently acquainted Sir *William Cole* with this, and even then also one *Flartagh Mac Hugh* a Gentleman and Free-holder of that County came to the said Sir *William* the said one and twentieth. of October in Anno 1641. declaring upon Oath, that the Plot for the surprising of the Castle and City of Dublin, the Castle of Eniskillin, and all the Castles and strengths in Ireland (which were in the possession of Protestants in that Kingdome, together with some further mischiefes to be done to the Protestants in generall) was to be put in full execution by the Papists upon the 22. and 23. of October 1641 throughout the said Kingdome: And that *Bryan Mac Coconnaught Mac Gwire* Esquire, did send him the said *Flartagh Mac Hugh*, to give notice and warning thereof, to the said Sir *William Cole*, whom he earnestly desired to be upon his Guard, upon Friday the 22. and Saturday the 23. of October 1641. For the Lord *Magwire*, who is gone with *Mac Mahon* (this Prisoner now at the Bar) and others to Dublin this weeke, with purpose to possesse themselves of the Castle and City of Dublin, hath written his letters lately to *Conn O Rourke, Owen*

Note.

Note.

Note.

O Rourke, Murtagh Oge O Flumagon and others, to goe on with that Plot in these parts; and hath appointed his Brother *Rory Mac Gwire* in his absence to command the Irish Papists of this County of *Fermanagh*, for the surprising of the Castles and houses of the Protestants, and especially this Castle and Towne of *Eniskillin*. And after he had ended this Relation, he requested the said *sir William Cole* and me, that his name should not be used as in discovering of the said evils, least it should prove his ruine and destruction amongst his Country men; and thereupon he departed, promising to returne with further Intelligence of the progresse of that matter unto the said *Sir William Cole*.

Of all which the said *Sir William* dispatched letters of notice unto the Lords Iustices and Councell of Ireland the same day, and also gave notice by severall other letters and Messengers to his Neighbours, the undertakers, and other Protestants in the severall parts next adjoyning to him.

And yet upon the 23. of October 1641. *Redmond Mac Rory Mac Mahon*, (cousen German of the prisoner at the Bar) with armed multitudes and Collours displayed, did enter into the Town of *Clownis*, in the county of *Monaghan*, and possessed themselves of the Castle and all other houses there, and did rob and spoyle the Protestants, viz. *Edward Aldrith* Esquire and others, of all their money, plate, household-stuffe, goods and chattels, within and without doores, as *Robert Aldrith* Gentleman, *Iohn Mac Reavy* and others affirmed upon Oath, before the said *sir William Cole*.

And upon the 23. of October 1641. or there abouts, *Art Roe Mac Mahon* Esquire, kinsman of the prisoner at the Bar, did surprize and seaze upon the Castle, Fort, and Towne of *Monaghan* in the County of *Monaghan*, did rob, strip and dispoile, hang and kill the Protestants there; as namely, *Richard Blayney* Esquire, a Parliament man, *Luke Ward* Gentleman and others, and did then also imprison the Lady *Blayney*, wife of *Henry Lord Blayney*, and some of her servants and others Protestants, as was also affirmed upon Oaths of the persons afore-said, before the said *sir William Cole*.

And Colonell *Mac Bryan*, *Mac Mahon* of *Fearney* (being the Earle of *Essex* his Lands in that County) another kinsman of the prisoner at the Bar, did break out the same time into open Rebellion in the said County of *Monaghan*, he being a Papist, and a Member of the Parliament then in Ireland, as was also affirmed by the persons afore-said upon Oath before the said *sir William Cole*.

And *Neill Mac Kennay* of the Troogh Esquire, another kinsman of the prisoner at the Bar, did rebell the day aforesaid, in manner aforesaid, in the said County of *Monaghan*, and did seaze upon the Castle of *Glosflogh*, and imprison *Mr. Robert Barkclay* a Protestant Minister, and his wife, after he had robbed them of all their goods: he the said Minister and others did upon Oath also affirm before the said *Sir William Cole*, and *Redmond Mac Mahon*, cousen German of the prisoner at the Bar, with Colours displayed, and armed multitudes did upon the 18. day of December 1641. or there abouts, come with *Rory Mac Gwire* with armed men, in all to the number of 1500. or there abouts, before the Castle of *Lisgoole* in the County of *Fermanagh* in Ireland, where they murdered and burned *Thomas Grahm* Gentleman, *Matthew Moore* a Protestant Minister, *Richard Peasant*, *Richard Rainebow*, and others to the number of one hundred thirty and one protestants or there abouts.

And also the same Rebels afterward, viz. upon the 25. of December, 1641. or there abouts, after quarter given unto *Tho. Trotter*, *Francis Trotter*, *Alexander Bell*, and other Protestants, to the number of 152. persons or there abouts, which for safety of their lives, fled into the Castle of *Tully* in the County of *Fermanagh*, belonging to *sir Geo: Hume* Baronet, did murder them all, & then burned the said Castle the same day, which was done by the command or permission of the said *Rory Mac Gwire*, brother of the said Lord *Mac Gwire*, by the aggravation and counsel of one *Patrick O Cassedie* a papist Fryer, who concluded his invective Exhortation in

Note.

in these or the like words, *I will take the sin and guilt of the blood of these Heretiques upon my Soul, and do absolve you all thereof, and therefore spare not one of them.*

Note.

This proved upon Examination of *Edmond Grace, Rich: Fawcet*, and divers other English Protestants (that were then present) upon oath before the said *Sir William Cole*, whose Examinations I did write, and did see and hear the severall examinants depose the same. And I did see the said Castles on fire about the times aforesaid.

And further I say, that I have heard sundry credible persons in Ireland relate, that the Roman Catholiques in that Kingdome, did brag and report that they did destroy 152000. Protestants in the province of Ulster, in the beginning of this late Rebellion; and the Examinations of sundry English and Scotch men protestants (taken upon Oath at severall times by *Sir William Cole* a Justice of Peace in the County of Fermanagh in Ireland) doth particularly shew the number of 764. Protestants harged, kild, burned, and drowned in that County by the Rebels there in that Rebellion, besides many that were cut off, touching whom no evidence could appeare.

Note.

And it was averred upon the Oaths of *Flartagh mac Hugh, John Oge mac Hugh*, and *Terlagh Oge Mac Hugh* before the said *Sir William Cole*, that 150. men were appointed to surprise the Castle of Eniskillin, under the leading of *Don Magwire* and *Bryan Mac Rory, Mac Gwire*, who were to murder the said *Sir William Cole* and his wife, children and servants, and throw them over the wall into the River, and then to doe the like unto the Protestants in the Town and Corporation of Eniskillin; for which service they were not only to have the spoyle and riches of the said Castle and Town, but to have also the Barony of Clanavaley granted and confirmed in Fee to them and their Heires from the said Lord *Mac Gwire* and his Heires. And the said *Don Mac Gwire* was for the same taken (in February or March last, or thereabouts by the said *Sir William Cole*, to whom he confessed upon his Examination, that he was to have surprised and taken the Castle and Town of Eniskillin the 23. of Octo. 1641. but denyed that he had any intent to kill the said *Sir William*, or his wife, or children; wherefore the said *Sir William* did commit him to prison in his Majesties goal at Eniskillin about February or March 1643. where he remained the 18. of May 1644 when the said *Sir William* and my self came on his Journey hither into England, and where I beleieve he yet continueth in safe custody, and so will until he be brought to Justice. *John Carmick*.

Note.

The like was then attested by *Sir William Cole, Sir William Hamilton, Sir Arthur Loftus, Sir Charles Coote* and others, upon oath at this Triall; and that the Irish Rebels did rip up divers Irish womens bellies great with childe, and toss their Infants upon their pikes, and throw them to their dogs to eat, ravished some to death, buried others alive, drowned others, after quarter, and used unheard of cruelties of sundry kindes, without provocation. And yet now they must be reputed the Kings good subjects, and sent for over into England to commit the like cruelties on us here; which should cause all English mens hearts and bloods to rise up for vengeance against such blood-sucking Villains.

The manner of the discovery of that Conspiracy, and apprehension of some of the Conspirators, who were to surprise Dublin last, is thus expressed by the Lords Justices of Ireland, in a Letter to the Earl of Leicester then Lord Deputy, extracted out of the Originall.

The Lords Justices of Irelands Letters to the Earl of Leicester, &c. Octob. 1641.

May it please your Lordship: On Friday the 22. of this Moneth after nine of the clock at night, this bearer *Owen Connolly*, servant to *Sir John Clotworthy* Kt, came to me the Lord Justice *Parsons* to my house, and in great secrecy (as indeed the case did require) discovered unto me a most wicked & damnable Conspiracy, plotted and contrived, and intended to be also acted by some evill-affected Irish Papists here. The Plot was on the next morning, Saturday the 23. of Octob. being *Ignatius* day, about nine of the clock to surprise his Majesties Castle of Dublin, his Majesties chiefe strength of this Kingdom, wherein also is the principall Magazine of his Majesties Armes and Ammunition, and it was agreed (it seemes) amongst them; that the same houre all other his Majesties Forts, and Magazines of Armes and Ammunition in this Kingdome should be surprised by others of those Conspirators;

Note.

rators; and further, that all the Protestants and English throughout the whole Kingdom that would not joyn with them should be cut off, and so those Papists should then become possessed of the government and Kingdom at the same instant.

As soone as I had that Intelligence, I then immediately repaired to the Lord Iustices Palace, and thereupon we instantly Assembled the Councell, and having sate in Councell all that night, as also all the next day, the 23. of October, in regard of the short time left us for the consultation of so great and waighy a matter: although it was not possible for us upon so few houres warning, to prevent those other great mischiefs which were to be acted even at that same houre, and at so great a distance as in all the other parts of the Kingdome; yet such was our industry therein, having that night caused the Castle to be that night strengthened with armed men, and the City guarded as the united councells of those evill persons (by the great mercy of God to us) became defeated, so as they were not able to Act that part of their Treachery which indeed was principall, and which if they could have effected would have ended the rest of their purposes the more easie. Having so secured the Castle, we forth-with laid about for the apprehension of as many of the offenders as we could, many of them having come to this City, but that night intending (it seemes) the next morning to Act their parts in those treacherous and bloody crimes.

The first man apprehended was one *Hugh Mac Mahone* Esquire (Grand-sonn to the Traytor *Tirone*) a Gentleman of a good fortune in the County of Monaghan; who with others was taken that morning in Dublin, having at the time of their apprehension offered a little resistance, with their swords drawn; but finding those we employed against them more in number, and better armed yielded: He upon his Examination before us at first denyed all, but in the end when he saw we laid it home to him, he confessed enough to destroy himself, and impeach some others, as by a Copy of his Examination herewith sent may appeare to your Lordship. We then committed him untill we might have further time to examine him againe, our time being become more needfull to be employed in Action for securing this place then in examining.

This *Mac Mahon* had been abroad, and served the King of Spaine as a Lieutenant Colonell.

Upon conference with him and others, and calling to mind a Letter we received the weeke before from sir *William Cole*, a Copy whereof we send your Lordship, here inclosed we gathered that the Lord *Magwire* (was to be an Actor in surprising the Castle of Dublin; wherefore we held it necessary to secure him immediatly, thereby also to startle and deter the rest when they found him laid fast: his Lordship observing what we had done, and the City in Armes, fled from his Lodging early before day (it seemes) disguised, for we had laid a watch about his Lodging, so as we thinke he could not passe without disguising himselfe, yet he could not get forth of the City, so surely guarded were all the gates.

Note.

There were found at his Lodging hidden some Hatchets with the Helves newly cut off close to the Hatchets, and many Skeines, and some Hammers. In the end the Sheriffes of the City, whom we employed in strict search of his Lordship, found him hidden in a Cockloft, in an obscure house farre from his Lodging, where they apprehended him, and brought him before us.

He denyed all, yet so as he could not deny but he had heard of it in the Country, though he would not tell us when or from whom; and confessed that he had not advertised us thereof as in duty he ought to have done. But we were so well satisfied of his guilt by all circumstances, as we doubted not upon further Examination when we could be able to spare time for it, finde it apparent; wherefore we hold it of absolute necessity to commit him close prisoner, as we had formerly done, *Mac Mahone* and others, where we left them on the 23. of this moneth in the morning, about the same houre they intended to have been Masters of that place, and this City.

That

That morning also we laid wait for all those Strangers that came the night before to Town, and so many were apprehended, whom we finde reason to belive to have hands in this Conspiracy, as we were forced to disperse them into severall Goales; and wee since found that there came many Horsemen into the Suburbs that night, who finding the Plot discovered, dispersed themselves immediately.

When the houre approached, which was designed for surprizing the Castle, great numbers of Strangers were observed to come to Town in great parties severall wayes, who not finding admittance at the Gates, staid in the Suburbs, and there grew numerous, to the terrour of the Inhabitantss; we therefore to help that, drew up, and instantly signed a Proclamation; commanding all men, not dwellers in the City or Suburbs, to depart within an houre upon paine of death, and made it alike penall to those that should harbour them; which Proclamation the Sheriffe immediatly proclaimed in all the Suburbs by our commandement, which being accompanied with the example and terrour of the committall of those two eminent men and other, occasioned the departure of those multitudes: And in this case all our lives and fortunes, and above all, his Majesties Power and regall Authority being still at the stake, we must vary from ordinary proceedings, not onely in executing Martiall Law as we see cause, but also in putting some to the Rack to finde out the bottome of this Treason, and all the Con-
trivers thereof, which wee foresee will not otherwise be done.

Note.

On that 23 day of this Moneth, we conceiving that as soone as it should be known, that the Plot for seizing *Dublin* Castle was disappointed, all the Conspiratos in the remote parts, might be somewhat disheartned; as on the other side, the good Subjects would be comforted, and would then with the more confidence stand on their guard, did prepare to send abroad to all parts of the Kingdom this Proclamation, which we send you herein inclosed, and so having provided that the City and Castle should bee so well guarded, as upon the sudden wee could provide, wee concluded that long continued consultation.

On Saturday at twelve of the clock at night, the Lord *Blaney* came to Town, and brought us the ill newes of the Rebels seizing with 200 men his House (at Castle *Blaney*, in the Countey of *Monaghan*, and his wife, children, and servants; as also a House of the Earle of *Essex* called *Carrickmacrosse* with 200 men, and a house of Sir *Henry Spotwords* in the same County with 200 men, where there being a little Plantation of Brittiish, they plundered the Town and divers houses, and it since appears that they burnt divers other Villages, and robbed and spoyled many English and none but Protestants, leaving the English Papists untouched as well as the Irish.

Note.

On Sunday morning at three of the clock, we had intelligence from Sir *Arthur Tiringham*, that the Irish in the Town had that day also broken up the Kings store of Arms, and Munition at *Newry*, where the store for Arms hath been ever since the Peace, and where they found threescore and ten barrells of Powder, and armed themselves, and put them under command of Sir *Con-Magenis* Knight, and one *Cerly* a Monke, and plundered the English there, and disarmed the Garrison: And this though to much, is all that we yet heare is done by them.

However wee shall stand on our guard the best we may to defend the Castle and City principally, those being the peeces of most importance: But if the Conspiracie be so universall as *Mac Mahoun* saith, in his Examination it is, namely, that all the Counties of the Kingdome have conspired in it, which wee admire should so fall out in this time of universall peace, and carried with that secrecie that none of the English could have any friend amongst them to disclose it; then indeed we shall be in high extremity, and the Kingdom in the greatest danger that ever it underwent, considering our want of men, money, and armes, to enable us to encounter so great multitudes as they can make, if all should so joyne against us: the rather because we have pregnant cause to doubt that the Combination hath taken force by the incitement of Iesuits, Preists
and Fryars.

Note.

Note.

All the hope we have here is that the old English of the Pale, and some other Partrs, will continue constant to the King in their fidelity as they did in former Rebellions.

And now in these streights, we much under God depend on aide forth of *England* for our present supply with all speed, especially money we having none; and Armes which we shall exceedingly want, without which we are very doubtfull what account wee shall give to the King of his Kingdome.

But if the Conspiracy be only of *Mac Guire* and some other Irish, of the kindred and friends of the Rebell *Tyrone*, and other Irish in the Counties of *Down*, *Monaghan*, *Cavan*, *Termanagh*, and *Armagh*, and no generall revolt following thereupon, we hope then to make head against them in a reasonable measure, if we be enabled with money from thence, without which we can raise no forces; so great is our want of moneys as we have formerly written, and our debt so great to the Army; nor is money to be borrowed here, and if it were, we could engage all our estates for it; neither have we any hope to get in his Majesties Rents and Subsidies in these disturbances, which addes extreamely to our necessities.

On Sunday morning the 24, we met again in Councell, and sent to all parts of the Kingdome the inclosed Proclamation, and issued Pattents to draw hither seven horse Troopes, as a further strength to this place, and to be with us, in case the Rebels shall make head, and march higherward, so as we may be necessitated to give them Battell; we also then sent away our Letters to the Presidents of both the Provinces of *Munster* and *Conaught*; and we likewise then sent Letters to the Sheriffes of the five Counties of the Pale, to consult of the best way and meanes of their own preservation; That day the Lord Viscount *Fitzwilliam*, and the Lord of *Houth*, and since the Earle of *Kildare*, *Trigall*, and the Lords of *Dunsany* and *Slane*, all Noble men of the English Pale, came unto us, declaring that they then, and not before, heard of the matter, and professed all Loyalty to his Majesty, and concurrence with the State; but said they wanted Armes, whereof they desired to bee supplied by us, which wee told them we would willingly doe, as relying much on their faithfulness to the Crown; but wee were not yet certaine whether or no we had enough to Arme our strength, for the Guard of the City and Castle, yet we supplied such of them as lay in most danger, with a small proportion of Arms and Ammunition for their Houses, lest they should conceive we apprehended any jealousy of them: And wee commanded them to be very diligent in sending our Watches, and making all the discoveries they could, and thereof to advertise us, which they readily promised to doe.

And if it fall out that the Irish generally rise, which we have cause to suspect, then we must of necessity put Armes into the hands of the English Pale in present, and to others as fast as wee can, to fight for defence of the State and themselves.

Your Lordship now sees the condition wherein we stand, and how necessary it is first that we enjoy your presence speedily, for the better guiding of these and other the publike affaires of the King and Kingdome: and secondly, that the Parliament there be moved immediately to advance to us a good sum of money, which being now speedily sent hither, may prevent the expence of very much Treasure and blood in a long continued warre: and if your Lordship shall happen to stay on that side any long time, we must then desire your Lordship to appoint a Lieutenant Generall to discharge the great and weighty burthen of commanding the Forces here.

Amidst these confusions and disorders fallen upon us, we bethought us of the Parliament which was formerly adjourned to *November* next, and the Terme now also at hand, which will draw such a concourse of people hither, and give opportunity, under the pretence of assembling and taking new counsell, seeing the former seemes to bee in some part disappointed, and of contriving further danger to this State and people; wee have therefore found it of unavoydable necessity to prorogue the Parliament to the 24 day of *February* next, and therefore we doe by Proclamation prorogue it accordingly, and to direct the Term to be adjourned to the first of *Hillary* Terme, excepting only the Court of Exchequer for hastning in the Kings money if it be possible.

We desire that upon this occasion, your Lordship will be pleased to view our letters concerning the Plantation of *Conaught* dated the 24 of *April* last, directed to Mr Secretary *Vane* in that part thereof, which concernes the County of *Monaghan*, where now these fires do first break out.

In the last place, we must make known to your Lordship, that the Army we have consisting but of 2000 foot and a 1000 horse, are so dispersed in Garrisons in severall parts of the foure Provinces for the security of those parts, as they continually have been since they were so reduced, as if they be all sent for to be drawn together, not only the places whence they are to bee drawne, and for whose safety they lie there, must be by their absence distressed; but also the Companies themselves coming in so small numbers may bee in danger to be cut off in their March; nor indeed have we any money to pay the Souldiers to enable them to March. And so we take leave and remaine

From his Majesties Castle
of Dublin, 25. Octob.

Your Lordships to be commanded.

1641.

Poscript.

THe said Owen Connelly who revealed this Conspiracy, is worthy of very great consideration to recompence that faith and loyalty, which hee hath so extreemly to his own danger expressed in this businesse; whereby under God, there is yet hope left us of deliverance of this State and Kingdom from the wicked purposes of those Conspirators: And therefore we beseech your Lordship, that it be taken into consideration there, so as hee may have a marke of his Majesties most Royall bounty, which may largely extend to him and his Posterity, we not now being able to doe it for him.

As we were making up these our Letters, the Sheriffe of the County of Monaghan and Dr Teats having fled came unto us, and informe us of much more spoyle committed by the Rebels in the Counties of Monaghan and Caven: And that the Sheriffe of the County of Caven joynes with the Rebels, being a Papist and prime man of the Irish.

What encouragement these Conspiratours had from Rome, to proceed on in this design (after it was in part prevented) will evidently appeare by these three Letters written from thence to the Lord Mac Guire, and Sir Phelym Oneale in Irish, intercepted by the Lords Iustices in Ireland, and sent over (thus truly translated) into England, together with a Letter May, 11. 1642. In which we may clearely discover, that Cardinal Barbarino who was so intimate with Windebanke, and held correspondence with him and the English Papists; had a great hand in plotting this long intended Rebellion; and was privy to it ere it brake forth.

A Copy of a Letter from Francis Mac Guire from Rome to the Lord Mac Guire.

The superscription.

Deliver me to Connor Mac Guire Lord of Eniskilin, or in his absence, to his brother Rowry Mac Guire in Ireland.

My honoured Lord,

THousand commendations unto you, to Bryan Rowry, and the rest; I have heard of yours, and Hugh Oge his imprisonment; truly, I never heard worse newes in all my life, who esteeme that it is rather much good then any hurt, which will redownd to you, and the whole Nation from these your troubles: Truly (my Lord) if you bee dead through that attempt (the which God forbid) it is a most glorious and everlasting name, which you have added to your selfe. The Pope and the two Cardinals his two Nephewes are acquainted with your case, and heard likewise how valorously, Phelym and Rowry, and the rest of the Gentlemen, their assistants have behaved themselves, and rejoyced greatly thereat; so that I make no question he will help you if you demand his aide, as becomes you; therefore Bonaventura O Connay

Note.

brother to *Eneas O Conny*, who is Lecturer here, thought fit to write unto the Generall *Phelym* touching this matter : and I advise you to see wisely unto the reasons which hee writ, and unto the good which will arise from them in time, and that you and *Phelym* be guided and directed by them, and the rather for that *Bonaventura* is a wise, prudent, and learned man, and as loving and faithfull unto you as I am ; if you be not present, *Romy* will supply your place. I beseech you above all things, and for the love of Iesus Christ, let true love bee established among you all, and let not the temptation of the Divell or man divert your minde from cherishing all possible love and amity between your selfe and *Bryan Mac Coghonaght* and his children, (as I doubt not you will) endeavor to draw unto you, not only your own kindred ;

Note, but also the ancientest roote of the Irish, wheresoever dispersed or distant, and all to the glory of God, and the defence of your Religion ; and I will be bound God will be your help : If you beare out your year, believe me, the Pope and all the Catholique Kings will be glad that you crave their assistance : the mercifull God grant it, and defend you from the out-rage of your enemies. So will hee pray night and day, who is

From Isidors Colledge, Rome 4 Jan. 1642.
after the Roman account.

Your poore Kinsman
Francis Mac Guire.

Were it not that I have not finished my Studies, there is nothing in the world, I had rather then to live with you, to doe for you any service even to my death, though I want nothing where I am : and seeing I am not present with you, let none be your Councell, but such as be wise, and conscionable men, and acquainted with the Customs of other Nations : I commit you to Gods protection, and behave your selfe nobly for your Religion ; commend mee to *Hugh Mac Mahoun* and his children ; seeing the way is very long, I will be so bold as to send unto you no more paper at this time.

Malachias is a Lecturer in the Countrey, an excellent *Italian* ; as you think best, either send for him to goe over, or else let him tarry here.

A Copy of a Letter from one in Rome to Sir Phelym O-Neale.

Right Honourable,

YOur Honour and worth doth embolden me, though unacquainted, to present unto your honour herewith, my humble duty and service, which shall be alwayes at your Lordships command, if in ought your Lordships may be pleased to make use thereof. I have received of late some Letters out of *London*, wherein they write that your Lordship hath taken Armes in *Ireland* against the King of *England* ; of this I have informed our old Father, who received much comfort thereby, and promised to give his helping hand to all your exploits, which our *Munster* men here underhand doe offer to make his Holinesse believe, that if any such businesse or alteration be in *Ireland*, it is rather begun by my Lord *Roch* or *Wormouth*, then by you, or any in your Province, being very poore and wanting the ability or meanes to maintaine or make up any such Army : this with other sinister informations, doth this *Munster* Agent (whom in Gods name Mr *Reily* nominated for *Vlster*) offer to diminish the fame and credit of those who venture their life and health for the common good of their

Note, Countrey and Church : It is most necessary, that your Honour doe write with all speed and by severall wayes, both to this old man with his Nephew Cardinall *Francisco*, and also to our Protector Cardinall *Anthony*, or send some naturall Prelate, that may

may informe them at large of all your proceedings and minde : In the meane time what I or Father *Bonaventura Conneo* can doe shall not be wanting ; observe alwayes good correspondency with the Ancient Catholike houses of both *England* and *Scotland*, as your Predecessor the defunct did, and also with those here and elsewhere : Father *Francis Ferrall* is in *Vienna* to serve us ; and Father *Magnesium* in *Madrid*, so as nothing may be wanting, if due correspondency be observed, trust and make use of old *Rosse de Crosse*, who knowes how to see your letters directed unto me : See that you live all in a generall union, and not have any contradiction among you, otherwise you can hardly arive to what we desire you. If any service I can doe you either here or elsewhere, be sure to command me as your own, in the meane time, my daily prayers shall not be wanting for your happy and prosperous successe in all your proceedings, desiring the mighty Majesty to lend you his helping hand : and so will I take leave, wishing your honour a most happy new yeare,

Note.

Rome 4 Janu. 1642.

Your Lordships humble servant and cousin
to command, G.F.

Here I send you a letter from Father
Bonaventura Conneo, a most good
and discreet friend of yours.

This is *Gerrald Farrall*, as appears
by other Letters.

This man did wrire severall other Letters to this
purpose, to severall other Priests and Titulary
Bishops in this Kindome.

A Copy of a Letter from *Bonaventura O-Conny*, to *Sir Phelym Roe O-Neale*, from Rome.

To my Honoured friend *Phelym Roe O-Neale*, with my well
wishes, in Ireland.

My honoured Lord,

THE great God help you, I would have often written unto you since I received
St *Francis* his habit, and especially during these seven years I lived in *Rome*, had not
the Lord which lately dyed, and *Hugh Roe* my brother charged me to keep no corres-
pondency with you, or with any other friend there, to avoid all suspition and damage
which might happen unto you thereby ; now, if that which is written unto us, and
which we hear from all parts, be true, to wit, That the thing which * we long desired,
whereof our hope was in God and you heretofore be come to passe, the time of writing and
keeping correspondency with you, touching such matters as are best and most needfull unto
you in the present opportunity, is now at hand : therefore I could not chuse but write above
all things these few lines unto you in my mother tongue, as being most safe and lesse
suspicious in these times. The holy Father and his two Nephewes, Cardinall *Anthony*
Barbarino Protector of Ireland, and Cardinall *Francis Barbarino*, who hath all the power
here in such matters as concern the Pope, have heard of the Warre and Confederation
which you make for your Religion and Liberty ; And truly I cannot expresse the great-
nesse of the joy (no wonder) which they receive thence, in such manner that
if they had received Letters, or if you had sent an Agent unto them, to ex-
presse your will or designs, you should want no helpe for your better proceedings :
Wherefore I would have you to send some able man, with a Declaration of your grie-
vances in form of Law : my Brother *Owen Roe O Conny* the Priest, is in *Spain*, except
he be gon into Ireland before this ; he hath finished very well his fluddy of *Philo-*
sophy,

* Note.

Note.

Note.

Tyrone.

Note.

Note.

Note.

sophy, Theology, and Law; and is well spoken in the *Latine*, *Spanish*, and *Dutch*; he is, as I know, wise, sober, discreet, learned, and bred according to the manner of severall Nations, to treat with any Prince of what matter soever. Furthermore, hee is (as you know) faithfull and naturall to the other Lords, your Confederates, which qualities are most requisite in any man to be sent hither, or to any other place upon the like Embassage. I protest unto you before God, that I commend him, not in that he is my Brother, but that I am not acquainted with any man of better ability to bee employed here in your service then he, since *Hugh Roe* my Brother died, through the great misery and paines he hath taken in his last travell. I am Teacher here in the *Colledge of the Irish*, these six yeares, employed all that time about the affaires of the late * *flaine* Lord: I might doe you some service, if I had some intelligence from you, and some help of him whom you intend to send hither. There is nothing I desire more, then to returne to my Countrey, though I be settled here to my owne contentation. I pray use me, and the rest of my functions after such manner, as shall seeme best unto you, for your owne service. Father *Arthur Mac Gennis* is in *Madrid*, and so are many others, who would performe any service wherein you would be pleased to employ them. Father *Francis Mac Gennis* is in *Germany*; so likewise is Father *Francis O Farrell*, who loves and honours you, and is very intimate with the Emperour, who might well help you now, since you have eased him of the troubles of the Palatinate, whom only he feared. There is also in *Germany* a Priest from the County of *Tyrone*, *Edmond Mac Grava*, a learned man, having late commenced Doctor. In *France* there is a Divinity Professour, *Patrick O Connor*, descended from the Connoy of *Leinster*, who did much service unto the late deceased Lord; he is of nature, loving, constant, of audacity, guided with discretion, as is his Cousin *Leander O Connor*, who I doubt not will doe any service for you. *Michard O Gormeley* is in the Low Countreys Guardian of *Lorraine*, and many more of the likesort: see your selfe what is best to be done with *Owen O Neale*, who is in *Flanders*, and with *Conn Mac Carmack*, who is Serjeant Major in *Spaine*, but more is the pity, a man of no great polity or wisdom. I would all the old Trained Souldiers were there. I will write to my Brother *Murtagh O Conny* who was ancient to the deceased Lord, and is now Captaine; and to the rest of the Nobility of *Ulster*, that they repaire unto you without delay: you may write to the King of *Spaine*, among other things, to give them leave to come unto you. I know not what the Earle of *Tireconnell* does upon this occasion, his Regiment is disbanded, and he himselfe is gone to the Court to *Madrid*; I feare much that if he should goe into *Ireland*, he would doe more hurt then good. Noble Sir, feare God above all things in prosecuting wisely the Fortune which God offers unto you; let love and unanimity be among your selves; shew all possible kindnesse to the old Irish of *Leinster*, and oblige unto your selfe all men as neare as you may. Beware of the tricks of the *Munster* men, who at this houre show no candid dealing towards you in *Rome*, as you shall soon understand, except you send your Agent to prevent it with all speed; for they ascribe unto themselves, without any ground, the praise and glory of all your Heroicall deeds, as you may learne of *Levit* that lives with your selfe. Be sure to have a great heart, and make some chiefe head among you; but reserve the Crowne for Con his side the Neales. Remember the old slavery wherein you have lived a long time, and the destruction which will generally come upon you, except you get the upper hand. You will prevaile, if you joyne together as you ought; God send it. I would advise every chiefe Officer among you to have a Secretary along with him, to write a Diurnall of your passages and overthrowes which your enemies receive, which will redound much to your glory: spoyle not the Countrey for feare of famine. I will not faile to write according as I shall heare from you: we would send unto you a Bull after the forme of the Bull which *Hugh Mac Baron* got, if we had received your Letters: and if the Church doe well, they will turne over the election of Prelates there to the Nobility, and give them Authority in that point.

Rome from *Isodors Colledge* 4 Jan.
after the Roman Account.

Your faithfull Servant,
Bonaventura O Conny.

With

With what bloody cruelty, industry, animosity on the Popish Rebels part, and what encouragements, (a) pretended, if not Reall Commissions, countenance, assistance from the Court and Popish party here, this warre against the Protestants in Ireland, (to the destruction of neare two hundred thousand of them or more) hath been carried on; how the ayd, moneys, armes, assistance then sent them by the Parliament hence, hath been retarded, and intercepted by their Court friends here: how the Estates and Goods of the Protestants there have been seised on by the Rebels, and their persons murdered, (b) For the Exaltation of the Holy Roman Catholique Church, the Advancement of His Majesties Service, and his defence against the Parliament: how his Majesty, since their effusion of so much Protestant blood, hath admitted them all to his Royall favour, without exception of any particular person, by (c) Articles of Pacification, wherein the stiles them his GOOD SUBJECTS: how he hath by speciall Commissions (as (d) Aulicus himselfe informes us) drawne over the English Forces sent from hence into Ireland against the Rebels, to fight against the very Parliament Forces; administering an Oath to every Officer and Souldier before they were transported from Ireland hither, To the utmost of his power, and hazard of his life, to fight against the Forces now under the conduct of the Earle of Essex, and against all other Forces whatsoever that shall bee raised under what pretence soever, contrary to his Majesties Command or Authority: how Captaine John Read, one of the chiefe Actors in this Conspiracy, there taken Prisoner in the field and sent thence to the Tower, hath since his escape from thence been knighted by his Majesty; who granted him a (e) Patent for Butter and a speciall Protection heretofore, though a most desperate Papist, and Agent for the Jesuites, who had a Chappell, and kept weekly Conventicles in his house for Iesuites sundry yeares: how the very Popish Irish Rebels themselves have been in great numbers imported and entertained in his Majesties Armies with much respect, yea some of the chiefe of them highly honoured and favoured at Court, to the very envy of the Protestant party there, notwithstanding all their bloody massacres in Ireland and England too; and their base Irish coyne made currant in England by speciall Proclamations; how they have gained Letters of Mart from the King, to spoyle and rob his Protestant Subjects Ships, Goods, Persons by sea; and what hopes they have that the City of Bristol it selfe shall be shortly put into their power; notwithstanding their Generall Assembly held at Kilkenny in nature of a Parliament, where they have erected severall Courts of Justice civill and military, created sundry Iudges, Officers of all sorts, imposed arbitrary Taxes, enacted Lawes, usurped to themselves both a transcendent Regall and Parliamentary Power; which yet they execute in their own names as a SUPREAM COUNCELL, hath been already so fully related in Dr. Jones his book of Examinations, The Rise and Progress of the Irish Rebellion, The Mystery of Iniquity, The Acts of the Generall Assembly of the Rebels at Kilkenny An. 1642. with sundry other late printed Relations, and Declarations of both Houses concerning Ireland, yea in sundry Oxford Aulicusses, and are so experimentally known to most, that I shall totally pretermitt them; And conclude only with the Testimony of Sir Arthur Loftus, delivered upon oath in the Kings Bench in Mac-Mohuns triall, concerning the Popes Bull lately sent from Rome to the Irish Rebels (portending more massacres and warres both there and here) to this effect, That his Holinesse did give them his fatherly Benediction, and a plenary indulgence for all their sinnes, for the extraordinary service they had done for the Catholique Cause and Church, in invading, extirpating the Hereticks in Ireland; exhorting them to proceed on in that acceptable service, till they had fully compleated that work. A true copy of which Bull sent to the Lords Justices in Ireland, he both saw and read.

How the English Papists, all privy to that Designe (as was then attested on oath at the same triall) to divert all assistance of the Irish Protestants from hence, have raised up a bloody civill warre in England, to the ruine of many thousand gallant men on either part, and almost utter desolation of our Kingdome; how (contrary to his Majesties first Orders, Proclamations) they have all had free acceffe to his Court, Armies, Forts, and received very gracious entertainment, if not great commands in both; and how both

(a) See Doctor Jones his book of Examinations, and the Mystery of Iniquity.

(b) The Preface of the Acts of the General Assembly of the Rebels at Kilkenny 1642.

(c) See the Articles printed at Shrewsbury.

(d) The 48 week Dec. 2.

1643. p. 681. 685.

(e) See Romes Master-piece, p. 20, 21, 22, 26.

The Popish Royall Favourite, p. 25.

See the Acts thereof printed 1642.

Note.

both English, Irish, Dutch, French, Italian, Spanish, and German Papists have combined all their Purfes, Forces, Armes, Pollicies, and Power together, to assist the King (who yet adheres unto their party, Councils) against his Parliament, and Protestant Subjects, is so experimentally known to all of all sorts, especially to the Protestants in his Majesties Court, Armies, Quarters, that it would be a meere unnecessary expence of time and paper to make any particular relation of them.

Should I here insert all other papers concerning Papists and their proceedings, which have come unto my hands, I might tire both the Reader and my selfe, and make my Gate farre larger then my City; I shall therefore close up this introduction with three late Letters from beyond the Seas, discovering fully to the world, how vigorously the Popish Faction still carry on their designs of reconciling us speedily unto Rome, and are now in agitation to procure a Cardinals Cap from the New Pope for the Lord Aubeny Brother to the Duke of Lenox (one of the late Commissioners sent from Oxford to the Parliament, about the Treaty of Peace) to which our present Negotiations with the Pope for a Cardinalship for so great a Person at this nick of time, is a very sad inauspicious Prologue, engaging all who have any sparks of reall love to God, Religion, his Majesty, their Countrey, or Posterity, to look about them with greatest care, for feare of Circumventions.

The first Letter was written out of Flanders (by some Priest or Iesuiste of the Spanish Faction) to Mr Henry Howard, relating the manner of the New Popes election; with the Queens sending Sir Kenelm Digby to Rome to him for a Cardinals Cap for the Lord Aubeny (since made an Abbot in France) and intimating that there is some designe to make the Lord Herbert a professed Papist, Governour of Bristoll ere long, and to put that City and Castle into the Papists hands; where thousands of them at this present reside, and some overtures of putting this designe in speedy execution (if our late intelligence thence deceive us not) have been lately made, and much feared by the Inhabitants. This Letter was intercepted in its passage towards Oxford, and brought to the Committee of Examinations, where the Originall remaines, out of which I copied it.

Note.

YOU heare ere this, that Cardinall Pamfilio, a Roman borne, a great Lawyer, and a very wise man, is made Pope, with the name of Innocentius Decimus; he was made by the Spanish Faction, who having excluded Cardinall Sachetti, though a gallant man, but desired above all by the French and Barbarinoes, and after that excluded also another, a Dominican, whom Barbarino desired to advance; by these exclusions, our Faction, of which the Cardinall of Florence was the Capo, constrained Barbarino to joyne with them in favour of Pamfilio, as being also a Creature of the last Pope: but the French Faction opposed all they could, though in vaine. He hath been Nuntio in Spaine eight yeares, that it is conceived he is well affected to that Crowne; but I wish he may carry himselfe indifferently, and like an Universall Father; and only favour that party which shall most apply it selfe to reason. He is 70 yeares old and a halfe, but of a very strong Constitution. His Nephew, being but one, is not above 18 yeares old, and so he is not fit for Businesses: hee hath therefore made choyce of three or foure Cardinalls to assist him in the Government: and Cardinall Pancirellio being one of them, is to lodge in S. Peters, as his chiefe Confident. He will certainly set instantly upon the businesse of the Generall Peate, part of his Armes is a Pigion, which is a good Augury.

Note,

Tell me whether the Archbishop of York be at Oxford; he is a gallant man, and of good intentions; be acquainted with him. Where is my Lord Herbert all this while? is he Governour of Bristoll? It is writ from Paris lately, that Sir Kenelm Digby is going to Rome, sent by the Queen, and among other things, he must sollicite a Cap for the Duke of Lenox his Brother. In my conscience, betweene you and me, I think Mr Thomas Courtney deserves it infinitely better, and would make good use. Thus I end,

The 22 of Octob. 1644.

Yours, &c.

Burne this Letter, I pray you, and tell me you have done it.

To my very good Friend Mr Hen. Howard, recommend
to Mr Francis Howard his Brother.

The

The second Letter was writ by Sir *Kenelm Digby*, and sent to *Mr Walter Montague* in the Tower, and fortifies the former, though in more obscure termes.

I Hope you have your book ere this time; *Mr Gibson* my Lord of *Pembrooks* Dwarfe took charge of it at his going hence, and I am confident he will be most carefull to deliver it into your owne hands, if it may be, if not, he will give it to — of the house as you direct: I sent it open, that it may give no ombrage, but as for the note under *Standrets* hand, assuredly there is none at (a) *Pontoise*. *La Mere* and I have looked over every paper in the Cabinets, she giving me them one by one through the grate: she had emptied all together, when she sent your Indian ones to be sold, which caused some confusion. We finde a copy of that note under *Filbricks* hand, attested by him and *Tho. Cook* to be a true copy, and mentioning, that *Filbrick* being then to goe into England, was to take the Originall note with him, to demand thereupon the money of *Standrets* brother *Oliver*. I understand that *Filbrick* will be here shortly with my Lord *Jermyn*, and then I will know of him what he did with the Originall note. In the meane time, I have desired *La Mere* to send this attested copy to *Mr Foster* to doe with it as you shall hereafter direct: I have given your fine Cane to **La Mere* to keep carefully for you; I feare I shall not be so happy as to have much conversation with the *Paradise* of *Pontoise*, before my going into Italy, for the Queen presseth much my departure; yet I hope so much time will slide away before, that I may heare of your enlargement from your close habitation, and obey your command of not going out of your call, till you give me my dismissory. *La Mere* and I have had much conference of what is fit to be done in your behalfe, and of what advantage the present resolution of your enlargement thence may be to you in the maine of the businesse. And after much debate, both she and (b) *Mr Futton* are cometo my sentiment, That you should accept of your freedome, though clogged with the condition of not coming over hither. Me thinks your coming into France might as well be accorded unto, so that both you and this Queene grve your words of not coming to the Court, nor negotiating any businesse; however that will be relished, I wish you and all your friends might lay your strength upon permission for you to goe into Italy. At the worst settle your abode in *Monfieur Sabrans* house, for time may enlarge their enlargement with more ease then from the strictnesse you now are under: Still the burden of my song is, get out upon any termes, for take my word, if in any reasonable time you gaine so much liberty as to be capable of it, your (a) Italian businesse will be done, which otherwise the necessity of affaires (or at least the conceived necessity) will cast it upon the (b) Lord you know, who hath very powerfull advancers, by his friends in this Court, by his being much liked (in a manner accepted of) in Italy, and by his own much pressing and publike declaring himselfe for it, and thereupon taking the sentance. The Queen is firm to you, if you may be capable of it in any reasonable time, and accordingly hath declared to that Lord. But if it cannot be in your behalfe, then she hath promised him her powerfull assistance. I pray you write me as soone as you can, all your Sentiments and Orders upon this, as also upon what you may reflect upon concerning my journey: for I shall saile by your compasse, and lose no time in doing so; for I shall not be able to delay much.

I have desired *La Mere* to lend *Mr Foster* the severall notes I have given for money received of you, that I may take them in, and give one formall one for the whole summe, (in case I pay it not before I goe) deducting the 100.l. you had of mine. I have had in all 480 pistols, out of which deducting 140 for that 100.l. (for that is the lowest and ordinary rate of exchange) I have had; though some more diligent persons have had 48 of advantage) there remaineth due to you 340 pistols, which in English money (at the same rate of 40 per cent.) is 243.l. sterling; which by the Grace of God shall ere long be reimbursed you, either here or in England, and peradventure before I goe hence. *La Mere* telleth me, there is no hope of getting above 200 pistols for the hanging though she have employed *Madam le Cant*, and other friends

(a) It seems Mr Montagues Cabinet of secret Papers are kept at Pontoise, a Nunery in France, by the Abbess there.

*The Lady Abbess.

Note.

Note.

(b) Late Agent for the secular Priests at Rome, at whose house Mr Montague lodged for some time in Rome.

(a) That is, hee shall bee made a Cardinall there.

(b) The Lord Aubeny.

Note.

and severall *Tapistiers* about them. If you will let them goe now, I pray you let me have them to carry with me into *Italy*: That is, if I have money to pay for them when I receive them, for otherwise I will not have them (knowing how much you stand in need of present money. Farewell, deare Sir, I have interrupted your meditations too long.

The 21 *Octob.*

This Letter, written with Sir *Kenelm Digbys* own hand, and sent by him to Mr *Montague* (a man best acquainted, of any living, with all the secret Negotiations and Treaties between *Rome* and us, and best able to discover them, having had a great share in the plotting and acting of them was intercepted, and brought to the Committee of Examinations, where the Originall remains, out of which I have transcribed this extract.

The third is the Clause of a Letter lately written by a Noble English Lady, now residing in *Paris*, to a Member of the house of *Commons*; wherein she writes thus to him for Newes in confirmation of the two preceding Letters, touching the intended English *Cardinall*, and Sir *Kenelm Digbys* Embassie from the *Queene* to *Rome*.

Paris Decemb. 8. 1644.

Note.

My Lord Aubeny is now made an Abbot, The Queene of France hath given him one worth 1500 Pistols a yeare: There is a speech HE SHALL BE A CARDINALL. Sir Kenelm Digby GOES EMBASSADOUR TO ROME TO THE NEW POPE FROM THE QUEENE, &c.

(a) His second Sermon before King Edward the Sixth, f. 36.

(b) *Ibidem.*

(c) 23. Eliz. c. 1.
27. Eliz. c. 2.

What little hopes we can then have of a firme or reall Peace, whiles the *Popish Party* are so prevalent, active, audacious, as even in this very nick of time to send a speciall Embassadour to *Rome* from our *Queen* to the *New Pope*, to sollicite a *Cardinals Cap* for the Lord *Aubeny* (brother to the Duke of *Lenox*, a man so nearly allied to his Majesty, and many great Personages in this Realme) I shall humbly referre to the consideration of all understanding men, both here, and in his Majesties Quarters. Certainly I dare say with old Father (a) *Latymer*, That the *Romish Hats* never brought good into England, heretofore; and can they presage ought but much more evill to us now? What good our last great *Cardinall Poole* of Noble extraction, brought to this our Realme, and Religion in *Queen Marias* dayes, you may read in the Statute of 1 & 2 *Phil. & Mary* ch. 8. in Mr *John Fox* his Acts and Monuments, volum. 3. and can we now expect any better fruits from this intended *Cardinall* of more Noble Parentage? I feare me, no: Wherefore I can give no other sentence of him, and all others designed to this Antichristian dignity, or ambitious of it, then (b) Father *Latymer* hath long since passed against them, in the case of *Henry Beaufort Bishop of Winchester* (made a *Cardinall* by the Pope in King *Henry* the sixth his reign:) He was made a *Cardinall* at *Calys* (in France, where our new *Cardinall* is now to be made) and thither the *Bishop of Rome* sent him a *Cardinals Hat*: Hee should have had a *Tiburn-tippet*, an half-penny *halter*, and all such proud Prelates. And they doe well deserve it, their only ayme and endeavour being to reduce, reconcile, and enslave our soules, bodies, estates, Realms to the Antichristian vassallage of the Sea of *Rome*, which is no lesse then (c) High Treason by our Lawes.

For my own particular, I have ever been a cordiall affecter, endeavourer, promoter of our publike Peace to the uttermost of my power, & shall ever (God willing) continue such; but my owne Judgement, Reason, Conscience perswade me, we shall never enjoy any reall, solid, lasting Peace one with another in any of our three Realms, whiles we negotiate a Peace, or hold the least correspondency with the Sea of *Rome*, which hath lately drenched, and almost drowned us all in our owne blood, metamorphosed all our Kingdoms into so many *Acheldamaes*, after a long-enjoyed Peace, and by new Letters, Commissions to raise Irish Forces in *Ireland*, and new Contributions, Conspiracies, Designs against us in *France*, *Italy*, and other *Popish* Realms, during the overtures of a Treaty of Peace, threatens us only with a continuall succession of warres.

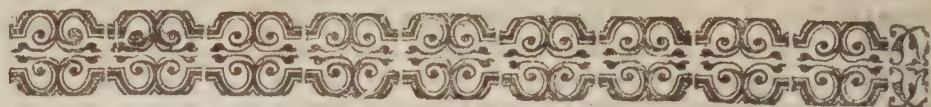
It

It was a memorable Answer that *Iehu* made to *Ioram* King of Israel, when he and *Abaziah* King of *Judah* went out against him, *2 King. 9. 21, 22.* And it came to passe when *Ioram* saw *Iehu*, that he said, is it *PEACE* *Iehu*? And he answered, *WHAT PEACE*, so long as the Whordoms of thy mother *Iezabel*, and her witchcrafts are so many? as long as we have any enchanting *Iezabels* domineering in our Councels, and soliciting us to Court at least, if not to commit open fornication with the whoore of *Babylon* (as to many have done of late yeares) alas what peace can we expect, or what have we to doe with Peace? Wee have all cause to consider what the Apostle writes, *2 Cor. 6. 14, 15, 16, 17.* Be not unequally yoked with Unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousnesse? and what communion hath light with darknesse? and what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an Infidell? or what agreement hath the Temple of God with Idols? Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and I will receive you: yea, I will be a father unto you, and ye shall be my sonnes and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty. Doubtlesse we shall never enjoy any well-grounded Peace with God, or one another, till we utterly renounce and separate our selves wholly from all communion, fellowship, agreement, concord with the idolatrous Antichristian Church of *Rome*: and execute exemplary justice on all those who have been active instruments to reconcile, seduce us to her; of whom I can give no other Character nor issue of their Consultations, then that of the Prophet *Isay** They conceive mischief, and bring forth iniquity; they hatch Cockatrice eggs, and weave the Spiders web; he that eateth of their eggs, dieth, and that which is crushed, breaketh out into a viper. Their webs shall not become garments, neither shall they cover themselves with their works; their works are works of iniquity, and the act of violence is in their hands. Their feet run to evill, and they make haste to shed innocent blood: their thoughts are thoughts of iniquity; wasting and destruction are in their paths: the way of peace they know not, and there is no Iudgement in their goings; they have made them crooked paths: whosoever goeth therein shall not know peace. Therefore is Iudgement farre from us, neither doth Iustice overtake us; we wait for light, but behold obscurity, for brightnesse, but we walk in darknesse. We grope for the wall like the blinde, and we grope as if we had no eyes: we stumble at noon-day as in the night, we are in desolate places as dead men. We roare all like bears, and mourn sore like doves; we look for judgment, but there is none; for salvation, but it is farre off from us. As ever therefore we would enjoy peace or safety, let us eternally renounce all Leagues, Treaties, correspondencies with these enemies of our peace, these Authors of our forepast and present dangers, warres, desolations: If all our former sinarting experiences of their Treacheries, Cruelties in *Ireland*, in *England*, with their many late Treacheries, Designes upon us, even since the late Overtures of this approaching Treaty of Peace, will not now awaken us unanimously and effectually to provide, secure our selves against them for all future Ages, God in his justice may and will deliver us over, one time or other, to their sword, power, vassalage, and continue this warre among us (fomented by their Councells, supplied by their Armes, and Contributions) till we be all consumed one of another, and made a Prey to our forraigne Enemies; which deplorable misery and Antichristian bondage, the God only Wise, of his infinite mercy make us all wise timely to prevent.

Isa. 59. 4. to 13.

FINIS.

THE TABLE.



A Table to some principall Passages in this Necessary Introduction, &c.

Note that the figures of the pages in the book from 206, to 253, are for the most part misprinted, and that the references to them in this Table are as they should have been, not as they are printed,

A.

Abbot, *Archbishop of Canterbury his Remonstrance to King James, against a toleration of Popery, and the Spanish Match*, page 39, 40. *His Letter to his Suffragan Bishops for prosecuting Recusants*, p. 78, 79.

Abbot, *Audomarus Ioannes his Letter to Secretary Windebank, concerning the Papists fidelity to the King in the Scottish warres, and other particulars*, p. 194, 195.

Altars, *inserted into the Scottish Liturgy by Archbishop Laud*, p. 160. *Broken down and removed by the rude Souldiers raised against the Scots*, p. 171, 212.

Alvey, *an Arminian Vicar of Newcastle, an intelligencer against the Scots, his Letter to Archbishop Laud*, p. 188, 189.

Articles concerning the Spanish Match, with their alterations and ratifications, p. 3, to 8. 14, 15, 25, 40, 10 46.

Arminianisme planted here by the Iesuites, their chiefe engin and bridge to Popery countenanced by Bishop Laud, and Arminians to, p. 92, 93, 94, 146, 147.

Articles of the French Match, p. 70, 71.

Articles and Favours condescended to by King James and King Charles in behalf of Romish Priests and Catholikes upon the Spanish and French Marriage treaties, p. 44, to 49, 71.

The Lord Aubeny (brother to the Duke of Lenox) newly made an Abbot in France and to be forthwith made a Cardinal at the Queens solicitation by the new pope, p. 252, to 255.

Monsieur Aubert sent along with Secretary Windebank by the Queen, when he fled, to assist him, p. 126, 128.

B.

Cardinall Barbarino the lates Popes Nephew made Protector Generall of the English and Scottish Nations; and Superintendent of the Society of Iesuites erected in London, p. 141, 144, 145, 146, 210, 211, 214. *His armes set above the Kings*, p. 145. *A great friend of Secretary Windebanks, entertaining his sonne at Rome, who brought over in his Trunk divers things to Con the Nuncio from him*, p. 141, 144, 145, 146. *He sent over statues into England*, p. 146. *He had a hand in the Irish Rebellion, and much rejoyced at it*, p. 247 to 251.

Barnwell an Irish Popish Bishop a great stickler in the Rebellion there, p. 220, 229, 231. Bishop Beadles Letters concerning the increase and insolencie of the Papists in Ireland, p. 99, 100, 111, 112, 113.

The Bishops of Scotlands Letters to Archbishop Laud concerning their Liturgy and Canons, p. 149, 150. *Their insolencie towards the Peers, through Canterburies advancing of them*, p. 206. *They deemed themselves the representative Church of Scotland, and above a generall Assembly*, p. 167, 168.

Fr. Boetius the Popish Bishop of Elphin in Ireland, his certificate, p. 113.

The Lord Digby Earle of Bristol his Negotiations in and Letters from Spain, touching the Spanish Match, and the Palatinate, p. 2, to 69. *Impeached of High treason by Sir Robert Heath the Kings Attorney, by the Kings speciall command, (for perswading*

THE TABLE.

swading him to become a *Papist*, and alter his Religion in Spain, and other miscarriages) in the Lords House in Parliament, p. 32, 33, 34.

Major Bret sent agent to Rome from the Queen, with the Archbishops privy, as was there conceived, An. 1635. p. 143.

John Brown a popish Priest, his notable discovery of sundry plots of the Jesuites, Queens Priests, Agents, Popes Nuncios, &c. to this Parliament, p. 207, to 215.

The Duke of Buckingham accused by the Earle of Bristoll of high treason in Parliament, for labouring to seduce the King to become a *Papist*, and other miscarriages in Spain, p. 30, 31, 32. His voyage into France to bring over the Queen, p. 73, &c. His voyage to Rec, and betraying of Rochel, p. 84, 85, 86.

Burlemachi, the chief Conveyer of Secretary Windebanks Letters since his flight, p. 138.

Sir John Burrows papers writ to the Archb, concerning the war with Scotland, p. 172, to 175.

Bonnyragge his exactions, p. 212.

C.

The Bishop of Calcedon, Smith, sent from the Pope into England, where he ordained Priests, and seduced his Majesties subjects: Proclamations for his apprehension procured by the secular and regular Priests, who persecuted and caused him to fly into France, p. 98, 99, 100. The Oath the English Priests were to take to him, p. 82, 83. Windebanks correspondencie with him to make him his intelligencer in France concerning the Scots, p. 199.

The Lady Calfields testimony concerning the Irish Rebellion; that the Rebels gave out England was in the same condition with Ireland; the Tower of London surprized by their Party, and the Archbishop of Canterbury rescued thence, p. 226.

Secretary Calverts Letters to the Earle of Bristoll, Gage, and others touching the Spanish Match, p. 21, 25, 28, 29.

Cardinals at Rome writ to by King James, during the Spanish treaty, and their respects to him, p. 26.

Cardinals Caps sought after, expected by, or promised to Mr. Walter Montague, Mr. Sommerfet, Mr. Brudnell, and the L. Aubeny, p. 143, 199, 200, 211, 252, 253, 254.

A Cardinalship seriously offered twice one after another, to Archbishop Laud, p. 149.

John Carmick his testimony concerning the late Irish Rebellion, p. 241, 242, 243.

King CHARLES his voyage into Spaine whiles Prince of Wales; by whom and for what end designed, to wit, to make him a professed *Papist*; the Palsgraves eldest sonne being at the same time intended to be sent to the Emperours Court, to be there trained up in Popery, p. 30, to 38. The arts and perswasions there used to make him a *Papist*, ibid. The Popes Letter to him there, and his answer to it, sent to the Pope, p. 36, to 39. His Oath and Articles in favour of *Papists* there sworn and subscribed, p. 40, to 49. His Letters of procuration, and delays there put on him by the Spaniard, p. 48, to 52. His return from Spain, and the jewels he there gave away at his departure, p. 49, to 56. His Match with France, and the articles concerning it, p. 69, 70, 71. His pardon of 20 Priests and Jesuites within three dayes after it, p. 71, 72, 73. His Answer to the Petition of both Houses against Recusants at Oxford Anno 1625. and his Proclamations against Recusants and Priests, with the ill execution of both, and the discharging priests, protecting Recusants notwithstanding, p. 74, to 148. His Warrant to Captain Pennington, An. 1625, to sinke the English shippes who refused to serve the *Papists* against the Protestants in Rochel, &c, p. 84, 85, 86. His setting the Lone on foot, and Letters concerning it, An. 1626. p. 86, 87, 88. The Parliaments Remonstrance to him called in by proclamation, and answered by Bishop Laud by his command, An. 1627. p. 90, to 95. His proclamations against the Bishop of Calcedon procured by the secular priests, p. 98, 99, 100. Advices to him concerning the Queenes Priests, p. 119, to 103. His Passe to Secretary Windebank when he fled into France, and the continuance of his Royall favours to him there, though he professed in sundry Letters, he did release no Priests, &c. but by his Majesties specall direction and command, p. 123, to 140. Windebank sends his petition to the Parliament to him to correct

THE TABLE.

correct and further it in the Houses, p, 134, 135. The received Copy of his Letter to the Pope in the behalfe of the Duke of Loraighn, p, 142. Pope Urban the 8, his affection to his Majesty, p, 142. What opinion they held of him at Rome, An. 1635. p, 143 143. His Articles and Letter concerning his Chappell in Scotland, and Warrant to Archbishop Laud to hold correspondency with the Deane of it, the Bishop of Dunblane, p, 148, 149. His Command to the Archbishop of S. Andrewes, to hold correspondencie with the Lord Traquaire, p. 151. His Warrant concerning the Scottish Canons without date, p. 152. His Instructions to the Archbishops and Bishops of Scotland; and a pretendant Warrant to archbishop Laud concerning the Scottish Liturgie, p. 156. His offence at the opposition of the Scots against this Liturgie, p. 165. Canterbury and Wentworth his sole advisers in the Scottish wars, to subdue them by an Irish Army, p. 170, 171, &c. His antedated Warrant to Canterbury, to warrant the Clergies benevolence against the Scots, p. 174. His courteous entertainment of the Popes Nuncios, p. 141, 210. Privie to the Popish Generall assembly (in nature of a Parliament at London, and to their contributions against the Scots, p. 189, &c. His consent for Owen Oncale to raise a regiment of 3500. men to serve the Spaniard in Flanders that he might come over strong upon all occasions to his assistance, p. 219, 220. His release of Priests, Jesuites, and stay of proceedings against Recusants, p. 122, 123, 124, to 137. Acquainted in generall with the Irish Rebellion by a paper directed to him above a yeere before it brake out, p. 231, 238, 239, 240. His Pacification with, favour to, and entertainment of the Irish Rebels, and sending for them into England, and those sent against them to fight against the Parliament, p. 251. His encouragement to stick close to them if they stuck close to him, and pretended Commission, at least, to authorize their conspiracie, p. 251. His Commission to the Earl of Worcester, a Papiist, to be Lord Lieutenant of all South-Wales, p. 225, 226, His children by the Spanish Lady how to have been educated, p. 21, 22, 24.

St. Clara's Book printed here to reconcile us to Rome, the Author approved, defended against the Jesuites by Secretary Windebank, as in the Kings name, P. 143, 145.

The Commons petition against popish Priests, and Recusants, and the Spanish match, with their Protestation in point of privilege, An. 1621. p. 10, to 14. Their Petition against Priests and Recusants, An. 1625. p. 62, to 70. Their Remonstrance concerning Religion and the growth of Popery and Arminianisme, both in England and Ireland, with Bishop Lauds answer to it, p. 90, to 95.

Signiur George Conne the Popes second Nuncio, when sent into England, his deport-
ment here, and entertainment at Court, p. 143, 144, 145, 146, 209, 210, 211.
President of the Grand assembly of the Divines, p. 143, 144, 145, 146, 209, 210, 211.

President of the Grand assembly of the Papists in London, called by the Queen to contribute aide against the Scots, p. 189.

Lord Conways Letters to archbishop Laud concerning popular tumults; the Earle of Holland fortifying New-castle; the Scots and Marriall Law, P. 183, 184, 185, 186.

Popish Corporals inserted into the Scottish Liturgie by Canterbury; their manner of consecration, p. 162.

Lord Cottington, Secretary to Prince Charles, who accompanied him into Spain, and was active in that match, p. 31. The Earle of Bristol's Letter to him, p. 49. The Lords of the Councils Letters to him in the Scottish business, p. 186, 187.

Contributions of the English Clergie and Civil Lawyers against the Scots, p. 174.
to 183.

D.

Sir Kenelm Digby his entry into Religion in France, p. 141. His intimacy with the Popes Nuncios, and archbishop Laud, and activity to promote the popes designs, p. 206, 211. His Letter concerning the collection of monies by the papists against the Scots, p. 189, 190. His Letter to Mr. Walter Montague, touching his Embassy from the Queen to the new elected Pope; p. 253, 254.

Earle of Dorset, how thought of at Rome, An. 1635. p. 143.

THE TABLE.

E.

The Bailiffes of Edenburghs Letter to archbishop Laud, in excuse of the tumult about the Service-Booke, &c. p. 166.

F.

Father Fitton (agent for the secular priests at Rome) presented to the King by the Earle of Arundell, though a Priest, p. 171. Mr Mountagues adviser now at Paris p. 253.

Th. Flemming the popish archbishop of Dublin, publikely protested against in print for sundry grievances, and appealed from to the Pope by the secular priests in Ireland, p. 107, 108, 109.

Mr. Fosters discourse concerning a Reconciliation, p. 146. What he obtained at Paris for the English fugitives p. 138, 253.

Mr. Fortescues Letter from Rome to Secretary Windebank p. 200.

G.

George Gage King James his agent at Rome, his Letter to King James from thence, touching the Spanish Match, and Letters from hence to him, p. 13, 14, 15, 21, to 29.

H.

Sir William Hamilton our English Agent at Rome, his arrivall, entertainment and carriage there, with his intimacy with Secretary Windebank, and entertainment of his sonnes there, p. 143, 144, 146, 211.

Hoyle a Jesuites Letter concerning the Scottish troubles, p. 171.

I.

King James his instructions to the Lord Digby, with all his articles, Letters, proceedings, concerning the Spanish Match, p. 1, to 69. His Letters to, and articles sworn to the King of Spain in favour of papists, and Discharges of papists and Recusants, p. 8, 9, 23, to 29. 44, to 48. His speech at Councell table in favour of papists, p. 30. His Letter to the Speaker of the Commons House, and dislike of the Commons Petition against the encrease of popery and the Spanish Match, and dissolving the Parliament thereupon, p. 9, to 14. He writ Letters to the pope and Cardinalls, who had a good opinion of his favour towards them and Roman Catholikes, p. 24, 26, 30, 31. How deluded by the Spaniard, under pretext of the Spanish treaty, p. 10, to 21, 27, 28. His Protestation concerning the Articles sworn by him and his Councell in favour of papists, p. 47, 48. His recalling the Prince from Spain, and breaking of the treaty by advice of Parliament, though very unwillingly, p. 49, to 63. How he would have over-reached his parliament by mis-reports of the Spanish treaty, p. 20. His Letter written with his own hand to Secretary Conwey concerning the Commons petition against the papists, and warre with Spain, p. 62. Pope Clement the 8. writ to him p. 208. His Letter to the Bishop of Wortzburg in favour of the popish Scottish Seminaries there, p. 194, 195.

A Iesuites Letters concerning the Parliament, 1627. their project upon it and the Realme, p. 89, 90. A Iesuites Oration to pervert the King whiles he was in Spain, p. 35, 36. A Colledge of Iesuites surprized in Clarkenwell, yet some released by their Court friends, p. 88. A Colledge built by them in Queenes street, and their activity in the Scotch warres, 144, 172, 189, to 193. The hurt they have done to all Christian Realms and States, many of which have banished them, p. 202, to 208. Petitions against them in parliament, yet favoured, protected, and released: See Commons, Petitions, Papists, and p. 71, 72, 73, 80, 122, to 130. Iesuites Letters from hence to their Superiours and fellow Iesuites, concerning the Scottish affaires, discovering their privacy to the Archbishops secrets and Kings counsels, p. 170, 171, 172.

Father

THE TABLE.

Father Iohn, Agent for the Benedictines at Rome, a great Servant of Windebanks, page 146.

Father Ioseph his Letter of thanks to Secr. Windebank for his releasing of, and favour to popish Priests, p. 123.

Ireland, the monstrous encrease of Popery, Monasteries, Iesuites, popish Bishops, Priests, and Papists, complained of in Parliament by the Commons, yet denied, p. 93, 94. Manifested by a Proclamation of the privy Councell there, p. 100, 101. by Bishop Bedles letters, the Commons petition, and other Evidences, p. 101, to 214. Cherished in Ireland of purpose by the Lord Deputy Wentworth to ballance the Protestants, and make them serve his turnes in Parliament, p. 113, 117, 118, 238. Their tumult in Dublin, p. 119. Divisions between the secular Priests and regular in Ireland, and their titular Archbishop of Dublin, p. 106, to 110. The Deputies project to pack a Parliament in Ireland, and conquer that Nation and Kingdome by it, p. 114, to 119. The Protestants grieved and oppressed by the Papists there, p. 110, to 113. The Protestation of the Archbishops and Bishops there against a Toleration of Popery p. 83. The rise and progresse of the late Irish Rebellion, and the chiefe Actors in it, p. 218, to 252. Discovered in grosse to the King, and Windebank above a yeare before it brake out, p. 219, 220, &c. All the Irish in forraigne parts privy to and active in it, especially their Priests and Friers, p. 220, to 252. All the Papists in England privy and assistant to it, p. 226, 251. The Pope, Cardinall Barbarino, and Irish at Rome privy to it, and much rejoiced at it, p. 230. &c. 247. to 253. The Spaniards, French, and other popish States acquainted with it, and assistant to it, p. 220. to 253. Above one hundred fifty two thousand Protestants murdered, and destroyed the foure first months by the Rebels, p. 226, 242, 243. The Pops Indulgence granted to the Rebels for extirpating the Hereticks, and exhorting them to persevere in and accomplish that worke, p. 251.

Mr Henry Iermyn his plot and flight, p. 212, 213.

His Letter to Windebank into France, and power with the Queene, p. 131.

134.

Judge Iones, a character of him. p. 230.

L.

Archbishop Laud privy to the Kings and Dukes voyage into Spain: and a furtherer of that Match, p. 34. Writ letters to the Duke of Buckingham into France, and was privy to that match, p. 73, 74. A procurer and countenancer of Dr Manwarings and Sybthorpes Sermons in justification of Lones and arbitrary taxes imposed by the Kings prerogative without a parliament, and accused in parliament for licensing them, p. 86, 90. Accused by the Commons as a Favourer of Arminians, and persons popishly affected, Jan. 11. 1628. p. 91. His saucy and scandalous false answer to the Commons Remonstrance, p. 93, 94, 95. Bishop Bedles and Ushers letters to him concerning the power and encrease of papists in Ireland, p. 101, to 113. The Lord Deputy Wentworth his desperate dispatch to him concerning parliaments in Ireland, p. 114. to 118. Windebanke made Secretary of State by him, p. 122, 123. Presents his humble service to him out of France. p. 127. What opinion they had of him at Rome and Venice p. 143. Twice proffered seriously a Cardinals Cap, p. 140. He advanced Bishop Montague an Arminian, and one who held correspondency with the popes Nuncio, p. 146, 147. His Innovations in England, and power in Ireland, p. 148. His whole proceedings, letters, directions, alterations, Contributions, &c. concerning the late Scottish Lyrurgy, and Warres against the Scots, p. 148, to 189. He fraudulently ex post facto procureth and forgeth divers Warrants from the King, written with his owne and his Secretary Dells hand, touching the Scottish Canons, Lyrurgy, Contributions, and intelligence with the Scottish Bishops, p. 149, 152, 156, 174. His many popish alterations and insertions for the introducing of Altars, Transubstantion, the sacrifice

The Table.

sacrifice of the Masse, Prayer to Saints and other Popish rites, writ with his own hand and taken out of the Roman Missall, and Pontificall, made in the New Scottish Liturgy, worthy observation p. 156 to 164. An Enemy to the Sabbath, p. 158. The Kings chiefe Councillor in the Scottish Warres by the Iesuites owne letters, and adviſeth him to subdue them by an Irish Army, p. 170. 171. his Lifting, Assessing and convening men before the Councell Table to lend to the Scottish Warres: his and the Clergies large contributions, towards these Wars, with his letters to further the same, p. 174. to 189. The Lord Connynges and other letters to him concerning the Scotts affaires, and Wars, p. 172. 173. 174. 183. to 189. His tyranny, injustice in the high Commission, and intimacy with Father Leander and other Popish Priests and Recusants, p. 205. to 209. 198. The Irish Rebels reported, their Confederates in England had taken the Tower of London, and rescued him from the Parliament, p. 226. His pride in Scotland and here page 205. 206. 207.

Earle of Leicesters favours to Windebanke in France, p. 130. 133.

Father Leander Generall of the English Benedictiones, (Archbishop Lauds Chamberfellow in Oxford, and very intimate with him here,) sent over to reconcile us to Rome p. 145. 206. 207. persecuted by the Iesuites, p. 144.

Lover a Papist, proceedings against him stayed by royall command p. 140.

Ludovicus a sancta Maria, his Theologicall conclusions printed at Rome, p. 145: his Lecherous and lewde behaviour in England, Ibid.

Cardinall Ludovisi protector of the Irish Nation p. 109.

M.

Marshall Law, the Lord Connynges advice about it, p. 185. 186.

Master Moore a chiefe Actor in the Irish Rebellion, p. 227. to 237.

Henry Mac Carter his full examination touching the Irish Rebellion, p. 202. 203 204.

Masse endeavoured to be introduced by Archbishop Land, in the Scottish Liturgy, into which he inserts divers things out of the Masse & Roman Missall p. 158. to 163.

Mac-Mohon's examinations, touching the Irish Rebellion, p. 237. to 241.

Maguires examinations & Confession touching the Irish Rebellion, p. 226. to 240.

Nich. Le Maistre his testimony concerning the designe of the French match p. 69.

Sir Toby Mathew, a dangerous active Iesuite, p. 210. 211 The Popes Bull to him, commending his last Nuncio Rosssetti to his charge as to his Angell Gardian, p. 201.

211. Sir Henry Merry, a Recusant his protection, p. 139.

Master Middletons Letters to Archbishop Land from Venice, p. 142. 143.

Bishop Mountague advanced by Laud, an Arminian, his intimacy with the Popes Nuncio, his letter to Windebanke for a Licence to his sonne to goe to Rome, and his entertainment there, p. 146. 147.

Master Walter Mountague, his first voyage to Rome, his extraordinary entertainment in his passage thither, thereshis intimacy with the Pope and Cardinals promised and expected a Cardinals Cap, his dangerousnesse, Sir Kelime Digbys late letter to him, and the Queenes intention to make him a Cardinall at this present, could he procure his liberty p. 140. 141. 143. 210. 211. 212. 253. 254.

His Letters to the Papists concerning a contribution against the Scotts, p. 190. 191. his intimacy with Windebanke p. 131. 132. 133. 134.

N

Nuncios sent from the Pope into England: see Con, Pauzani, Rosssetti. The Apprentices and People take notice of them p. 895. to 199. 208. to 282.

O.

Oath of King James to the Spanish Articles, and in favour of Papists, p. 43. to 47. of K. Charles to like purpose, and not to endeavour to convert the Queen or withdraw her from, or hinder her in her Religion p. 46. 47. 71. of the privy Councell not to prosecute Papists p. 46. of English Priests to the Bishop of Calcedon, p. 82. 83

The Table,

Oblations Popish introduced by Bishop *Laud*, pag. 159.

Ordination, A forme of it, by a Popish Irish Bishop, pag. 84.

Owen, Daniel, and Sir *Phelim Oneale* chiefe actors in the Irish Rebellion, having formerly raised a Regiment of Papists, and carried them into *Flanders* for that purpose, pag. 219. to 250.

A Letter to Sir *Phelim Oneale* from Rome, pag. 248. 249.

O-Conner, one of the *Queene Mothers* Priests, his desperate speeches concerning a Plot Massacre to the Protestants in *England*, &c. to *Arne Hussey*, pag. 225.

P.

Papists and popish Priests and Iesuires plots to usher Popery into our Realmes, pag. 1. 2. 4. &c. Their dangerous increase in *England*, *Ireland*, and petitions against it: p. 10. to 12. 65. to 85. how protected, favoured, &c. notwithstanding all pretended Proclamations against them by the King, *Queene*, Bishop *Laud*, *Windebanke*, and others, pag. 12. 13. 25. 29. 45. to 48. to 150. 206. to 214. Their forwardnesse to promote the *icane*, An. 1626. pag. 88. Their Assembly, Collections and large contributions towards the Scottish Warres, pag. 189. to 194.

English, and Irish Papists joynt Conspiracie in the Irish Rebellion, and present Warres: See *Ireland*, King *James*, King *Charles*, *Windebanke*, *Laud*: Articles:

Gregorio Panzani, the Popes first English Nuntio, his Arrivall and entertainment in *England*, pag. 141. 143. 209. 210.

His intimacy with *Windebanke*, and Letters of thanks to him from Rome, for his daily favours whiles here, pag. 141. 146. his intimacy with Bishop *Montague*, and Letters in favour of his Sonne to Rome, pag. 147.

Stay of proceedings against the Lady *Perkins*, for sending her daughter to bee a Nunne pag. 139.

Penricke, the *Queenes* last agent at Rome, and his brother the *Queenes* servant an Intelligencer for *Spaine* and Rome, pag. 205. &c.

Father *Philips* the *Queenes* Confessor his Letter to Secretary *Windebanke*, pag. 144 See p. 134. His dangerous Letters, commitment by the Parliament, and Articles there exhibited against him, pag. 205. to 217.

His dangerous positions, pag. 119. 120. 121. his danger about the *Queenes* person, and her chiefe Councillour, pag. 205. to 217. *Sparsim*.

Doctor *Pocklington*, his Letter concerning the Clergies contribution against the *Scotts*, &c. pag. 179. 180.

Pope *Gregory* the 15. his dispensation must be granted to compleat the Spanish Match p. 3. 4. 5. 13. 14. 15. 18. 19. his exceptions to and alterations of the Articles with *Spaine*, p. 4. 10. 9. 14. 15. 18. 39. 40. The Articles he obtained from King *James* in favour of Papists, ere hee would grant a dispensation, p. 8. 14. 41. to 49. his letter to the Bishop of *Conchen* in *Spaine* to reduce King *Charles* and our Realmes to his obedience during his residence there; & his Letter to King *Charles* in *Spaine* to seduce him in his Religion, p. 34. to 38. His Clogged dispensation and death, p. 39. 49. King *James* Letter to him, p. 26. 31.

Pope *Vrban* the eight his election and new dispensation for the SPANISH Match pag. 50. 61. His dispensation with the French Match, pag. 70. 71. His consolatory Bull to the English Catholikes p. 81. 82. He claimes an absolute Jurisdiction over the *Queenes* household, endeavoring thereby to usurpe a temporall Jurisdiction p. 119. to 123. 208. 209, &c. The Kings Letter to him in behalfe of the Duke of *Lorraine*, and his affection to & opinion of the King, p. 142. 143. his Nuncios sent into Eng. and entertained here: see *Comte*, *Panzani*, *Rossetti*, Nuntio: and p. 209. to 212.

His Bull to Sir *Toby Mathew*, p. 201. 211. Privy and assistant to the Irish Rebellion, p. 230. 247. to 553. his Bull and Indulgence to the Irish Rebels p. 253.

The election of *Pamphilio* the now Pope, his age and intentions: and the *Queenes* sending Sir *Kenelme Digby* to him, p. 252. to 255.

Father *Price* Generall of the Benedictines, his intimacy with *Laud*, *London*, *Windebanke*: procures the searchers place at *Dover* by their might, and puts in Papists to be his Deputies there, pag. 198. 206. 207.

Q. The

The Table.

Q

The *Queenes* marriage with the *King*, designed to introduce Popery, pag. 69. The Articles of her marriage and present effects of it in favour of Papists, p. 70. to 74, 83. to 98. The *King* bound by Oath not to endeavour her conversion to our Religion by any meanes; (but she not obliged not to seduce the *King*) pag. 71. The Pope challenge jurisdiction over her household, p. 119. to 122. 208. The dangerous positions of her Priests, Ibid: Priests released by the *K.* and others at her instance, p. 122. 123. 190. Her favours to, and Letters of favour to the *Queene*, and Officers of *France*, in the behalfe of Secretary *Windebanke*; and the many courtesies he and his received from her since his flight, p. 127, to 140. She sends Major *Bret*, Sir *Will. Hamilton*, Mr. *Walter Mountague* and others successively to *Rome*, p. 140. 141. 143, 144. 146. 204. to 214.

Her calling of a generall Assembly of all the Romish Catholikes at *London* to assist the *King* against the *Scotts*, her Letters to them for that purpose, & Message to the Parliament, pag. 189. to 196. Dangerous Popish Incendiaries about her person, pag. 204. to 218.

Her contributions and assistance to English and Irish Papists, and these unnaturall Wars, p. 194. 151.

The *Queene-Mothers* arrivall in *England*, to further the Papists Designes, and Massacre of the Protestants, p. 189, 225. The people murmur against her; her desire of a gard and departure hence, p. 195. to 198. 218.

R

Captaine *Read*: a chiefe agent of the *Jesuites*; an Actor in the Irish Rebellion; escapes out of the Tower, and since affirmed to be Knighted by the *King*, p. 147. 251.

Robert Read Secretary and Nephew to *Windebanke*, his Letters out of *France* to Master *Thomas Windebanke*, pag. 125. to 139.

Rebellion in *Ireland*: See *Ireland*, p. 218. to 251.

Indge Richardson, his stay of proceedings against Recusants by command, and Letter to *Windebanke* concerning the same, pag. 139. 140.

Cardinall *Richelieu*: his favour to *Windebanke*, Master *Mountague* and the English Fugitives at *Paris*, p. 130. 131, 132, 138. His Spies and Activity here, p. 204. to 217. Privie and assistant to the Irish Rebels, pag. 232. 233. 234.

Count *Rosselli* the Pope's last Nunzio, his arrivall in *England*, and the Bull to Sir *Toby Matthew* concerning him, pag. 210. 211. Complained of in Parliament promised to be sent away hence, yet secretly detained here, pag. 193. 214.

Rochel lost by the meanes of our ships: &c. p. 84. 85. 86.

S.

Sabbath, denied by the Arch-bishop and his creatures, p. 158.

Sacrifice of the Masse indeavoured to be introduced by *Canterbury*, in the Scottish Liturgy, p. 160. 161. 162. 163.

Scottish Innovations, Liturgy, Warres, Troubles, occasioned by *Canterbury* fully related out of his owne Papers and Letters. p. 148. to 196.

Spanish Treaty concerning the *March*, *Palatinate*, and all the passages concerning it, and their juggling with us in it fully related from p. 1. to 69. The Spanish fleet 1639. designed for *England* beaten by the *Hollanders*, at which the Arch-bishop and others were much discontented, pag. 198.

Standing up at Gloria Patri, the New Creed, &c. enjoined by *Canterbury*, and Chanting divine service, together with New holy dayes, and divers Popish Innovations in the *Scotts* Liturgy. p. 118. to 163.

The Lord *Scudamores* Letter to *Windebanke*, p. 146.

Earle of *Strafford*, his advice concerning the calling and packing a Parliament in *Ireland* to conquer the Realme thereby, and to ballance the Protestants and Papists in it, p. 113. to 118. 238. his advice and Lauds to subdue the *Scotts* by an Irish Army, and not to trust the English, p. 170. 171. his oppressions, one principall cause of the Irish Rebellion, p. 227.

T.

Transubstantiation introduced by *Canterbury* in the Scottish Liturgy. p. 161. 162. G. 7.

The Table.

G. 7. (Father *Talbot* as I conjecture) a Jesuites Letters concerning the affaires that warre with Scotland. p. 170. 171.

VV

Wilson a dangerous seditious Priest, p. 205. The Kings Commission to the Earle of *Worcester* a Papist, to be Lord Lieutenant of all South-Wales and command the forces there, when the Papists had a designe, and secretly entertained thousands of Irish and others to cut the English Protestants throates. p. 205. 206.

Matter *Wilfords* Letters from *Rome* to Secretary *Windebanke* concerning English Cardinals. p. 199. 200.

Sir *Francis Windebanke* made Secretary of State by Arch-bishop *Laudes* procurement, p. 122. his extraordinary favour to Priests, Jesuites, Papists, the Popes Nuncios, his letters from them and great respect at *Rome*, and the entertainment his Sonnes had there for his sake. p. 122. to 148. his charge in Parliament and flight into *France* and Letters thence p. 123. to 139. he had a Passe from the King, and yet counterfeits another. p. 125. 126. he layes all his charge in discharging Priests, Jesuits and stopping proceedings against Papists, by Letters of Grace, on the King and *Queene*, p. 123. to 134. The *Queenes* Letters of favour in his behalfe, and his extraordinary entertainment in *France* for her sake, with his addresses, Letters to her Majesty and the continuance of hers and the Kings favour to him ever since his flight. p. 125. to 139. his Petition intended to the Parliament. p. 136. 137. his Sonnes letters to him from *Rome* and *Italy*. p. 144. 145. 146. his Letters out of *France* to his Son at Court. p. 126. to 139.

Errata.

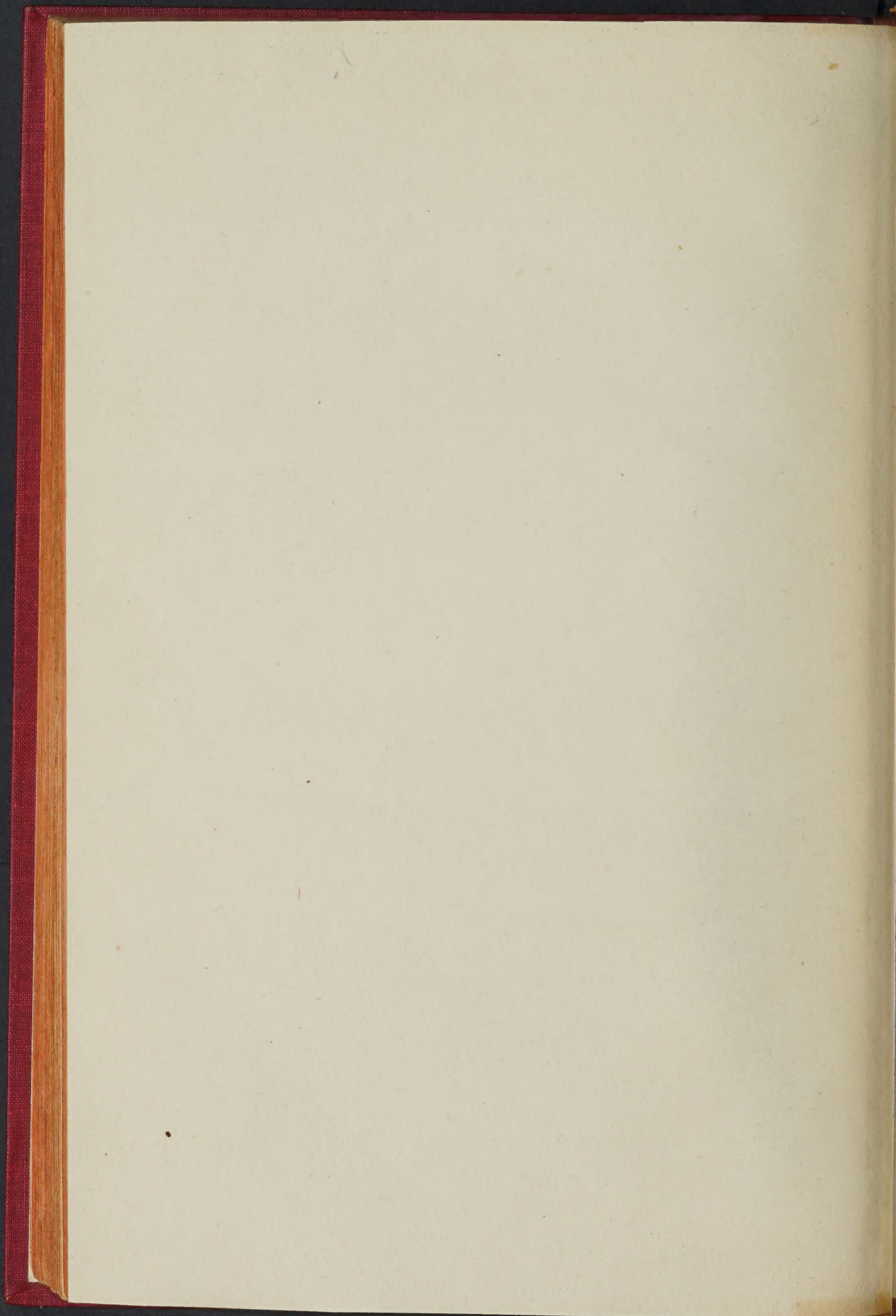
Courteous Reader, the Printers carelesnesse hath occasioned these ensuing Errors, which I must desire the to correct: p. 4. l. 36. 37. ab declaratur, *Declarabitur*, p. 8. l. 1. dele, *modo sunt Vassalli* p. 9. l. 35. l. 39. omnia, p. 12. l. 53. Parliamentary, p. 17. l. 37. must, *most*, p. 31. l. 25. delivered, l. 39. procure, p. 32. l. 4. trust, l. 11. profered, p. 35. l. p. 35. l. 1. nomen, *non*, l. 6. 16. 23. l. 20. alienus, l. 22. holocausta, l. 26. tamque l. 40. augustissima, l. 51. per-benignissime, p. 36. l. 36. finum, l. 39. progeniem, p. 38. l. 13. continuance, p. 40. l. 47. perpetuum, p. 42. l. 1. Infans, p. 43. l. 7. minimum, l. 35. Duce, l. 44. Scaccarij, l. 37. Archiborum, p. 45. l. 20. derelinquet l. 36. mirum, p. 48. l. 47 and p. 49. l. 8. business, l. 10. Comedy, p. 50. l. 4. newly elected Pope, l. 6. we, were, l. 12. magis l. 21. jucundoque ineundoque, p. 51. l. 40. quart, p. 54. l. 47. Causa p. 55. l. 2. mercis, l. 7. Infantem in, p. 64. l. 56. prefixed, p. 65. l. 51. royall, loyall, p. 70. l. 10 that p. 72. l. 55. judiciorum, p. 73. l. 15. Nostrorum, p. 78. l. 24. superstition, p. 81. l. 37. cum, cum, p. 82. l. 2. amarities, l. 13. quos, quod, l. 28. malum, l. 51. Calcedonensis, l. 52. cm, etiam, p. 86. l. 47. Letters, p. 93. l. 40. embraced, p. 99. l. 4. day, p. 101. l. 45. Bedle, p. 17. 45. Thomas p. 119. l. 36. resumed, reserved, p. 124. l. 39. very like, p. 126. l. 3. not l. 20. hence, thence, p. 127. l. 53. that, than, p. 129. l. 32. affectionate, p. 134. l. 20. confident, p. 142. l. 17. dele. p. 143. l. 38. must, *most*, p. 147. l. 3. Bishopricke, writ thus to Secretary *Windebanke*, p. 149. l. 8. signet, p. 155. l. 52. this, *the*, p. 157. l. 37. 913, 313. p. 166. l. 22. rising, p. 180. l. 23. Rebels, Rebellion, l. 34. dele and, p. 189. l. 28. confederates, p. 190. l. 23. facilitation, p. 133. l. 13. is, this, p. 195. l. 8. your, *his*, p. 198. l. 24. hereon, l. 25. dele, or, l. 46. About which time the Pacification with Scotland was dissolved & a war against them concluded by the Archbishops and Papists meanes, and a Parliament assembled to grant Subsidies to support this warre. But, &c. p. 199. l. 10. Papists, p. 203. l. 32. to, the, p. 207. l. 15. *Ever*, *and*, p. 109. l. 2. if, *of*, p. 39. Deies, p. 222. Pinockes, p. 228. l. 44. where, when, p. 229. l. 19. Brian, p. 231. l. 28. Septem October Margin p. 31. l. 2. Francois, p. 59. l. 3. Harborsers, p. 158. l. 3. 4. Idolatria Romana, p. 162. l. 2. Binsfeldius l. 17. Eucharistia.

To the Reader.

READER;

NOte that from p. 206. to the end, most of the printed pages (through the Printers over-sight) are mistaken, and must be mended with a penne, and then the Errata and Table referring to them will fall out right, which are as these pages should have beene, not as they are misprinted: Else there will be a mistake in both so farre as they relate to the misprinted pages.

FINIS.



1058065

